



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1971 - 0710 - 5411 11
TYPE 4011 28 - 010711 11

FRASATIAGA
SPANISH
LATION-GRAMMAR

1971 - 0710 - 5411 11
TYPE 4011 28 - 010711 11



Golfo de Vizcaya

C
O
N
T
I
N
E
N
T
E
S
C
A
T
A
L
I
A
N
O
P
O
R
T
O
L
I
S
B
O
A
C
A
T
A
L
I
A
N
O
P
O
R
T
O
L
I
S
B
O
A
C
A
T
A
L
I
A
N
O
P
O
R
T
O
L
I
S
B
O
A

ASTURIAS

GALEICIA

MONTES CANTABRINOS

CASTILLA

LA VERRIA

GUADARRAMA

CASTILLA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

LA MANCHA

MARRUECOS

Julio Groos



ESPAÑA

Escala de 1:6000.000

Provincias Vascongadas
A. Alava, G. Guipúzcoa, V. Vizcaya

Meridiano 0 de Greenwich



METHOD GASPEY-OTTO-SAUER.

AMERICAN ORIGINAL EDITION.

SPANISH CONVERSATION-GRAMMAR

BY

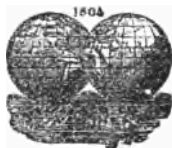
CHARLES MARQUARD SAUER.

THOROUGHLY REVISED AND ENLARGED

BY

FERNANDO DE ARTEAGA, HON. M. A.,
TAYLORIAN TEACHER OF SPANISH IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

SEVENTH EDITION



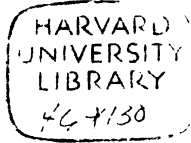
1904.

JULIUS GROOS **SCHOENHOF BOOK COMPANY**
HEIDELBERG. **BOSTON.**

~~KE88P7~~

7233.52.2

✓



The method of Gaspey-Otto-Sauer is my own private property, having been acquired by purchase from the authors. The text-books made after this method are incessantly improved. All rights, especially the right of making new editions, and the right of translation for all languages, are reserved. Imitations and fraudulent impressions will be prosecuted according to law. I am thankful for any communications relating to these matters.

Heidelberg.

Julius Groos.

Preface to the First Edition.

The so-called Conversation method, uniting at once theory and practice, has met with the greatest success in Germany as well as in England, America, and France. Hitherto, more than twelve grammars, based on this method, have been published, and some of them, *viz.*—the “*Englische Conversations-Grammatik*” by Dr. Gaspey, the “*Französische Conversations-Grammatik*,” and the “*German Conversation-Grammar*” by Dr. Emil Otto — have passed through 14 *double* editions, a result which plainly shows the value of the new method. My Italian Grammars, for English, French, and German pupils, have likewise been successful, and my new Spanish Grammar for Germans was so well received both by the critic and the public, that I have ventured to produce a Spanish Grammar for the use of English students.

Without entering into particulars as to the method, which is sufficiently known in England and America, I beg leave to state, that this book is no *translation* of my Spanish Grammar for Germans, but a work adapted to the genius of the English language. The grammatical part is based on the best German works hitherto published on the “*Grammaire espagnole*” by *Gildo*, the “*Gramática castellana*” by *D. Giró y Roma*, Valencia 1852, and on the 12th edition of the excellent Grammar by *D. Andres Bello*, Madrid 1878. Besides these works,

*

Salvá has been carefully consulted. The Reading Exercises of the Second Part were selected from specimens of the best Spanish authors given in the collection of *Figueras*, Barcelona 1857.

The arrangement of the grammatical materials is the same as in the other Conversation-Grammars. The *alphabetical register* of the irregular verbs has been placed at the end of the *Second Part*, as the pupil might easily be misled were it to follow the *First Part*, which is succeeded by an alphabetical list of the verbs with double participles.

Finally, I have to return my best thanks to Dr. Gaspey, who kindly revised the English text, and to Dr. von Frantzius, who attended to the Spanish.

Toeplitz-Schoenau.

C. M. Sauer.

Preface to the Present Edition.

The publication of the present volume is due to the wish of the well-known firm **Julius Groos** to provide a Spanish Grammar which should satisfy the growing requirements of the student of modern languages.

It is a revised Edition of the excellent **Spanish Conversation-Grammar** by *Charles Marquard Sauer*, into which many alterations and modifications have been introduced. The principal changes which may be noted are as follows:

In Part I: Lesson 6th. Classification and Tabulation of the Augmentatives and Diminutives.

Lesson 15th. Distinction between Possessive Adjectives and Possessive Pronouns.

Lessons 19th. Fuller treatment of the theory governing the Position of the Adjective.

Lesson 22nd. Detailed explanation of the Euphonic basis of the apparent irregularities in certain verbs.

Lesson 27th. Discussion of the proper application of the Spanish Passive Voice, and of the restrictions to be observed in employing it.

Lessons 35th to 40th. Recasting of the classification of the Irregular Verbs.

Lesson 41st. A new section upon the Present Participle.

In Part II: Introductory chapter. Insertion of the grammatical rules on accentuation laid down by the Spanish Academy.

Lesson 3rd. Treatment of "lo" and of the Article in idiomatic phrases.

Lesson 5th. The use of the degrees of comparison in association with Verbs and Adverbs.

These are the most important innovations, but it should be pointed out that the entire scheme of the explanatory exposition has been co-ordinated and revised, and that the *Exercises* and *Translations* have been correspondingly altered and enlarged.

Further, a large amount of new material has been introduced into the Reading Exercises in order to give the student a glimpse into the geography, the history, and the manners and customs of Spain and South America.

Some characteristic specimens of poetry and prose illustrative of the literature of the country, especially in its modern phases, are given both in the body of the work and in the two special chapters with which it concludes.

It has seemed unnecessary in the present Edition to add a Vocabulary to the second as well as to the

first Part. The student who has mastered the contents of the Grammar ought to be in a position to reap the advantages which may be obtained by consulting a complete dictionary. With regard to the use of the Vocabularies of Part I., inserted at the end of the volume, it should be observed that each irregular verb is accompanied by a reference to the page on which it is conjugated, and that the interpretation assigned to each word has been necessarily limited to the meaning or meanings in which it is found in the *Reading Exercises* or *Traducciones*.

Taylor Institution, Oxford, Sept. 30th, 1903.

Fernando de Arteaga y Pereira.

Contents.

First Part.

	Page
Phonology. — The Alphabet	1
The Alphabet	1
Pronunciation	2
General Remarks on the Accent	5
Capital Letters	5
Separation of Words	6
On the Signs of Punctuation	7
1. Lesson. Lección primera. The Article	8
2. » <i>Lección segunda. The Plural of Substantives .</i>	11
3. » <i>Lección tercera. The Substantives in connection with the Prepositions</i>	14
4. » <i>Lección cuarta. Prepositions</i>	19
5. » <i>Lección quinta. The Substantive without the Article</i>	23
6. » <i>Lección sexta. Augmentatives and Diminutives</i>	26
7. » <i>Lección séptima. Proper Names</i>	28
8. » <i>Lección octava. The Auxiliary Verb Haber, to have</i>	32
9. » <i>Lección novena. Tener, to have, to hold . .</i>	35
10. » <i>Lección diez. Exercises</i>	37
11. » <i>Lección once. The Auxiliary Verb Ser, to be</i>	40
12. » <i>Lección doce. Estar, to be</i>	43
13. » <i>Lección trece. Exercises</i>	45
14. » <i>Lección catorce. Determinative Adjectives . .</i>	48
1. Demonstrative Adjectives	48
2. Interrogative Adjectives	49
15. » <i>Lección quince. Possessives</i>	51
1. Possessive Adjectives	52
2. Possessive Pronouns	55
16. » <i>Lección dieciséis. Numerals</i>	56
1. Cardinal Numbers	56
17. » <i>Lección diecisiete. Numerals</i>	62
2. Ordinal Numbers. — Fractionals. — Mul- tiplicatives	62
18. » <i>Lección dieciocho. Numerals</i>	67
3. Indefinite Numerals	67
19. » <i>Lección diecinueve. The Adjective</i>	71

		Page
20.	Lesson. <i>Lección veinte.</i> Degrees of Comparison	77
21.	» <i>Lección veintiuna.</i> The Regular Verb	82
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Geografía de España</i>	90
22.	» <i>Lección veintidós.</i> Euphonic Changes in Certain Verbs	91
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Cantares</i>	94
23.	» <i>Lección veintitrés.</i> Personal Pronouns	94
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Geografía de España</i> (Continuación)	97
24.	» <i>Lección veinticuatro.</i> Conjunctive Personal Pronouns	98
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Cantares</i>	104
25.	» <i>Lección veinticinco.</i> Demonstrative and Interrogative Pronouns	104
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Geografía de España</i> (Continuación)	107
26.	» <i>Lección veintiséis.</i> Possessive and Relative Pronouns	108
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Cantares</i>	112
27.	» <i>Lección veintisiete.</i> The Passive Voice	112
	Neuter Verbs	116
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Geografía de España</i> (Continuación)	119
28.	» <i>Lección veintiocho.</i> Pronominal or Reflective Verbs	119
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Los Padres y los Hijos</i>	124
29.	» <i>Lección veintinueve.</i> Impersonal Verbs	125
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Geografía de España</i> (Conclusión)	128
30.	» <i>Lección treinta.</i> Adverbs	129
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Los Hijos y los Padres</i>	133
31.	» <i>Lección treinta y una.</i> The Adverbs continued	133
	Reading Exercise:— <i>La Opinión</i>	139
32.	» <i>Lección treinta y dos.</i> Prepositions	139
	Reading Exercise:— <i>El traidor despreciado</i>	142
33.	» <i>Lección treinta y tres.</i> Conjunctions	142
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Canción de la Primavera</i>	145
34.	» <i>Lección treinta y cuatro.</i> Interjections	146
	Reading Exercise:— <i>España. — Diversidad de lenguas</i>	146
35.	» <i>Lección treinta y cinco.</i> The Irregular Verbs	147
	First Class. Models: <i>alentar, encender, adquirir</i>	148
	Reading Exercise:— <i>España. — Diversidad de costumbres</i>	153
36.	» <i>Lección treinta y seis.</i> The Irregular Verbs continued	153
	Second Class. Models: <i>acordar, morder, jugar</i>	153
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Al caer de la tarde</i>	158

	Page
37. Lesson. <i>Lección treinta y siete.</i> The Irregular Verbs continued	159
Third Class. Models: <i>nacer, crecer, conocer, lucir</i>	159
<i>conducir</i>	160
Fourth Class. Model: <i>pedir</i>	163
Reading Exercise:— <i>Diversidad de las Provincias de España</i>	166
38. » <i>Lección treinta y ocho.</i> The Irregular Verbs continued	166
Fifth Class. Model: <i>sentir</i>	167
Sixth Class. Models: <i>huir, argüir</i>	168
Reading Exercise:— <i>Diversidad de las Provincias de España</i> (Continuación)	171
39. » <i>Lección treinta y nueve.</i> Verbs entirely irregular or with irregularities otherwise not classified	172
Models: <i>andar, asir, caber</i>	172
<i>caer, oír, dar, decir</i>	173
Reading Exercise:— <i>Diversidad de las Provincias de España</i> (Continuación)	176
40. » <i>Lección cuarenta.</i> The entirely irregular Verbs continued	176
Models: <i>dormir</i>	176
<i>hacer, ir, morir, poder</i>	177
<i>poner, podrir, querer</i>	178
<i>saber, salir, valer, traer</i>	179
<i>venir, ver</i>	180
Reading Exercise:— <i>Diversidad de las Provincias de España</i> (Continuación)	182
41. » <i>Lección cuarenta y una.</i> The Participle	183
Present Participle	183
Past Participle	187
Alphabetical List of the Verbs with Double Participles	188
Alphabetical List of the Defective Verbs	192
Reading Exercise:— <i>Diversidad de las Provincias de España</i> (Conclusión)	193

Second Part.

Orthography, Accentuation, Punctuation	195
Orthography	195
Accentuation	199
The Signs of Punctuation	202
1. Lesson. The Gender of Substantives	204
Reading Exercise:— <i>Descubrimiento de América</i>	214
2. » The Plural of Substantives	215
Reading Exercise:— <i>Descripción del País mejicano</i>	219

		Page
3.	Lesson. Use of the Article	220
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Descripción de la Ciudad de Méjico</i>	232
4.	» Possesives	232
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Descripción de la Plaza del Mercado de Méjico</i>	236
5.	» Degrees of Comparison with Verbs and Adverbs	237
	Reading Exercise:— <i>De las Riquezas del Perú</i>	243
6.	» Numerals	243
	Indefinite Numerals	245
	Reading Exercise:— <i>De algunas Costumbres de los Incas</i>	251
7.	» Pronouns. — Personal Pronouns	252
	Reading Exercise:— <i>De algunas Costumbres de los Incas</i> (Continuación)	255
8.	» Demonstratives. — Interrogative Pronouns	256
	Demonstratives	256
	Interrogative Pronouns	259
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i>	261
9.	» Possessive and Relative Pronouns	262
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	268
10.	» Adverbs. — Their Position. — Affirmations and Negations	269
	Peculiarities of certain adverbs	269
	Position of the Adverbs	271
	Affirmations and Negations	271
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	274
11.	» Prepositions. — Proper Prepositions (<i>á, de, en, con</i>)	275
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	282
12.	» The Prepositions continued (<i>por, para</i>)	282
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	288
13.	» Prepositions. — Conclusion (<i>ante, contra, desde, entre, hácia, hasta, según, sin, só, sobre, tras</i>)	289
	Improper Prepositions	291
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	294
14.	» Use of Conjunctions	295
	Connective Conjunctions	295
	Disjunctive Conjunctions	296
	Adversative Conjunctions	296
	Conditional Conjunctions	298
	Causal and Final Conjunctions	300
	Subordinative Conjunctions	302
	Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	304

	Page
15. Lesson. The Object of the Verb. — The Direct Object	305
Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	310
16. » Remarks on the Spanish Passive Voice and on some Spanish and English Verbs . .	311
Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	317
17. » Peculiarities of some Spanish Verbs	317
Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Continuación)	324
18. » The Moods	325
The Indicative Mood	325
The Subjunctive Mood	325
The Imperative Mood	328
Reading Exercise:— <i>Grandeza y Decadencia de España</i> (Conclusión)	329
19. » The Use of the Tenses. — Sequence of Tenses	330
Use of the Tenses of the Indicative . . .	330
Reading Exercise: <i>La Farsa de Avila</i> . . .	336
20. » The Use of the Tenses. — Sequence of Tenses	337
The Tenses of the Indicative	337
The Tenses of the Subjunctive	338
Sequence of Tenses	338
Reading Exercise:— <i>A Don Pedro Fernandez de Castro</i>	344
21. » The Infinitive Mood	345
The Absolute Infinitive	345
The Dependent Infinitive	346
Reading Exercise:— <i>Lope Félix de Vega Carpio</i>	350
22. » The Infinitive (Conclusión)	351
The Infinitive taking the place of an accessory sentence	351
Reading Exercise:— <i>Retrato del Duque de Wellington</i>	353
23. » The Gerund	354
Reading Exercise:— <i>Facia</i>	359
24. » The Past Participle	360
Reading Exercise:— <i>Cartas de mi Sobrino</i> .	367
Poetas. Oda Moral (<i>Fray Luis de León</i>)	368
Epístola Moral (<i>Francisco de Rioja</i>)	370
El Silencio (<i>Ventura Ruiz Aguilera</i>)	375
La Duda (<i>Gaspar Nuñez de Arce</i>)	378
Consuelo Celestial (<i>Argensola</i>)	384
Prosa. Armas y Letras (<i>Miguel de Cervantes</i>)	385
El Castellano Viejo (<i>Mariano José de Larra</i>) .	389
Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs	398
Spanish-English Vocabulary	408
English-Spanish Vocabulary	417

FIRST PART.



Phonology. — The Alphabet. (Fonología. — El alfabeto.)

§ 1. The Alphabet.

The Spanish Alphabet consists of 28 letters (rr not included), which are as follows:

Character.	Name.	Pronunciation.
A, a,	āh	as a in āh.
B, b,	bēh	› b › bay.
C, c,	thēh	› th › thanks.
Ch, ch,	tchēh	› ch › chain.
D, d,	dēh	› d › day.
E, e,	ēh	› e › yellow.
F, f,	ēffeh	› f › fellow.
G, g,	hēh (guttural sound, see § 2)	› ch › loch.
H, h,	āhtchēh (is silent).	
I, i,	ee	› i › fin.
J, j,	hōhtah (guttural sound).	› ch › loch.
K, k,	kāh	› k › king.
L, l,	ēlleh	› l › lemon.
Ll, ll,	ēllieh	› li › punctillo.
M, m,	ēmmeh	› m › memory.
N, n,	ēnnēh	› n › noble.
Ñ, ñ,	ēnnieh	› gn › mignonette.

Character.	Name.	Pronunciation.
O, o,	ōh	as o in lost.
P, p,	pēh	» p » past.
Q, q,	coo	» c » cool.
R, r,	ēhrreh	» r » red.
S, s,	ēhsseh	» s » sail.
T, t,	tēh	» t » tender.
U, u,	oo	» o » cool.
V, v,	bēh	» b » bay.
X, x,	ēhkeece	» x » six.
Y, y,	ee greeēghah [Greek ee]	» i » index.
Z, z,	thēhta	» th » thanks.

N.B. — Of these letters a, e, i (y), o, u, are vowels, the others are consonants. *K* as well as *W* (*doble v*) occur only in a few *foreign words*, as *Franklin*, *kilógramo*, kilogram, *kilómetro*, kilometre, *Westminster*.

§ 2. Pronunciation. — Pronunciación.

The pronunciation of the Spanish letters, as given above, is the nearest possible to the true Castilian one, but should be acquired *viva voce* from a native.

The following are some remarks in connection with the special pronunciation of certain letters — *i.e.*:

Vowels. — Vocales.

u is silent in the combinations *gue, gui, que, qui*; *g* in such cases losing its harsh, guttural sound:

guerra, war. *queso*, cheese.
guitarra, guitar. *química*, chemistry.

u after *g*, if not silent, requires a diaeresis:

zaragüelles (Valentian) breeches.
argüir, to argue.

y by itself sounds like Spanish *i* (English *e*); before a vowel it is pronounced as *y* in *year*, *año*, *you*, *usted*; and at the end of a syllable forms a diphthong and sounds as *y* in *hay*, *heno*; *boy*, *muchacho*.

y, and. *ya*, already. *hay*, there is.
ayer, yesterday. *hoy*, to-day.

N.B.—Though in no case is any difference implied in regard to the quality of the vowel, Spanish vowels are short

and passed over slightly, when not receiving any special stress or accent, such as *o* in *hablo*, I speak; long and pronounced with a pause and a depression of the voice when receiving — anywhere but at the end of a word — either the tonic or the written accent, as *ó* in *hablóles*, he spoke to them; and acute and pronounced with a long pause and a raising of the voice when receiving either the tonic or the written accent at the end of a word, as *ó* in *habló*, he spoke.

Diphthongs and Triphthongs. — Diptongos y triptongos.

Diphthongs are formed by the juxtaposition of two vowels (*ae*, *ao*, *oa* excepted). They are sounded as one syllable, and are indivisible in writing. Strong diphthongs (a) begin by *a*, *e*, *o*; weak diphthongs (b) with *i*, *u*; final *i* becomes *y*:

(a) <i>aire</i> , air.	<i>seis</i> , six.	<i>oigo</i> , I hear.
<i>hay</i> , there is.	<i>ley</i> , law.	<i>doy</i> , I give.
<i>causa</i> , cause.	<i>Ceuta</i> , Ceuta.	

(b) <i>gloria</i> , glory.	<i>yegua</i> , mare.
<i>cielo</i> , sky.	<i>fuerza</i> , strength.
<i>accionar</i> , to act.	<i>muy</i> , very.

N.B.—Weak diphthongs may have their last vowel accented, which strong diphthongs may not:

<i>dió</i> , he gave.	<i>caí</i> (no diphthong), I fell.
<i>pié</i> , foot.	<i>reí</i> > > I laughed.
<i>fuí</i> , I went.	<i>oí</i> > > I heard.

Triphthongs are formed by the juxtaposition of three vowels *i.e.*, *i*, *u* of the weak diphthongs preceding strong diphthongs *ai*, *ei*, which may then be accented.

<i>despreciáis</i> , you despised.	<i>averigúéis</i> , you may ascertain.
<i>agraviéis</i> , you may offend.	<i>buey</i> , ox.
	<i>averigúais</i> , you ascertain.

General Remark. The above combinations of vowels, however, do not always form a diphthong or triphthong, as may be seen by the following examples:

<i>pais</i> , country.	<i>leí</i> , I read.
<i>áunar</i> , to unity.	<i>oí</i> , I heard.
<i>tía</i> , aunt.	<i>húir</i> , to fly away.
<i>tío</i> , uncle.	<i>acentúe</i> , that I accentuate.
<i>fié</i> , I confided.	

averiguaríais, that you would ascertain.

confiéis, that you may confide.

continuéis, that you may continue.

Consonants. — Consonantes.

c acquires the hard sound of *k* before *a*, *o*, *u*, or a consonant, or at the end of a word:

casa, house.

actor, actor.

cosa, thing.

criado, servant.

cuerda, rope.

frac, evening-dress coat.

N.B.—*c* is only doubled in such words as *acción*, action, *lección*, lesson (*i.e.*, in the Latin combinations *-ctio*).

d is omitted in conversation in endings *ado*:

un soldao (*i.e.*, *soldado*), a soldier.

están casaos (*i.e.*, *casados*), they are married.

g acquires the English sound of *g* in gall, gulf, guide before *a*, *o*, *u*, *ue*, *ui*, *üe*, *üi*, or a consonant, or at the end of a word:

gato, cat.

zaragüelles, breeches.

digo, I say.

argüir, to argue.

gusano, worm.

grano, grain.

guerra, war.

digno, worthy.

águila, eagle.

tagalog, Tagalog.

q is only found in the combinations *que*, *qui*:

buque, ship.

quilla, keel.

r is pronounced smoothly between two vowels, stronger in the combinations *br*, *pr*, *cr*, *gr*, *dr*, *tr*, and at the end of words. At the beginning of words, as well as before consonants and after *l*, *n*, *s*, it has a trilling sound:

héroe, hero.

brazo, arm.

reló, watch.

hora, hour.

prisa, hurry.

razón, reason.

crisis, crisis.

hierba, grass.

grano, grain.

carta, letter.

cuadro, picture.

Ulrico, Ulric.

otra, other.

honradez, honesty.

leer, to read.

Israel, Israel.

N.B.—**r** is only doubled (*rr*) between two vowels whenever not the smooth, but the trilling sound is to be produced:

perro, dog.

guerra, war.

§ 3. General Remarks on the Accent. — Observaciones generales sobre el acento.

(See Second Part, § 3.)

Preliminary Remark. — The accentuation of Spanish words is always a *pronounced* one; whilst, *e.g.*, in French the various syllables of the same word have almost a uniform accentuation, Spanish has (like English and German) one syllable which is the principal bearer of the accent.

Rule 1. Words terminating in *vowels*, also in *n*, *s*, have the stress on the *penultimate* syllable, as: *alguno*, accented: *algúno*; *Granada*, accented: *Granáda*; *continuo*, accented: *continúo*.

Rule 2. Words ending in *consonants* — *n* and *s* excepted — or in *y* have the stress on the *last* syllable, as: *reloj*, accented: *relój*; *señor*, accented: *señór*; *ley*, accented: *léy*.

Rule 3. Diphthongs *ia*, *ie*, *io*, also endings *gua*, *güe*, *guo*; *cua*, *cue*, *cuo* are always supposed to form *one* syllable; the stress, therefore, is laid on the *penultimate*, thus: *India*, accented: *Índia*; *nadie*, accented: *nádie*; *imperio*, accented: *impéριο*.

An exception to Rule 3 is presented when the diphthong disappears, as in the *verbal* terminations in *ía*, as: *tenía*, *tendría*, and in other cases—*i.e.*:

alegría, joy.

frío, cold.

continúo, I continue.

Rule 4. Any deviation from the above general rules is indicated by the *written* accent. Thus: *Sócrates*, *Jesús*, *según*, *amé*, etc. This accent is a sure guide to pronunciation. See further Part II., The Accent.

§ 4. Capital Letters. — Letras mayúsculas.

In general these are used as in English; but the names of the months and days of the weeks, substantives and adjectives denoting nationality, etc., and the personal pronoun *I*, *yo*, are written in small letters:

el domingo, Sunday.

un inglés, an Englishman.

julio, July.

él y yo, he and I.

§ 5. The Separation of Words. — División de sílabas.

1. A *simple* consonant between *two* vowels always begins a syllable. Thus:

a-legre; a-mi-go, etc.

Note.—*Ch, ll, ñ* are considered to be *simple* consonants, and are thus subject to the preceding rule. Thus:

pu-cherro; mu-ñeca; o-lla; ca-llar.

2. If *two* consonants (*rr* excepted) come between two vowels, the first of these consonants closes the preceding syllable, and the second begins the following. Thus:

pe-rro; en-noblecer; ac-cidente; aletar-gar; ad-herir, etc.*

On the contrary, *l* and *r*, if preceded by another consonant (*i.e.*, combinations like *bl, br, cl, cr, pl, pr*), are always given to the *following* syllable. Hence the separations are as follows:

a-prieto; ha-blar; a-clamación; enno-blecer, etc.

N.B.—Exceptions:

(a) Those combinations where *s* precedes *l* or *r*, as:

is-la; Is-rael, etc.

(b) The combination *tl* in words beginning with *at*, as:

at-leta; at-lante, etc.

3. *Compound* substantives do not follow the above rules. They should always be separated conformably to their *components*. Thus, *desacordar* is not separated *de-sacordar* but *des-acordar*, because *acordar* is the main component, whereas *des* is only a prefix, like the English *mis* in *misconception* or *dis* in *distrust*. Further examples: *ab-rogar* (from *rogar*); *a-delante* (from *delante*); *sub-arriendo* (fr. *arrendar*).

As, however, no word nor syllable may begin with *s* followed by *another* consonant, we are obliged to separate, in spite of etymology: *ins-pirar; cos-tar; ins-tituir*.**

* *H*, though mute, is in such a case considered as a consonant.

** The Spanish language avoids so carefully at the beginning of a word or a syllable combinations of *s* followed by another consonant, that an *e* is invariably prefixed to *st, sp*, etc., in order to render the pronunciation feasible. Thus: *espíritu* (from the Latin *spiritus*), *especie* (from *species*), *esfera* (from *sphæra*), etc.

Note.—With a great many words, that were originally compounds, this fact has in course of time been lost sight of. These words now follow the general rules. Thus, *subir* is not separated etymologically *sub-ir*, but *su-bir*; *peregrino* is separated *pe-regrino*; *inicial* = *i-nicial*; *abundar* = *a-bundar*, etc.

4. If *three* consonants meet, the last of them, *l* and *r* excepted, belongs to the following syllable. Thus:

ins-pirar; *pere-picaz*; *cons-tar*.

§ 6. On the Signs of Punctuation. — De los signos de puntuación.

1. The *accent* ('). The Spanish language has only the *acute* accent, which is used if the stress is laid on any other syllable than the general rules of prosody would lead one to expect; thus: *búscame*lo, *últimamente*, *óptimo*, *pésimo*, etc.; or to distinguish words having the same sound, as *el* (the) and *él* (he), *tu* (thy) and *tú* (thou), etc.

2. The so-called *tilde* (˜). This sign, peculiar to the Spanish language, is placed over the *n* in order to indicate that its pronunciation is not *enne*, but *ennyey*. (See the pronunciation of *n* and *ñ*.)

3. The *crema* (̆) denotes that the vowel *u* above which it is placed is not mute, according to the rule stated in § 2, but must be sounded; thus: *averigüeis*, pron. avéree-goo-ey-is; *argüir*, pron. ar-goo-ir; *vergüenza*, pron. ver-gooen-tha.

4. The signs of punctuation (*los signos de puntuación*) are: the comma (,) (*la coma*), semi-colon (;) (*punto y coma*), colon (:) (*dos puntos*), period (.) (*el punto final*), hyphen (-) (*el guión*), sign of interrogation (*el interrogante, signo de interrogación*) (¿) which is placed first and (?) which is placed last; sign of exclamation (*la admiración, el signo de admiración*) written (!) at the beginning and (!) at the end.

The apostrophe is unknown in Spanish.

First Lesson. — Lección primera.

The Article. — El artículo.

The Article indicates the gender of substantives. The Spanish language has two genders—*viz.*, the *masculine* and the *feminine*.

There are two articles in Spanish as in English: the *definite* and the *indefinite*.

The definite article for *masculine* substantives is **el**; for *feminine* substantives **la**.

Examples: **el padre**, the father; **la madre**, the mother; **el hijo**, the son; **la hija**, the daughter; **el soldado**, the soldier; **la abeja**, the bee.

Note.— A *neuter* gender, as, in German or Latin, does not exist in Spanish. If, however, an adjective, pronoun, or numeral is used as a substantive in a *general sense*, as: the good, the evil, (*the*) mine and thine, etc., where neither a person nor a thing, but the *abstract idea* is meant, the *neuter* article **lo** is used. This article has, of course, no plural.

Examples: **lo malo**, the evil; **lo hermoso**, the beautiful; **lo mío**, mine (*i.e.*, my property); **lo tuyo**, thine, etc.

But: **el mío**, mine (*i.e.*, brother, friend, etc.); **el tuyo**, thine (*i.e.*, dog, etc.).

Yet we must observe that whenever the meaning is not quite *abstract*, the article **el** should be used. Thus, **el mal** means a bad thing, while **lo malo** means the evil, in the abstract sense; **el bien** is a good thing, something good, whereas **lo bueno** means the good in general.

The indefinite article for masculine substantives is **un**, for feminine **una**. Their plurals **unos**, **unas**, mean *several*, *any*, *some*, *a few*, etc.

Examples: **un padre**, a father; **una madre**, a mother; **unos animales**, some animals; **unas iglesias**, some churches.

Note.—As we stated in § 6, there is no apostrophe in Spanish. Therefore the final vowel of the article is never apostrophised as in French or Italian. The only change which the article undergoes for the sake of euphony is the following:

Rule.—Before *feminine* substantives in the singular, beginning with **a** or **ha**, accented on the first syllable, *la* is replaced by **el**, and *una* by **un**. Thus: **el** *ave*, the bird (for *la ave*); **el** *agua*, the water (for *la agua*); **el** *alma*, the soul (for *la alma*); **un** *águila*, an eagle; **un** *harpa*, a harp. This rule holds good only in the singular, or when the word is not preceded by an adjective. Thus, **las** *águilas*, the eagles; **una** *tímida ave*, a timid bird.

If, however, the stress is laid on any other syllable than the first, the feminine article is used, as: **la** *abeja*, the bee; **una** *amiga*, a friend (f.).

In the following list of words the genders are indicated by *m.* (masc.) and *f.* (fem.).

Words.

<i>Padre</i> , father.	<i>ave</i> f.,	} bird.
<i>madre</i> , mother.	<i>pájaro</i> m.,	
<i>niño</i> m., child.	<i>amigo</i> m., friend.	
<i>libro</i> m., book.	<i>hermano</i> , brother.	
<i>balcón</i> m., balcony.	<i>tía</i> , aunt.	
<i>caballo</i> m., horse.	<i>puerta</i> f., door.	
<i>espejo</i> m., looking-glass.	<i>pan</i> m., bread.	
<i>sombrero</i> m., hat.	<i>pluma</i> f., pen.	
<i>árbol</i> m., tree.	<i>portero</i> m., porter.	
<i>cebro</i> m., sceptre.	<i>rey</i> , king.	
<i>perro</i> m., dog.	<i>reina</i> , queen.	
<i>rejilla</i> f.,	} grating.	<i>¿qué?</i> what?
<i>ventanillo</i> m.,		<i>¿quien?</i> who?
<i>vestido</i> m., dress.	<i>no</i> , no.	
<i>huerto</i> m., orchard.	<i>sí</i> , yes.	
<i>jardín</i> m., garden.	<i>mi</i> , my.	
<i>casa</i> f., house.	<i>en</i> , in.	
<i>flor</i> f., flower.	<i>y</i> , and.	
<i>fusil</i> m., gun.	<i>en España</i> , in Spain.	
<i>S. yo tengo</i> , I have.*	<i>P. nosotros (-as) tenemos</i> , we have.	
<i>tú tienes</i> , thou hast.	<i>vosotros (-as) tenéis</i> , you have.	
<i>él tiene</i> , he has.	<i>ellos tienen</i> , they have (m.).	
<i>ella tiene</i> , she has.	<i>ellas tienen</i> , they have (f.).	

* If the verb "to have" is not an *auxiliary*—i.e., used with a past part., as: I have loved, we shall have found—but a *prim-*

Reading Exercise. 1.

La casa tiene un balcón, y la puerta tiene un ventanillo. La casa tiene portero, pero no tiene jardín. Tiene* una casa. En España una casa tiene portero. — ¿Quién tiene el libro? Yo tengo el libro. Tú tienes un libro. ¿Tienes tú un libro**? Él tiene un espejo. Mi padre tiene una casa. Mi madre tiene el pan. El niño tiene el espejo. El niño tiene un espejo. Mi tía tiene una casa. Mi hermano tiene un perro. El rey tiene un cetro. Nosotros tenemos una flor en el jardín. ¿Tenéis vosotros huerto? Sí, tenemos un huerto y un árbol en el huerto. ¿Tenéis vosotros una flor? Yo tengo el vestido. ¿Tiene ella un vestido? Ella tiene un perro. El niño tiene un hermano y una tía. El rey tiene un águila.

Traducción. 2.

I have the book. I have a book. Thou*** hast the dress. Hast thou a dog? Hast thou a looking-glass? He has the hat. My father has the bird. Has she a house? Has he the bread? We have a hat. Have we a gun? You have the book. They (m.) have a garden. Have they (f.) a horse? Have they (m.) a gun? The child has a book. The queen has a brother. My aunt has a bird. My brother has a dog. My mother has a pen.

Conversación.

¿Qué tiene la casa?	La casa tiene balcón y portero.
¿Qué tiene la puerta?	La puerta tiene un ventanillo.
¿Tenéis (vosotros) un libro?	Sí, (nosotros) tenemos un libro.
¿Quién tiene el libro?	El niño tiene el libro.
¿Tiene el hermano un fusil?	Sí, el hermano tiene un fusil.
¿Tenéis (vosotros) el vestido?	No, (nosotros) tenemos el sombrero.
¿Tiene V. una casa?	Sí, tengo una casa; tiene jardín.
¿Tiene (él) el pan?	Sí, (él) tiene el pan.
¿Tiene ella jardín ó huerto?	Tiene huerto, y en el huerto un árbol.
¿Tiene el hermano un amigo?	Sí, el hermano tiene un amigo.

cipal verb, as: I *have* (i.e., possess) a book; he *had* (i.e., he possessed) a friend, the Spaniards do not use *haber*, which is only an auxiliary, but *tener*; properly "to hold." Thus: "I have a book" should not be translated "he un libro," but: *tengo un libro*—i.e., I "hold" a book (in my possession).

* The personal pronouns are usually *omitted* before the verb. We give them here in order to acquaint the pupil with these forms.

** See § 6, 1.

*** Although the 2nd pers. sing. is rarely used in English, we give it here in order that the pupil may become accustomed to its use in Spanish.

Second Lesson. — Lección segunda.

The Plural of Substantives. — Plural de los sustantivos.

The following are the general rules for the formation of the plural in Spanish:

1. All nouns ending in a single **unaccented** vowel add **s**; thus:

<i>El padre</i> (father)	<i>Pl. los padres.</i>
<i>la madre</i> (mother)	<i>las madres.</i>
<i>la carta</i> (letter)	<i>las cartas.</i>
<i>el libro</i> (book)	<i>los libros.</i>
<i>la mano</i> (hand)	<i>las manos.</i>
<i>la metrópoli</i> (capital)	<i>las metrópolis.</i>

Note.—Nouns ending in *é* follow the same rule, as: *el pié*, the foot, *los piés*; *el café*, coffee; *los cafés*, coffee-houses.

2. Nouns ending in a consonant, in *á**, *í*, or in *ay*, *ey*, *oy*, form the plural by adding **es**:

<i>La flor</i> (flower)	<i>Pl. las flores.</i>
<i>el pan</i> (bread)	<i>los panes.</i>
<i>el mar</i> (sea)	<i>los mares.</i>
<i>el mes</i> (month)	<i>los meses.</i>
<i>la ciudad</i> (town)	<i>las ciudades.</i>
<i>el amor</i> (love)	<i>los amores.</i>
<i>el bote</i> (boat)	<i>los botes.</i>
<i>el bajá</i> (pasha)	<i>los bajáes.</i>
<i>el alelí</i> (gillyflower)	<i>los alelíes.</i>
<i>el ay</i> (only used as an exclamation)	<i>los ayes</i> , wailings.
<i>el rey</i> (king)	<i>los reyes.</i>
<i>la ley</i> (law)	<i>las leyes.</i>
<i>el buey</i> (ox)	<i>los bueyes.</i>
<i>el convoy</i> (convoy)	<i>los convoyes.</i>

N.B.—*Los padres*, the parents.

Los reyes, the king and queen.

Remarks.

§ 1. With nouns ending in *z* the *z* is changed into *c* in the plural, as:

<i>La voz</i> (voice)	<i>Pl. las voces.</i>
<i>la paz</i> (peace)	<i>las paces.</i>

* Except: *el papá*, *la mamá*, *el sofá*; pl. *los papás*, *las mamas*, *los sofás*.

§ 2. A great many words have no singular. We give those most in use:

<i>Las afueras</i> , the outskirts.	<i>los modales</i> , the manners.
<i>los alrededores</i> , the surroundings.	<i>las nupcias</i> , the wedding.
<i>las andas</i> , the bier.	<i>las patillas</i> , the whiskers.
<i>los calzoncillos</i> , the pants.	<i>los pertrechos</i> , implements of war.
<i>las cercanías</i> , the neighbourhood.	<i>las sobras</i> , the refuse.
<i>las cosquillas</i> , tickling.	<i>las tenazas</i> , the tongs.
<i>las entrañas</i> , the entrails.	<i>las tijeras</i> , the scissors.
<i>las exequias</i> , the funeral.	<i>las tinieblas</i> , darkness.
	<i>los viveres</i> , the victuals.

§ 3. Some words have a meaning in the singular, and an additional peculiar meaning in the plural:

<i>el agua</i> , the water	<i>Pl. las aguas</i> , floods, medicinal waters.
<i>el antejo</i> , the telescope	<i>los antejos</i> , the spectacles.
<i>el bien</i> , goodness	<i>los bienes</i> , the property.
<i>la cadena</i> , the chain	<i>las cadenas</i> , the oppression.
<i>el celo</i> , the zeal	<i>los celos</i> , jealousy.
<i>el día</i> , the day	<i>los días</i> , the Saint's day.
<i>la expresión</i> , the expression	<i>las expresiones</i> , "kind regards."
<i>la gracia</i> , the grace, favour	<i>las gracias</i> , the thanks.
<i>la memoria</i> , the memory	<i>las memorias</i> , "kind regards."
<i>el valor</i> , the valour, value	<i>los valores</i> , the securities, funds.

§ 4. Some others, masculine in the singular, may include the feminine in the plural, as:

<i>El hijo</i> (son)	<i>Pl. los hijos</i> , children (but also sons).
<i>el hermano</i> (brother)	<i>los hermanos</i> , brother and sister (but also brothers).
<i>el padre</i> (father)	<i>los padres</i> , the parents (but also fathers).
<i>el rey</i> (king)	<i>los reyes</i> , kings (but also king and queen).

(See Second Part: **On the Plural.**)

Note.—The expressions: *Good morning, good afternoon, good evening, good night*, are always plural in Spanish; thus:

Buenos días, good morning!

Buenas tardes, good afternoon!, good evening!

Buenas noches, good night!

Words.

<i>El cuchillo</i> , the knife.	<i>la pluma</i> , the pen.
<i>el médico</i> , the physician.	<i>la ventana</i> , the window.

el azúcar, the sugar.
el barquero, the boatman.
el castillo, the castle.
el cuadro, the picture.
caballero, gentleman, Mr., Sir.
Señora, lady, Mrs., Madam.
Señorita, Miss.
la vela, the sail.
el lápiz, the pencil.
el reloj, the watch.

la tinta, the ink.
el tintero, the inkstand.
el palacio, the palace.
rico, rich.
otro, -a, another (see 18th Less.).
mucho, -a, much; *sus*, his, her,
 its, their.
dos, two; *tres*, three; *cuatro*,
 —four; *cinco*, five.

Verb.

Yo tenía, I had.
tú tenías, thou hadst.
él tenía, he had.
nosotros teníamos, we had.
vosotros teníais, you had.
ellos tenían, they had.

¿*Tenía (yo)*? had I?
 ¿*tenías (tú)*? hadst thou?
 ¿*tenía (él)*? had he?
 ¿*teníamos (nosotros)*? had we?
 ¿*teníais (vosotros)*? had you?
 ¿*tenían (ellos)*? had they?

Reading Exercise. 3.

Nosotros teníamos un cuchillo. Vosotras* teníais dos cuchillos. Mi hermano tiene las tenazas. El rey tenía cuatro caballos. ¿Tenía (yo) los anteojos? El tenía los valores. Tenían viveres? Nosotros tenemos las cartas. Sus (f.) padres tenían muchas casas. Los jardines tenían muchos aléites y otras flores. El niño tenía un lápiz. Las niñas tenían los lápices. El barquero tenía tres botes. El bote tiene una vela. Mi hermano tiene un reloj. Los hermanos tenían muchos relojes. ¿Tiene ella un cuadro? Ella tenía cinco cuadros en la casa. El hombre rico tiene muchas casas. La hermana tiene las tijeras.

Traducción. 4.

Houses in Spain have a porter. The house had many balconies. Houses in Spain have balconies, and the doors have gratings. The sister had the scissors. Had you the spectacles? Had we the victuals? The kings had many castles. The aunts had the letters. Had the physician a pencil? The boatman had a sail. Had you (f. pl.) the pictures? We (f. pl.) had the pictures. Had the king many castles? The queen had many horses. Hadst thou the pencils and the flowers? The children had the bread. The sisters had the bread (i.e., loaves). Had they (f.) the scissors? Had the kings the castles and the palaces? Hadst thou my watch? I had three watches. Good evening, sir! Good night, Miss (N.)** Good morning, Mrs.!**

* In Spanish, *we (masc.)* is *nosotros*; *we (fem.)* *nosotras*; *you (masc.)* is *vosotros*; *you (fem.)* *vosotras*.

** In English, *Mr.*, *Mrs.*, *Miss* are invariably followed by a

Conversación.

¿ Tienen portero las casas?	Sí, tienen portero.
¿ Tienen ventanas ó balcones las casas?	Tienen muchos balcones.
¿ Quién tenía los lápices?	Las niñas tenían los lápices.
¿ Tiene el hermano un caballo?	Sí, el hermano tiene un caballo.
¿ Tiene la hermana las tijeras?	No, la hermana no tiene las tijeras.
¿ Tenía él su (<i>his</i>) sombrero?	Sí, tenía su sombrero.
¿ Tenían flores los jardines?	Tenían alelías y otras flores.
¿ Tienen los bajáes castillos?	No tienen castillos, pero tienen palacios.
¿ Tenía el rey muchos caballos?	El rey tenía cien (100) caballos.
¿ Tuvisteis (vosotras) las cartas?	Nosotras tuvimos (had) las cartas y los libros.
¿ Tiene el médico una pluma?	El médico tiene un lápiz, un tintero y una pluma.
¿ Tuvo el barquero un bote?	El barquero tuvo tres botes.
¿ Tiene mi hermano un libro?	Tiene muchos libros.
¡ Buenos días, señorita!	¡ Buenos días, caballero!
¡ Buenas tardes, señora!	¡ Buenas noches, señorita!

Third Lesson. — Lección tercera.

The Substantives in Connection with the Prepositions. — Los sustantivos en relación con las preposiciones.

Spanish substantives have no cases, though they may in a way replace them by means of prepositions. These prepositions, however, are not always simply placed before the article, as in English, but sometimes undergo a *contraction* with the article so as to form *one* word, as will be seen hereafter.

1. The *Nominative* and *Accusative* are always alike, as in English.

2. The *Genitive*, answering the question *whose?* or *of which?* is formed by putting *de* (of) before the article. Thus: *la reina*, the queen; Gen. *de la reina*, of the queen; *la pluma*, the pen; Gen. *de la pluma*, of the pen.

person's name; in Spanish, however, *caballero*, *señora*, *señorita* may stand by themselves.

Only the *masculine* article *el* is, for euphony, *contracted* with *de* into *one word*. Thus instead of *de el rey*, of the king: **del rey**; of the son, **del hijo**, for *de el hijo*.

In the *plural* no contraction takes place. Thus: **de los médicos**, of the physicians; **de las cartas**, of the letters; **de las plumas**, of the pens.

3. The *Dative* is formed by putting *á* (to) before the article. Thus: **á la reina**, to the queen; **á la carta**, to the letter; **á la hermana**, to the sister.

The *masculine* article *el* is likewise *contracted* into *one word* with the preposition *á* (of course, *without* the accent). Thus: **al hijo**, to the son; **al hermano**, to the brother (for *á el hijo*; *á el hermano*).

Observation.—Quite peculiar to the Spanish language is the use of the preposition *á* with the Accusative, in certain cases when referring to living beings. That is to say, if the direct object is a *person* or a *personified thing*, it should be introduced as in the *Dative* case, and not in the Accusative. Thus the sentence, “The mother loves the daughter,” is not translated: *La madre ama la hija*, but: *La madre ama á la hija*. — “I see the man” is not: *Yo veo el hombre*, but: *Yo veo al hombre*. “The sons love the mother” is not: *Los hijos aman la madre*, but: *Los hijos aman á la madre*.

On the other hand, *Mi hermano ha visto el palacio, las casas*, “My brother has seen the palace, the houses,” and not *al palacio, á las casas*, because here the Accusative denotes things, and not persons.

The Declensions. — Las declinaciones.

(a) With the Definite Article.

Masculine.

Singular.

- Nom. *el amigo*, the friend.
 Gen. *del amigo*, of the friend.
 Dat. *al amigo*, to the friend (*the* friend).
 Ac. *el amigo, al amigo*, the friend.

Plural.

- Nom. *los amigos*, the friends.
 Gen. *de los amigos*, of the friends.
 Dat. *á los amigos*, to the friends.
 Ac. *los amigos, á los amigos*, the friends.

Feminine.

Singular.

- Nom. *la madre*, the mother.
 Gen. *de la madre*, of the mother.
 Dat. *á la madre*, to the mother (*the mother*).
 Ac. *la madre, á la madre*, the mother.

Plural.

- Nom. *las madres*, the mothers.
 Gen. *de las madres*, of the mothers.
 Dat. *á las madres*, to the mothers (*the mothers*).
 Ac. *las madres, á las madres*, the mothers.

Feminine with the Masculine Article.

Singular.

- Nom. *el ave*, the bird (for *la ave*).
 Gen. *del ave*, of the bird.
 Dat. *al ave*, to the bird.
 Ac. *el ave, al ave*, the bird.

Plural.

- Nom. *las aves*, the birds.
 Gen. *de las aves*, of the birds.
 Dat. *á las aves*, to the birds.
 Ac. *las aves, á las aves*, the birds.

Abstract Notions.

- Nom. *lo malo*, the evil.
 Gen. *de lo malo*, of the evil.
 Dat. *á lo malo*, to the evil.
 Ac. *lo malo, á lo malo*, the evil.

(b) With the Indefinite Article.

Masculine.

- Nom. *un hombre*, a man.
 Gen. *de un hombre*, of a man.
 Dat. *á un hombre*, to a man.
 Ac. *un hombre, á un hombre*, a man.

Feminine.

- Nom. *una mujer*, a woman.
 Gen. *de una mujer*, of a woman.
 Dat. *á una mujer*, to a woman.
 Ac. *una mujer, á una mujer*, a woman.

(c) With a Demonstrative Adjective.

Masculine.

Singular.

- Nom. *este hombre*, this man.
 Gen. *de este hombre*, of this man.
 Dat. *á este hombre*, to this man.
 Ac. *este hombre, á este hombre*, this man.

Plural.

- Nom. *estos hombres*, these men.
 Gen. *de estos hombres*, of these men.
 Dat. *á estos hombres*, to these men.
 Ac. *estos hombres, á estos hombres*, these men.

Feminine.

Singular.

- Nom. *esta mujer*, this woman.
 Gen. *de esta mujer*, of this woman.
 Dat. *á esta mujer*, to this woman.
 Ac. *esta mujer, á esta mujer*, this woman.

Plural.

- Nom. *estas mujeres*, these women.
 Gen. *de estas mujeres*, of these women.
 Dat. *á estas mujeres*, to these women.
 Ac. *estas mujeres, á estas mujeres*, these women.

Masculine.

Singular.

- Nom. *aquel hombre*, that man.
 Gen. *de aquel hombre*, of that man.
 Dat. *á aquel hombre*, to that man.
 Ac. *aquel hombre, á aquel hombre*, that man.

Plural.

- Nom. *aquellos hombres*, those men.
 Gen. *de aquellos hombres*, of those men.
 Dat. *á aquellos hombres*, to those men.
 Ac. *aquellos hombres, á aquellos hombres*, those men.

Feminine.

Singular.

- Nom. *aquella mujer*, that woman.
 Gen. *de aquella mujer*, of that woman.
 Dat. *á aquella mujer*, to that woman.
 Ac. *aquella mujer, á aquella mujer*, that woman.

Plural.

Nom. *aquellas mujeres*, those women.

Gen. *de aquellas mujeres*, of those women.

Dat. *á aquellas mujeres*, to those women.

Ac. *aquellas mujeres, á aquellas mujeres*, those women.

Words.

Dios, God.

el Criador, the Creator.

el mundo, the world.

el primo, the cousin (*m.*).

la prima, the cousin (*f.*).

el amigo, the friend (*m.*).

la ciudad, the town.

el vecino, the neighbour.

el niño, the child, boy.

el sueño, the sleep, dream.

la muerte, (the) death.

el árbol, the tree.

el cuarto, the room.

la chimenea, the fireplace.

la reina, the queen.

el país, the country, land.

la criatura, the creature.

el criado, the footman, servant.

el caballero, the gentleman.

grande, great.

pequeño, little, small, short.

hermoso, beautiful.

viejo, old.

ama, (he, she) loves.

aman, (they) love.

llama, calls.

ve, sees.

pero, but.

¿cómo? how?

son, are.

quiere, he (she) likes.

quieren, (they) like.

doce, twelve.

no, no, not.

es, } is; *son*, } are.
está, } *están*, }

Reading Exercise. 5.

El Criador ama á las criaturas. El sueño es el hermano de la muerte. La prima es la amiga del primo. El vecino llama al criado. El rey es el padre del país. La reina ama al rey. Dios es el Criador del mundo. La casa tiene doce ventanas. [Yo] no veo (*see*) á los hombres. ¿Tenías tú los relojes? Inglaterra es pequeña, pero las ciudades del país son grandes. España es grande, pero las ciudades del país son pequeñas. En España los cuartos de las casas son pequeños y no tienen chimeneas. El caballero llama á los criados. Las mujeres aman á los niños. Estas casas pequeñas son hermosas. El amigo del primo llama al criado del caballero. Los árboles del castillo son viejos. Las casas de la ciudad no son viejas.

Traducción. 6.

Those men love the friends of the cousin. The death of the king. The houses of the towns are large and old. The small country has large towns. The cousin (*f.*) loves the cousin (*m.*), but the cousin (*m.*) does not love (*no* —) the cousin (*f.*). The gentleman calls the footman. The king loves the knights,

and the knights love the king. The child of the neighbour is small. The windows of the house are large. The king is the founder of the small town. The knight had two cousins (*f.*) and three cousins (*m.*). Man is small, and the world is large. The woman loves the child. The children love the woman. The kings are the fathers of the countries. The footman calls the neighbours of the knight. The castles of the queen are old. The house of the footman is small. That man does not see* the child of this woman. Does he see** those women? The neighbour loves these men and those men.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|---|
| ¿Es pequeño el país? | No, es grande; pero las ciudades del país son pequeñas. |
| ¿Cómo son los cuartos? | Son pequeños y no tienen chimenea. |
| ¿Ve el primo á la prima? | No, el primo no ve á la prima. |
| ¿Tuvieron los reyes el país? | Los reyes tuvieron la ciudad y el país. |
| ¿Llama el vecino al niño? | No, el vecino llama al caballero. |
| ¿A quién (<i>whom</i>) llama el caballero? | El caballero llama el criado. |
| ¿Es pequeña la ciudad? | No, señor, la ciudad es grande. |
| ¿Tiene la reina dos castillos? | No, la reina tiene tres castillos y dos palacios. |
| ¿Cuántas (<i>how many</i>) ventanas tiene la casa? | La casa tiene veinte (20) ventanas. |
| ¿Tiene el vecino una casa? | El vecino tiene dos casas. |
| ¿Ve el caballero á este hombre? | El caballero ve á estas mujeres. |
| ¿Es grande el palacio? | El palacio es muy (<i>very</i>) grande. |
| ¿No son hermosas estas flores? | Estos alelíos son muy hermosos. |
| ¿Á quién ama la prima? | La prima quiere al primo y al hermano. |

Fourth Lesson. — Lección cuarta.

Prepositions. — Preposiciones.

Some prepositions appear almost in every sentence, and should therefore be learned at once. The Spanish prepositions govern no particular case—*i.e.*, they are

* Transl. *not sees*. ** Transl. *sees he?*

simply placed before the noun. — Full particulars of adverbial phrases formed with prepositions will be given in Lesson 32: **On Prepositions.**

The prepositions most in use are the following:

<i>á</i> , at, to, in.	<i>hácia</i> , towards.
<i>ante</i> , before.	<i>hasta</i> , till.
<i>con</i> , with.	<i>para</i> , for.
<i>contra</i> , against.	<i>por</i> , by, from, for.
<i>de</i> , of, from.	<i>según</i> , according to.
<i>desde</i> , since.	<i>sin</i> , without.
<i>durante</i> , during.	<i>sobre</i> , on, over.
<i>en</i> , in.	<i>tras</i> , after, behind.
<i>entre</i> , between, among.	

A few general hints on the use of the above prepositions are:

1. *Contra* means *against*, taken in a sense of *opposition*, whereas *hácia* indicates a *direction*, as: *Contra los enemigos*, against the enemies; *hácia el poniente*, towards the west, westward.

2. *Para* corresponds generally to the French *pour*, means *for*, and implies *purpose*, as: *Este dinero será para los pobres*, this money will be for the poor. Used with an *infinitive mood*, it corresponds to the English *in order to*, as: *Para trabajar*, in order to work. *Para* also denotes *direction*, as: *Salgo* (infin. *salir*, to set out) *para España*, I set out for Spain.

3. *Por* corresponds generally to the French *par*, is *by* and *from* (denoting *origin*, *motive*, or *cause*), as: *Por temor*, through fear; *por vanidad*, through vanity. It likewise means *for*, denoting an *equivalent*, as: *Doy mi capa por la tuya*, I give my cloak for yours, or "in exchange for thine." It also means *in favour*, as: *Hablar por alguno*, to speak in favour of somebody. Again, it vaguely indicates *time* and *space*, as: *Por la mañana*, in the morning; *por la tarde*, in the afternoon; *por la calle*, somewhere in the street, *por el jardín*, somewhere in the garden. Finally, *por* denotes the *author* of something, as: *Este libro está continuado por N.*, this book is continued by N.

4. *Sobre* is *on* or *upon*, and also *over*, *on the other side of*, as: *Sobre las rodillas*, on (upon) the knees;

sobre los montes, over (also "on the other side of") the mountains.

Words.

<i>El comerciante</i> , the merchant.	<i>justo</i> , -a, just.
<i>la región</i> , the country.	<i>todo</i> , -a, all.
<i>Inglaterra</i> , England.	<i>soportar</i> , to bear.
<i>la madera</i> , the wood.	<i>quieres</i> , thou wilt.
<i>la mesa</i> , the table.	<i>debemos</i> , we must.
<i>el río</i> , the river.	<i>vive</i> , lives.
<i>(el) vino</i> , (the) wine.	<i>vivir</i> , to live.
<i>(la) cerveza</i> , (the) beer.	<i>siempre</i> , always.
<i>la vida</i> , the life.	<i>flotar</i> , to float.
<i>la diferencia</i> , the difference.	<i>hablan</i> , they speak.
<i>el temor</i> , the fear.	<i>bebe</i> , drinks.
<i>el pudor</i> , the shame. [change.	<i>corre</i> , runs.
<i>la bolsa</i> , the purse, the Ex-	<i>pasa</i> , spends (time).
<i>la gente</i> , (the) people.	<i>vuelve</i> , returns, comes back.
<i>la paciencia</i> , (the) patience.	<i>dar</i> , to give; <i>dado</i> , given.
<i>la necesidad</i> , the necessity.	<i>mi</i> , my.
<i>la fruta</i> , (the) fruit.	<i>ayer</i> , yesterday; <i>hoy</i> , to-day.
<i>el año</i> , the year.	<i>mañana</i> , to-morrow.
<i>el mediodía</i> , the noon.	<i>casi</i> , almost.
<i>destinado</i> , -a, destined.	<i>todo el, toda la</i> , the whole.
<i>delicioso</i> , -a, delicious.	<i>usted</i> , you.
<i>escrito</i> , written.	<i>su . . . de usted</i> , your . . .
<i>Estoy</i> , I am.	<i>estamos</i> , we are.
<i>estás</i> , thou art.	<i>estáis</i> , you are.
<i>está</i> , he (she, it) is.	<i>están</i> , they are.

N.B.—*There is, there are, hay.*
there was, there were, había.

Note.—*To be* is translated by *estar* and *ser*. The proper use of these verbs is rather difficult. For the present we only state that *estar* denotes an *accidental* and *transitory* condition or state, whereas *ser* expresses a *characteristic quality*, thus: *Está bueno* means: he feels well, he is (now) well. *Es bueno* means: he is good.

(See the Auxiliary Verbs.)

Reading Exercise. 7.

El caballero está en el café. ¿Hay cafés en España? Sí, hay muchos cafés. En España los hombres pasan la noche en el café. Mucha gente pasa toda la noche en el café. ¿Qué bebe la gente en España, vino, ó cerveza? La gente bebe vino. ¿Qué bebe V, vino, ó cerveza? Bebo (*I drink*) vino y cerveza. Estoy bueno cuando estoy en el campo. ¿A quién

quieres dar este libro? Á mi hermano. Debemos soportar con paciencia los males de la vida. La Bolsa es para los comerciantes. No debes hablar por vanidad. Esta región es deliciosa por sus (*its*) frutos. He dado á mi primo mi diccionario por su gramática. Mi hermano vive casi siempre en Inglaterra. La madera flota en el agua. El libro está sobre la mesa. Los malos (*wicked*) hablan siempre contra los buenos. Mi padre vuelve hácia el mediodía. No pude (*I could* —) dormir durante toda la noche. Desde la mañana hasta la noche. Desde ayer hasta mañana. El vino no es una necesidad de la vida; el hombre puede vivir sin vino. Es un hombre sin pudor. Este libro trata (*treats*) de la agricultura.

Traducción. 8.

This book is (*está*) written by Mr. N. He is (*está*) well when he is at (*en su*) home (*casa*). Wilt thou* give this book to my cousin (*m.*)? This book is for thy brother. I have given (to) Mr. Verguero my grammar for his dictionary. The merchant lived two years in England. Man can (*puede*) live without wine, but (*pero*) not without bread. Does** thy brother come back at (*á*) noon? (The) merchants \pm always (talk about) \pm speak of (the) Exchange. Towards (the) west *there is* (*hay*) a beautiful country. I give my book for thine (*el tuyo*). He sleeps (*duerme*) from (the) evening till (to the) morning. The fruit is on the table. The father took (*tomó*) the son on his knee. This river runs (*corre*) through many countries. We must not act (*obrar*) through fear. This wine is for the father and this bread is for the child. There is a great difference between these two men. I have been (*Estoy*) here since yesterday. He is a man without fear and without shame. My brother comes (*viene*) in the morning and in the afternoon.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Dónde (<i>Where</i>) está su amigo de usted? | En el café; pasa toda la noche en el café. |
| ¿Dónde está el hijo de ese (<i>that</i>) hombre? | Está en el colegio (<i>at school</i>). |
| ¿Vive en Inglaterra el hermano? | No, vive casi siempre en España. |

* The 2nd person sing. is more frequently used in Spanish than in English. See footnote ***, pag. 10.

** *Interrogative* forms with the verb *to do* are not admissible in Spanish. In this language, as in German, the interrogative form is expressed by placing the verb before the nominative, as: Does the woman speak? ¿*Habla la mujer*? Do I think? ¿*Pienso yo*? — or merely by the verb itself, as: ¿*Pienso*? In any case, the signs of interrogation are written both at the beginning and at the end.

¿Cómo (<i>How</i>) debemos sopor- tar los males de la vida?	Sin temor y con paciencia.
¿Para quién (<i>whom</i>) está des- tinada la Bolsa?	Está destinada para los comer- ciantes.
¿Cuándo vuelve el padre?	Vuelve hácia mediodía.
¿Hablan los comerciantes de la agricultura?	No, señor, hablan casi siempre del comercio.
¿Tiene mi hermano el dinero para los pobres?	No lo sé* (<i>I don't know</i>), se- ñora.
¿Está el vino sobre la mesa?	No, señor; la fruta y el pan están sobre la mesa.
¿Por qué es deliciosa esta región?	Es deliciosa por sus frutas.
¿Hay mucho vino en Ingla- terra?	En Inglaterra no hay vino.

Fifth Lesson. — Lección quinta.

The Substantive without the Article. — El sustantivo sin el artículo.

§ 1. In English, the word *some* (or *any*) often pre-
cedes a substantive when taken in an indefinite sense,
no particular kind, measure, or quality being meant,
as: *some* wine; *some* bread; *any* ink, etc.

In Spanish, the noun *without* the article is used in
this case, thus: Give me *some* bread, *déme V. pan*. I
have *some* cheese, *tengo queso*, etc.

§ 2. If one of these words is governed by a pre-
position, this preposition simply precedes the noun, as
in English. Ex.: We speak *of* money, *hablamos de*
dinero; *with* cheese, *con queso*, etc.

§ 3. In the plural, *some* or *any* may be expressed
by the plural of *uno* or *alguno*, if the sense appears
somewhat limited, as:

Tengo flores, libros, perros, etc. I have flowers, books,
dogs, etc. (*i.e.*, in quite a general sense).

But:

Tengo unas flores, unos libros (or *algunas flores, al-
gunos libros*), I have some flowers, a few books, etc.
(in a limited sense).

* Lit. (*I*) not it know.

§ 4. The above rules hold good in the nominative and accusative cases only. If, however, the noun is governed by another word (substantive, verb, or adjective), *de* comes before it (as in English *of*, etc.). Ex.:

A piece of bread, *un pedazo de pan*.

A bottle of wine, *una botella de vino*.

Full of sugar, *lleno de azúcar*.

Laden with booty, *cargado de presa*.

Worthy of confidence, *digno de confianza*.

By this phrase with *de*, English compound substantives are rendered, as: The fencing-master, *el maestro de esgrima*; the slave-trade, *el tráfico de esclavos*. Adjectives denoting materials are expressed in the same way, as: a gold watch, *un reloj de oro*.

§ 5. Words denoting quantity require no preposition after them; thus: little cheese, *poco queso*; little hope, *poca esperanza*; fewer books, *ménos libros*; many times, *muchas veces*. (And not as in French, *peu de livres*; *moins de fromage*, etc.)

§ 6. If, however, quantity is expressed by a word preceded by the article, as: a little of this wine, etc., the preposition *de* should follow. Thus:

Little bread, *poco pan*, but:

A little of this bread, *un poco de este pan*.

Words.

La naranja, the orange.

el limón, the lemon, citron.

la aceituna, the olive.

el género, the kind, species.

el aceite, the oil.

el papel, the paper.

el barco, the ship.

el trigo, the corn.

la plata, the silver.

el cobre, the copper.

el lino, the flax, linen.

la carne, the meat.

el jabón, the soap.

el tío, the uncle.

la tía, the aunt.

el dinero, the money.

vergonzoso, -a, shameful.

todo, -a, all, whole.

todos, -as, all (plural).

visto, seen.

produce, produces.

déme V., give me.

me falta (or *necesito*), I want.

he, (I) have; *ha*, he (she) has.

conoce V., you know.

piensa, thinks.

estar pensando, to be thinking.

pero, but; *que*, than.

Verb.

Yo soy, I am.

tú eres, thou art.

él es, he is.

ella es, she is.

nosotros (-as) somos, we are.

vosotros (-as) sois, you are.

ellos } son, they are.
ellas }

N.B.—The auxiliary *do, does, etc.*, in questions is never translated into Spanish; the corresponding verbal form of the principal verb being given instead—*i.e.*:

What *does* Spain produce?
 ¿Qué *produce* España?

Reading Exercise. 9.

España produce vino, naranjas, limones, aceitunas y todo género de frutas. Déme V. papel, pluma y tinta. El país tiene trigo, aceite, plata, cobre y lino. Me falta (*I want, lit. it fails me*) carne y agua. Este hombre no tiene pan. ¿Tiene el primo unos libros? El hermano tiene agua y jabón. Las naranjas y limones son hermosas frutas. El niño no quiere las aceitunas. He visto árboles y flores, jardines y palacios. ¿Conoces al maestro de esgrima? Déme V. un pedazo de pan y una botella de vino. Tengo poca esperanza. El tío tiene ménos dinero que la tía. He visto á mi tío muchas veces en casa de aquel hombre. Déme V. un poco de tinta y unas plumas. El primo tiene poca tinta, pero tiene muchas plumas. Este hombre no es digno de confianza. Me falta papel y tinta.

Traducción. 10.

I want some paper and ink, pens and pencils. Do you know the fencing-master? Slave-trade is shameful. We have little cheese, but we have much bread. Give me a little bread and a little cheese. This country has copper and silver, oranges, citrons, and olives. I have seen flowers and fruits. The uncle has no sugar, and the aunt has no coffee. I have not seen the king and the queen. This man has less courage than that man. What does Spain produce? Spain produces all kinds of fruits. Do you know my uncle and my aunt? Give me a piece of meat and a bottle of beer. This ship is laden with sugar and coffee. This man always thinks (is always thinking) of (*en*) wine and beer, and this woman always thinks of dresses and flowers. Has the uncle fine pictures? The aunt has some fine pictures, but the uncle has no pictures.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Qué (<i>what</i>) produce España? | España produce vino, naranjas, limones y aceitunas. |
| ¿Qué produce Alemania (<i>Germany</i>)? | Alemania produce vino, trigo y todo género de frutas. |
| ¿Déme V. algunas plumas! | No tengo plumas. |
| ¿Qué tiene el país? | El país tiene cobre y plata. |
| ¿Tiene el primo unos libros? | El primo tiene muchos libros y mucho papel. |

¿Quiere el niño las aceitunas?	El niño no quiere las aceitunas.
¿Qué ha visto el tío?	Ha visto árboles y flores, jardines y palacios.
¿Conoce V. al maestro de esgrima?	No conozco (<i>I know</i>) al maestro de esgrima.
¡Deme V. un pedazo de pan!	No tengo pan.
¿Tiene el tío muchos cuadros?	No tiene muchos cuadros, pero tiene algunos.
¿Es digno de confianza ese hombre?	No, señor, no lo es.
¿Qué le falta al hermano?	Le (<i>him</i>) falta (= <i>he wants</i>) tinta y papel.

Sixth Lesson. — Lección sexta.

Augmentatives and Diminutives. — Aumentativos y diminutivos.

The Spanish language, like the Italian, abounds in *endings* modifying the original meaning of the substantives as well as the adjectives, adverbs, etc., to which they are applied. Besides the idea of augmentation and diminution, these endings very often convey an *accessory* idea of tenderness or ugliness, love or contempt, praise or derision, etc. The shades which the original signification may thus acquire are so manifold that they are often utterly inexpressible in other languages, even by two or more adjectives. Thus the proper use of these *endings* offers great difficulties to the foreigner, and can only be properly learned in daily intercourse with Spaniards; the more so as they may not be used indifferently with every substantive or adjective.

The most important of these endings are:

For the Augmentatives:

1. *on*, *azo*, and *ote* for the *masculine*; *ona*, *aza*, and *ota* for the *feminine*. These endings express *augmentation* in general.

Examples: *Hombre*, man; *hombrón*, tall man; *mujer*, woman; *mujerona*; *perro*, dog; *perrazo*, a big dog; *libro*, book; *librote*, old book.

Notes.—1. Endings in *ón* may be combined with *azo*.
—2. By the addition of *ote* the noun becomes *masculine*.

Examples: Hombrón, hombronazo; mujerona, mujeronaza; capa (f.), (Spanish) cloak; *capote* (m.), large cloak.

Observation.—Frequently the termination *azo* does not imply augmentation, but simply the effect of the instrument denoted by the noun. Thus: *el cañon* means the gun, cannon; *el cañonazo*, the detonation of a cannon; *el fusil*, the gun; *el fusilazo*, the shot of a gun.

2. *acho, achón, and arrón.* Over and above the idea of augmentation, these suggest an accessory idea of *disproportion, clumsiness, and disdain.*

Examples: Término, word; *terminacho*, vulgar word; *hombre*, man; *hombrachón*, a fat, big fellow; *bobo*, a silly man; *bobarrón*, a stupid fool.

For the Diminutives:

-ito,	-ico,	-illo,	-uelo,
-cito,	-cico,	-cillo,	-zuelo,
-ecito,	-ecico,	-ecillo,	-ezuelo,
-cecito,	-cecico,	-cecillo,	-cezuelo

with their feminines.

Notes.—*Ico* (*ica*) and their derivatives are not truly Castilian, but *local* terminations used mostly in *Aragón.*

Ito (*ita*) and their derivatives are the genuine Castilian endings, implying not so much diminution as *youth, loveliness, fondness, etc.* Thus: *señora*, lady, Mrs.; *señorita*, Miss; *señor*, Mr., Sir; *señorito*, young gentleman, Master, etc.; *mujer*, woman; *mujercita*, nice young woman.

Illo (*illa*) expresses diminution *and disdain*, thus: *hombre*, man; *hombrecillo*, little man (of no significance); *cosa*, thing; *cosilla*, a trifle.

Uelo (*uela*) expresses the same in a very strong degree, as: *mujerzuela*, a vulgar little woman; *aldehueta*, insignificant little village.

The terminations *acho* and *etón* for augmentation, *ete* (*eta*), *ejo*, *in* (*ino*) for diminution, are less frequent and best learned by practice.

Reading Exercise. 11.

Aquel hombrón que vá con aquel perrazo es un richón¹. Es una mujerona con unos ojos² muy grandes y una vocecilla chillona³. La pobretona⁴ no tiene dinero⁵. He dado mi capote⁶ á aquel mocetón⁷. Hemos oído⁸ fusi-

¹ very wealthy man. ² large eyes. ³ little squeaky voice. ⁴ pobre, poor. ⁵ dinero, money. ⁶ capa, cloak. ⁷ mozo, boy. ⁸ oído, heard.

lazos y cañonazos. La señorita está con su perrito⁹ en la casa de Juanita. La pobrecita¹⁰ habla al señorito. Los pajarillos están en el nido¹¹. Ese torazo¹² come¹³ heno¹⁴ y yerba¹⁵. En esa aldehuela¹⁶ hay algunos gitanos¹⁷. ¡Qué hermoso pecezuelo!¹⁸ El hidalgo¹⁹ tuvo que vender (*to sell*) sus palacios y jardines. Las florecillas²⁰ brotan (*spring up*) y las avecillas²¹ cantan (*sing*)²². Mi hermana tiene una salita²³ muy pequeñita²⁴, pero muy bonita²⁵. El caballero no quiere estudiar. Comió (*He eats*) un pedacito²⁶ de un huevecillo²⁷. Las manguitas²⁸ del vestidillo son preciosas (*beautiful*). Las ovejitas²⁹ y los conejuelos³⁰ juegan³¹ en el campo³². El pobrecito niño se cayó (*fell*), y se hizo daño en las manecitas³³.

⁹ *perro*, dog. ¹⁰ *pobre*, poor. ¹¹ *nido*, nest. ¹² *toro*, bull. ¹³ *come*, eats. ¹⁴ *heno*, hay. ¹⁵ *yerba*, grass. ¹⁶ *aldea*, village. ¹⁷ *gitano*, gipsy. ¹⁸ *pez*, fish. ¹⁹ *hidalgo*, nobleman, knight. ²⁰ *flor*, flower. ²¹ *ave*, bird. ²² *animal*, animal. ²³ *sala*, drawing-room. ²⁴ *pequeño*, little, small. ²⁵ *bonita*, pretty. ²⁶ *pedazo*, piece. ²⁷ *huevo*, egg. ²⁸ *manga*, sleeve. ²⁹ *oveja*, sheep. ³⁰ *conejo*, rabbit. ³¹ *juegan*, play (3rd pers. pl.). ³² *campo*, field. ³³ *la mano*, hand.

Seventh Lesson. — Lección séptima.

Proper Names. — Nombres propios.

§ 1. As in English, proper names of *persons*, *towns*, and *countries* take no article, as: *Carlos*, Charles; *Elvira*, *Madrid*, etc. They are varied as in English:

<i>Carlos</i> , Charles.	<i>Madrid</i> , Madrid.
<i>de Carlos</i> , of Charles.	<i>de Madrid</i> , of Madrid.
<i>á Carlos</i> , to Charles.	<i>á Madrid</i> , to Madrid.
<i>España</i> , Spain.	
<i>de España</i> , from Spain.	
<i>á España</i> , to Spain.	

Exceptions are:

(a) Proper names qualified by an *adjective*, as: *el pobre Luis*, poor Lewis; *la desdichada Elvira*, (the) unfortunate Elvira; *la América meridional*, South America. Frequently the proper name is *followed* by the adjective, as: *Alejandro el Grande*, Alexander the Great.

The adjective *Santo* (*San*), saint, holy, before proper names never admits of the article, thus: *San Pablo*, St. Paul; *Santa Teresa*, St. Theresa.

Also, a proper name takes the article when used as a common noun, thus: *el Apolo de Belvedere*, the

Apollo (statue) of Belvedere; *el César de su siglo*, the Cæsar (*i.e.*, the foremost general) of his century. In this signification, proper names may be used in the plural; as: *los Césares son raros*, men like Cæsar are rare.

(b) The names of certain *countries, provinces, towns, etc.*, as:

<i>El Brasil</i> , Brazil.	<i>La Mancha</i> (a Spanish region).
<i>El Canadá</i> , Canada.	<i>La Patagonia</i> , Patagonia.
<i>El Cabo</i> , The Cape.	<i>La Carolina</i> (a Spanish town).
<i>El Perú</i> , Peru.	<i>La Coruña</i> , Corunna.
<i>El Havre</i> , Havre.	<i>La Granja</i> (a Spanish royal residence).
<i>El Ferrol</i> , Ferrol.	
<i>La Florida</i> , Florida.	

Indifferent are:

China, and *la China*, China.
Persia, and *la Persia*, Persia.
África, and *el África*, Africa.

§ 2. Names of *mountains, volcanoes, rivers, capes, and seas* take the article, as:

Los Pirineos, The Pyrenees.
La Sierra Nevada, Nevada Ridge (Spain).
El Ebro, The Ebro.
El Douro, The Douro.
El Vesubio, Mt. Vesuvius.
El Machichaco, a cape (N. of Spain).
El Cantábrico, The Bay of Biscay.
El Mediterráneo, The Mediterranean.

Indifferent are:

Sierra Morena, and *la Sierra Morena* } (mountains).
Moncayo, and *el Moncayo*

Remarks.

(a) The *Saxon* genitive—as: *Frederick's* brother, etc.—cannot be imitated in Spanish, but must be rendered by means of the preposition *de*: *Charles's* hat, *el sombrero de Carlos*.

(b) With proper names of *countries and towns* the preposition *in* or *at* is rendered by *en*, and *to* by *á*; thus: in Spain, *en España*; in England, *en Inglaterra*; at (in) Paris, *en París*; at Berlin, *en Berlín*. — To go to Paris, to France, to Spain: *ir á París, á Francia, á España*.

Note.—After the verb *salir*, to set out, to depart, the preposition *para* is required, thus: *Salgo para Italia*, I set out for Italy. — The verb *entrar*, to enter, takes *en*; thus: *entrar en casa, en Italia*, etc.

(c) The preposition *on* in such cases as Stratford *on* Avon is translated by *de*; as:

Aranda de Duero.

Miranda de Ebro.

Words.

La provincia, the province.
Cataluña, Catalonia.
la seda, the silk. [very.
la valentía, the valour, bra-
numeroso, -a, numerous.
Enrique, Henry.
Guillermo, William.
Viena, Vienna.
Austria, Austria.
Nápoles, Naples.
la capital, the capital, me-
 tropolis.
la iglesia, the church.
la capa, the (Spanish) cloak.
(el) invierno, (the) winter.
la navegación, the navigation.
menos, less.

He, I have.
has, thou hast.
ha, he (she, it) has.

Don, Mr.
Doña, Mrs., Miss.
el siglo, the century.
aquí está, here is.
aquí están, here are.
hoy, to-day.
dedicado, -a, dedicated.
célebre,
famoso, -a, } famous.
afamado, -a, }
estimado, -a, esteemed.
lleva, wears (said of gar-
 ments).
se lleva, is worn.
quiero, I want, I will.
ir, to go.
fueron, were (3rd pers. plur.).

hemos, we have.
habéis, you have.
han, they have.

Reading Exercise. 12.

Aquí está la capa de Don Luís. En invierno la gente lleva capa en España. La capa se lleva mucho en Madrid. Madrid es la capital de España. Aquí están los guantes de Sofía. He visto el castillo del rey de Sajonia. Alejandro el Grande fué rey de Macedonia. Viena es la capital de Austria. ¿Dónde está el Señor Herrero? ¿Dónde están los niños del señor Herrero? París es una gran capital. María es la hermana de Enrique. Guillermo es el primo de Carlos. Esta iglesia está dedicada á San Pablo y á Santa Teresa. He visto el Apolo de Belvedere y la Venus de Médicis. Don Pedro es el hermano de Doña Elvira. El Don Carlos es una célebre tragedia de Schiller. Aquí están los jardines y los palacios del rey. Napoleon fué el César de su siglo. Andalucía es una región de España. Los vinos de España y la seda de Italia son estimados. Quiero ir á España y á Italia. Los ejércitos españoles fueron siempre famosos por su (*their*) valentía. El ejército de Italia es menos numeroso que el ejército de Rusia. Salgo para América.

Traducción. 13.

Where is Lewis's hat? Here are Elvira's gloves. Have you seen the castles of the Queen of Spain? Paris is the capital of France, and Madrid is the capital of Spain. Henry is William's brother, and Elvira is Mary's cousin. Hast thou seen William and Charles? To whom (*¿á quiénes*) are these churches dedicated? They are dedicated to St. Paul and to St. Ann (*Ana*). The King of Saxony and the Queen of England are in Paris. French wool and Spanish wines are celebrated. Wilt thou go to France or to Italy? I will go to Spain, and to-morrow I set out for Madrid. The Spanish army is less numerous than the Italian army. Barcelona is a province of Catalonia. Have you read (*leído*) the tragedies of Schiller and the comedies (*comedias*) of Molière? Italian silk is famous. The situation of England is very favourable to navigation. To-day we have seen William and Henry, Mary and Theresa. Here are Charles's books. (Mount) Vesuvius is near (*cerca de*) Naples. Spanish wool (*lana*) is much esteemed.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Dónde está el sombrero de D. (<i>Don</i>) Luís? | Está sobre la mesa. |
| ¿Qué ha visto el extranjero (<i>foreigner</i>)? | Ha visto el palacio del rey y los jardines de la reina. |
| ¿Cómo se llama (<i>is called</i>) la capital de España? | La capital de España se llama Madrid. |
| ¿Y cómo se llama la capital de Inglaterra? | La capital de Inglaterra es Lóndres. |
| ¿Don Carlos es el hermano de Doña Ana? | No, señor, es su (<i>her</i>) primo. |
| ¿Á quién está dedicada esa iglesia? | Está dedicada á San Pablo y á Santa María. |
| ¿Cómo se llama aquella famosa tragedia de Schiller? | Se titula Don Carlos, infante de España. |
| ¿Adónde (<i>Whither, where</i>) quieres ir? | Quiero ir á Italia y á Inglaterra. |
| ¿Dónde está el rey de Inglaterra? | Está en Windsor. |
| ¡Mariana, trae (<i>bring</i>) la ensalada (<i>salad</i>)! | ¡Aquí está, señor! |
| ¿Qué se dice del ejército español? | Que fué siempre famoso por su valentía. |

Eighth Lesson. — Lección octava.

The Auxiliary Verb **Haber**, to have. — El verbo auxiliar **haber**.

Indicative Mood.

Simple Tenses.

Present.

<p>(Yo) <i>he</i>, I have.</p> <p>(tú) <i>has</i>, thou hast.</p> <p>(él, ella; V.) <i>ha</i>, he, she, has; you have.</p>	<p>(<i>nosotros, nosotras</i>) <i>hemos</i> (<i>habemos</i>),* we have.</p> <p>(<i>vosotros, vosotras</i>) <i>habéis</i>, you have.</p> <p>(<i>ellos, ellas; VV.</i>) <i>han</i>, they have; you (<i>pl.</i>) have.</p>
--	---

Imperfect.

<p><i>Había</i>, I had.</p> <p><i>habías</i>, thou hadst.</p> <p><i>había</i>, he had.</p>	<p><i>habíamos</i>, we had.</p> <p><i>habíais</i>, you had.</p> <p><i>habían</i>, they had.</p>
--	---

Definite.

<p><i>Hube</i>, I had.</p> <p><i>hubiste</i>, thou hadst.</p> <p><i>hubo</i>, he had.</p>	<p><i>hubimos</i>, we had.</p> <p><i>hubisteis</i>, you had.</p> <p><i>hubieron</i>, they had.</p>
---	--

Future.

<p><i>Habré</i>, I shall have.</p> <p><i>habrás</i>, thou wilt have.</p> <p><i>habrá</i>, he will have.</p>	<p><i>habremos</i>, we shall have.</p> <p><i>habréis</i>, you will have.</p> <p><i>habrán</i>, they will have.</p>
---	--

Conditional Mood.

<p><i>Habría</i>, I should have.</p> <p><i>habrías</i>, thou wouldst have.</p> <p><i>habría</i>, he would have.</p>	<p><i>habríamos</i>, we should have.</p> <p><i>habríais</i>, you would have.</p> <p><i>habrían</i>, they would have.</p>
---	--

Imperative Mood.

<p><i>Hé</i> (<i>tú</i>), have (thou).</p>	<p><i>Habed</i> (<i>vosotros</i>), have (you).</p>
--	--

Past Participle.

Habido, had.

Compound Tenses.

Compound Perfect.

<p><i>He</i> } <i>has</i> } <i>ha</i> }</p>	<p>I have } thou hast } he has }</p>	<p>} had.</p>	<p><i>hemos</i> } <i>habéis</i> } <i>han</i> }</p>	<p>we have } you have } they have }</p>	<p>} had.</p>
---	--	---------------	--	---	---------------

* Almost obsolete.

Pluperfect.

<i>Habia</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	I had	} had.	<i>habíamos</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	we had	} had.
<i>habías</i>		thou hadst		<i>habíais</i>		you had	
<i>había</i>		he had		<i>habían</i>		they had	

2nd Pluperfect.

<i>Hube</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	I had	} had.	<i>hubimos</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	we had	} had.
<i>hubiste</i>		thou hadst		<i>hubisteis</i>		you had	
<i>kubo</i>		he had		<i>hubieron</i>		they had	

Compound Future.

<i>Habré</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	I shall	} have	<i>habremos</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	we shall	} have
<i>habrás</i>		thou wilt		<i>habréis</i>		you will	
<i>habrá</i>		he will		<i>habrán</i>		they will	

Compound Conditional.

<i>Habria</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	I should	} have	<i>habríamos</i>	} <i>habido</i> ,	we should	} have
<i>habrías</i>		thou wouldst		<i>habrías</i>		you would	
<i>habría</i>		he would		<i>habrían</i>		they would	

*Gerund (Present Participle).**Habiendo*, having.

Subjunctive Mood.

Present.

<i>Haya</i> , I have.	<i>hayamos</i> , we have.
<i>hayas</i> , thou have.	<i>hayáis</i> , you have.
<i>haya</i> , he have.	<i>hayan</i> , they have.

Imperfect.

<i>Hubiese</i> , that I had.	<i>hubiésemos</i> , that we had.
<i>hubieses</i> , that thou hadst.	<i>hubieseis</i> , that you had.
<i>hubiese</i> , that he had.	<i>hubiesen</i> , that they had.

Future.

(<i>Si</i>) <i>hubiere</i> , (if) I shall have.	(<i>Si</i>) <i>hubiéremos</i> , we shall have.
> <i>hubieres</i> , thou wilt have.	> <i>hubiereis</i> , you will have.
> <i>hubiere</i> , he will have.	> <i>hubieren</i> , they will have.

Conditional.

<i>Hubiera</i> , (that) I should have.	<i>hubiéramos</i> , we should have.
<i>hubieras</i> , thou wouldst have.	<i>hubierais</i> , you would have.
<i>hubiera</i> , he would have.	<i>hubieran</i> , they would have.

Compound Tenses.

These are formed like those of the Indicative, by adding *habido* to the respective form of the simple tense, thus:

<i>Haya habido</i> , that I have had.
<i>hubiese habido</i> , that I had had.
<i>hubiere habido</i> , that I shall have had.
<i>hubiera habido</i> , that I should have had.

Remarks.

1. The tenses of the Indicative Mood are the same as in the other Romance* languages; the Subjunctive Mood, however, has two tenses peculiar to the Spanish language. Of their employment we shall speak when treating of the *regular verb*, and again in Less. 20, Part. II. These tenses are the *Future* and the *Conditional*. For the present we merely state that the *Conditional* of the Indicative and that of the Subjunctive differ but little in their signification, so that they may be used indiscriminately. Thus the sentence: *He would have had friends*, is either: *Habría tenido amigos* or *hubiera tenido amigos*.

2. In *Conditional clauses* the verb stands in the *Imperfect* of the Subjunctive, whereas the verb of the principal sentence is put in the *Conditional* of the *Indicative* or of the *Subjunctive*; thus:

If I had had money (*conditional clause*), I should have had friends (*principal clause*).

*Si hubiese** tenido dinero habría tenido amigos, or*
 » » » » *hubiera » »*

3. For the *Future* of the Subjunctive see Part II., On the Use of Tenses.

4. Like *ser* (to be) the verb *haber* is a *true auxiliary*—i.e., it only forms the compound tenses of other verbs, as: *ha sido*, he has been; *hubo amado*, he had loved. If, on the contrary, “to have” is a *principal verb*—i.e., if it governs an *object* and signifies *to possess*, as: *I have a house* = I possess a house—it must *always* be rendered by *tener* (properly “to hold”), thus:

I have *money*, is not transl. *he dinero*, but *Tengo dinero*.
 He had *friends*, is » » *hubo amigos*, » *Tuvo amigos*.

For this reason, the Imperative of *haber* is no longer used in conversation.

5. In the signification of the English “there is,” “there are” (and the French *il y a*), *haber* is still a *principal verb*, but only *in the 3rd person of the singular*; *hay* in some cases is replaced by *ha*, as *ha mucho que no le he visto*, it is a long time since I have seen him.

* i.e., of Latin (Roman) origin—viz., French, Italian, Spanish, Portuguese, Provençal, etc.

** We may also employ the *Conditional* of the Subjunctive after *si* (if), as: *si hubiera*, if I had, but we must use the *same tense* in the following *principal sentence*, or the *Conditional* of the Indicative:

Si hubiera tenido dinero, habría tenido amigos.
 » » » » , *hubiera » »*

<i>Hay</i> * <i>hombres</i> ,	there	are	men.
<i>había</i>	»	»	were men.
<i>hubo</i>	»	»	were men.
<i>habrá</i>	»	»	will be men.
<i>habría</i>	»	»	would be men.

Only in this signification the compound tenses with the participle *habido* are admissible, as:

Habrá habido hombres, there will have been men.

6. *Haber de* with the *Infinitive* corresponds to "must," "shall," etc., as: *He de pagarle*, I must (shall) pay him. *Tener que* has the same signification, as: *Tengo que hablar con él*, I must speak with him (lit. *I have to speak*, etc.).

7. The *polite mode* of addressing a person (the English *you*) introduces a *peculiar* word: *Vuestra merced* (your Grace) which always requires the *third person singular* of the verb. The full form of this word is no longer used, it having been replaced by *usted* — in writing, *V.* — *Usted* is the common mode of addressing *all persons*, without distinction of rank, provided they are not relations of the speaker. The Spaniard addresses even a beggar in *V.* The plural form *ustedes* (accented *ustédes*), a contraction from *vuestras mercedes*, shortened *Vds.* or *VV.*, is used in addressing *several persons*. The verb is then in the *third person plural*. Thus: *Have you?* is translated: ¿*Tiene V.?* [pron. *tiene uste(d)*]. Had you? ¿*Tuvo V.?* Shall you (*plur.*) have? ¿*Tendrán Vds.?* (pron. *tendrán ustedes*).

Near relations commonly address each other in *tú* (thou), without totally excluding *V.*, as: (*tú*) *Puedes decirme*, you may tell it me (speaking to a brother).

(As the verb *haber* offers too little material for Reading Exercise and Translation, we at once pass on to the verb *tener*, which however is no auxiliary, but a principal verb.)

Ninth Lesson. — Lección novena.

Tener, to have, to hold.

Indicative.

Present.

<i>Tengo</i> , I have (hold).	<i>tenemos</i> , we have (hold).
<i>tienes</i> , thou hast.	<i>tenéis</i> , you have.
<i>tiene</i> , he has.	<i>tienen</i> , they have.

* In the compound tense (*Compound Perfect*), however, *ha* (and not *hay*) *habido*, there has been (there was).

Tenia, I had (held).
tenias, thou hadst.
tenia, he had.

Imperfect.

teníamos, we had (held).
teniais, you had.
tenian, they had.

Tuve, I had (held).
tuviste, thou hadst.
tuvo, he had.

Definite.

tuvimos, we had (held).
tuvisteis, you had.
tuvieron, they had.

Tendré, I shall have (hold).
tendrás, thou wilt have.
tendrá, he will have.

Future.

tendremos, we shall have.
tendréis, you will have.
tendrán, they will have.

Conditional.

Tendría, I should have (hold).
tendrías, thou wouldst have.
tendría, he would have.

tendríamos, we should have.
tendrías, you would have.
tendrían, they would have.

Imperative.

Ten, have (thou). *Tened*, have (you).

Participle.

Tenido, had (held).

Compound Tenses.

Compound Perfect.

<i>He</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	I have	} had.	<i>hemos</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	we have	} had.
<i>has</i>		thou hast		<i>habéis</i>		you have	
<i>ha</i>		he has		<i>han</i>		they have	

Pluperfect.

<i>Había</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	I had	} had.	<i>habíamos</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	we had	} had.
<i>habías</i>		th. hadst		<i>habíais</i>		you had	
<i>había</i>		he had		<i>habían</i>		they had	

2nd Pluperfect.

<i>Hube</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	I had	} had.	<i>hubimos</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	we had	} had.
<i>hubiste</i>		th. hadst		<i>hubisteis</i>		you had	
<i>hubo</i>		he had		<i>hubieron</i>		they had	

Compound Future.

<i>Habré</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	I shall	} have	<i>habremos</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	we shall	} have
<i>habrás</i>		thou wilt		<i>habréis</i>		you will	
<i>habrá</i>		he will		<i>habrán</i>		they will	

Compound Conditional.

<i>Habría</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	I should	} have	<i>habríamos</i>	} <i>tenido</i> ,	we should	} have
<i>habrías</i>		th. wouldst		<i>habrías</i>		you would	
<i>habría</i>		he would		<i>habrían</i>		they would	

*Gerund.**Teniendo*, having (holding).

Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>Tenga</i> , I have.	<i>tengamos</i> , we have.
<i>tengas</i> , thou have.	<i>tengáis</i> , you have.
<i>tenga</i> , he have.	<i>tengan</i> , they have.

Imperfect.

<i>Tuviere</i> , that I had.	<i>tuviésemos</i> , that we had.
<i>tuviesses</i> , that thou hadst.	<i>tuviéseis</i> , that you had.
<i>tuviere</i> , that he had.	<i>tuviessen</i> , that they had.

Future.

(<i>Si</i>) <i>Tuviere</i> , if I shall have.	(<i>si</i>) <i>tuviéremos</i> , if we shall have.
> <i>tuvieres</i> , if thou wilt have.	> <i>tuviereis</i> , if you will have.
> <i>tuviere</i> , if he will have.	> <i>tuviessen</i> , if they will have.

Conditional.

<i>Tuviera</i> , that I should	} <i>tuviéramos</i> , that we should have.
<i>tuvieras</i> , that thou wouldst	
<i>tuviere</i> , that he would	
	} <i>tuviérais</i> , that you would have.
	} <i>tuvieran</i> , that they would have.

Compound Tenses.

These are formed, as in the Indicative mood, by adding *tenido* to the respective simple tenses of *haber*. Thus:

<i>Compound Perfect</i> :	<i>Haya tenido</i> , I have had.
<i>Pluperfect</i> :	<i>Hubiese tenido</i> , that I had had.
<i>Compound Future</i> :	<i>Hubiere tenido</i> , that (if) I shall have had.
<i>Compound Conditional</i> :	<i>Hubiera tenido</i> , that I should have had.

N.B.—The Participle, if used with *haber*, is always *invariable*; if with *tener*, it is not. Thus: *ella había amado*, she had loved; *ellos han tenido*, they have had; *las casas que he tenido*, the houses (which) I have had. — But: *tengo leídos muchos libros* (or *leídas muchas cartas*), I have already read many books (letters).

Tenth Lesson. — Lección diez.

Exercises. — Ejercicios.

Words.

<i>La riqueza</i> , (the) riches, wealth.	<i>el protector</i> , the protector.
<i>la pobreza</i> , (the) poverty.	<i>la pérdida</i> , the loss.
<i>el influjo</i> ,	} <i>el ánimo</i> , the courage.
<i>la influencia</i> ,	
	} <i>el miedo</i> , the fear.

<i>la Exposición</i> , the Exhibition.	<i>amado</i> , loved.
<i>el desdichado</i> , the unhappy man.	<i>logrado</i> , got, obtained.
<i>el holgazán</i> , the idler.	<i>enviado</i> , sent.
<i>el hambre</i> (f.), (the) hunger.	<i>pagado</i> , paid.
<i>la sed</i> , (the) thirst.	<i>recibido</i> , received.
<i>la libertad</i> , (the) liberty, freedom.	<i>perdió</i> , he (she) lost.
<i>la mercancia</i> , the merchandise.	<i>debe</i> , he (she) owes.
<i>el príncipe</i> , the prince.	<i>sabido</i> , learned.
<i>la gana</i> , a mind (to do something); the appetite.	<i>poco</i> , -a, a little.
<i>la nación</i> , the nation.	<i>más</i> , more.
<i>padecido</i> , } suffered.	<i>pero</i> , but.
<i>sufrido</i> , }	<i>¿por qué . . . ?</i> , why? ; <i>porque</i> because.

Reading Exercise. 14.

¿Hay dinero en esa bolsa? ¿Hubo hombres en el jardín? Habrá muchas flores en los jardines de la Exposición. La riqueza y la pobreza tienen un gran influjo sobre los hombres. Tuve protectores, pero los (*them*) he perdido. Hemos sufrido grandes pérdidas. ¡Tened ánimo! ¡No tengáis miedo! Habría menos desdichados, si hubiese menos holgazanes. ¿Tiene V. dinero? ¿Tienen Vds. hambre ó sed? ¿Ha amado V. á ese hombre? El capitán no habría logrado su libertad, si no hubiese tenido grandes protectores. Le habría enviado á V. más mercancías, si V. me (*me*) hubiese pagado. (Él) no me ha pagado el dinero que (*which*) me debe (*owes*). Cuando (él) hubo recibido su (*his*) dinero, lo (*it*) perdió. No he recibido las mercancías que V. me ha enviado. Habiendo sabido por mi criado que el capitán está aquí, le (*him*) he enviado todos sus libros. El desdichado no tendrá protectores. ¿Ha visto V. los castillos del rey? Los niños de nuestro tío tendrán papel y plumas, tinta y lápices. Los hermanos de nuestro jardinero han sufrido una gran pérdida. ¿Por qué tuvo V. miedo? Ha* habido muchos criados en el palacio del príncipe. El holgazán no tiene jamás gana de trabajar. El señor N. tendría más dinero, si hubiese tenido gana de trabajar. La libertad tiene un gran influjo sobre las naciones. El general quiere que V. no tenga miedo. Ha de pagar V. el dinero que (V.) perdió. Tendré que hablar con V.

Traducción. 15.

1. This man had great riches. What have you to tell me (*decirme*)? The footman was always thirsty (tr. *had* always *thirst*). Riches (*sing.*) will always have a great influence on (the) men. Are there any large towns in this

* See page 35**.

country? There (have always been) were always men who (*que*) had no mind to work. I will not (have you lose heart) that you have (*subj. pres.*) fear*. I had to speak to you yesterday. We should have many friends if we had more money. I have lost the protectors whom (*que*) I had. The unhappy man has always had poor friends. Had you much money in the purse which you have lost? The prince would have obtained his liberty had he had more protectors. Why have you not sent me (*me precedes the verb*) the merchandise (*pl.*)? I had no mind to speak with (*á*) the prince.

2. The idle man is hungry (tr. *has h.*), but he will not work. Are you hungry or thirsty (tr. *have you h. or th.*)? Must you pay the money which the footman has lost? These nations have sustained** great losses. There are men who love (the) liberty more than (the) riches (*sing.*). Why have you not loved this man? These nations had always good (*buenos*) princes. The prince had two castles and three palaces in (the) town. Do you know (*sabe V.*) how many (*cuánto, -a*) provinces Spain has? Has Mr. Figueredo many books? He has more books than my father and my cousin (*m.*). I had already (*ya begins the sentence*) paid (for) these goods yesterday. Thou wilt have the money to-morrow. He had had unfortunate friends.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Quién ha tenido dinero? | El comerciante ha tenido mucho dinero? |
| ¿Tiene el criado hambre ó sed? | No tiene hambre, pero tiene siempre sed. |
| ¿Hay flores en ese jardín? | Hay en él flores y árboles. |
| ¿Qué tiene un gran influjo sobre los hombres? | La riqueza y la pobreza tienen un gran influjo sobre los hombres. |
| ¿Que tendrá la señorita Elvira? | Tendrá un hermoso espejo (<i>looking-glass</i>). |
| ¿Cuántas horas (<i>hours</i>) tiene el día? | El día tiene veinticuatro horas. |
| ¿Tiene V. <i>que</i> hablar con mi hermano? | No, señor, tengo que hablar con V. |
| ¿Por qué no tiene amigos el desdichado? | Porque no tiene dinero. |
| ¿Tuvo muchos palacios el príncipe? | Tuvo dos palacios y muchos jardines. |

* For the convenience of the beginner the English text is occasionally modified, so that a literal translation may be good Spanish.

** *Transl.* suffered.

- ¿ Por qué no me ha pagado V. ? Porque no he tenido dinero.
 ¿ Ha sabido V. que mi padre No, señor, no lo he sabido.
 ha sufrido una pérdida ?
 ¿ Ha visto V. las mercancías ? No las he visto.

Eleventh Lesson. — Lección once.

The Auxiliary Verb **Ser**, to be. — El verbo auxiliar **ser**, to be.

Indicative.

Present.

(Yo) <i>soy</i> , I am.	(<i>nosotros</i>) <i>somos</i> , we are.
(tú) <i>eres</i> , thou art.	(<i>vosotros</i>) <i>sois</i> , you are.
(él) <i>es</i> , he is.	(<i>ellos</i>) <i>son</i> , they are.

Imperfect.

<i>Era</i> , I was.	<i>éramos</i> , we were.
<i>eras</i> , thou wast.	<i>erais</i> , you were.
<i>era</i> , he was.	<i>eran</i> , they were.

Definite.

<i>Fui</i> , I was.	<i>fuimos</i> , we were.
<i>fuiste</i> , thou wast.	<i>fuisteis</i> , you were.
<i>fué</i> , he was.	<i>fueron</i> , they were.

Future.

<i>Seré</i> , I shall be.	<i>seremos</i> , we shall be.
<i>serás</i> , thou wilt be.	<i>seréis</i> , you will be.
<i>será</i> , he will be.	<i>serán</i> , they will be.

Conditional.

<i>Sería</i> , I should be.	<i>seríamos</i> , we should be.
<i>serías</i> , thou wouldst be.	<i>seríais</i> , you would be.
<i>sería</i> , he would be.	<i>serían</i> , they would be.

Imperative.

<i>Sé</i> , be (thou).	<i>sed</i> , be (you).
------------------------	------------------------

Participle.

Sido, been.

Compound Tenses.

Compound Perfect.

<i>He sido</i> , I have been.	<i>hemos sido</i> , we have been.
<i>has sido</i> , thou hast been.	<i>habéis sido</i> , you have been.
<i>ha sido</i> , he has been.	<i>han sido</i> , they have been.

Pluperfect.

<i>Había sido</i> , I had been.	<i>habíamos sido</i> , we had been.
<i>habías sido</i> , thou hadst been.	<i>habíais sido</i> , you had been.
<i>había sido</i> , he had been.	<i>habían sido</i> , they had been.

2nd Pluperfect.

<i>Hube sido</i> , I had been.	<i>hubimos sido</i> , we had been.
<i>hubiste sido</i> , thou hadst been.	<i>hubisteis sido</i> , you had been.
<i>hubo sido</i> , he had been.	<i>hubieron sido</i> , they had been.

Compound Future.

<i>Habré sido</i> , I shall	} have been.	<i>habremos sido</i> , we shall	} have been.
<i>habrás sido</i> , thou wilt		<i>habréis sido</i> , you will	
<i>habrá sido</i> , he will		<i>habrán sido</i> , they will	

Compound Conditional.

<i>Habría sido</i> , I should	} have been.	<i>habríamos sido</i> , we should	} have been.
<i>habrías sido</i> , th. wouldst		<i>habrías sido</i> , you would	
<i>habría sido</i> , he would		<i>habrían sido</i> , they would	

*Gerund.**Siendo*, being.*Subjunctive.**Present.*

<i>Sea</i> , I be.	<i>seamos</i> , we be.
<i>seas</i> , thou be.	<i>sedis</i> , you be.
<i>sea</i> , he be.	<i>sean</i> , they be.

Imperfect.

<i>Fuese</i> , I were.	<i>fuésemos</i> , we were.
<i>fueses</i> , thou wert.	<i>fueseis</i> , you were.
<i>fuese</i> , he were.	<i>fuesen</i> , they were.

Future.

<i>Fuere</i> , (if) I shall be.	<i>fuéremos</i> , (if) we shall be.
<i>fueres</i> , > thou wilt be.	<i>fueréis</i> , > you will be.
<i>fuere</i> , > he will be.	<i>fueren</i> , > they will be.

Conditional.

<i>Fuera</i> , that I should be.	<i>fuéramos</i> , that we should be.
<i>fueras</i> , that thou wouldst be.	<i>fuerais</i> , that you would be.
<i>fuera</i> , that he would be.	<i>fueran</i> , that they would be.

Compound Tenses.

Like those of the Indicative Mood, the compound tenses of the Subjunctive are formed by adding the Participle *sido* to the respective forms of the Subjunctive of *haber*, thus:

Haya sido, I have been.
Hubiese sido, that I had been.
Hubiere sido, if I shall have been.
Hubiera sido, that I should have been.

Remarks.

1. *Ser* is used with *nouns*, *adjectives*, etc., in order to express a *permanent* state of existence of the subject, as: *Ser hombre*, to be a man; *ser general*, to be a general; *ser bueno*, *malo*, to be good, bad, etc. Here the qualities attributed to the subject appear as characteristic and, as it were, *inseparable* from it. Such qualities are *size*, *dignity*, *nationality*, *office*, *occupation*, etc. Thus:

Ese señor es juez, francés, general, pintor, alto, bajo, etc.
 This gentleman is a judge, a Frenchman, a general, a painter, tall, short, etc.

2. On the contrary, *estar* is used when the attribute appears merely *accidental*, or if a *dwelling* in any place whatever is to be expressed. Thus:

Está cansado, he is tired.
No está en casa, he is not at home.

Some examples will show the difference between the two verbs:

Ese hombre es bueno, malo, this man is good, bad.
*Ese hombre está bueno**, *malo*, this man is well, unwell (in good health, in bad health), etc.

In the first example, the quality is a characteristic and permanent one; in the second, it is accidental and transient.

Esta puerta es alta, this door is high (*i.e.*, the quality is permanent).
Esta puerta está cerrada, this door is shut (*i.e.*, in this moment, but it might be open).

The pupil should carefully compare the following sentences:

El señor N. es muy docto, Mr. N. is a very learned man.
Estamos prontos, we are ready.
Es librero, he is a bookseller.
Estoy contento, I am satisfied.
Somos fuertes, cuerdos, we are strong, prudent.
Estar en el paseo, en el café, en el campo, to be on the promenade**, at the coffee-house, in the country.
Ser rey, to be king.

* *Estar bien* means also: to be at ease.

** *el paseo*—*i.e.*, the avenue, park, public gardens, quay, place or street where the townspeople usually take their walk.

Es sabio, rico, etc., he is wise, rich, etc.

Ya estamos aquí, now we are here.

Don Fulano es de Paris, Mr. N. is from Paris.

3. Sometimes *ser* and *estar* may be coupled with the same word, as:

Ser enamorado, to be of an amorous disposition.

Estar enamorado, to be in love.

But here, again, in the first example the quality is a characteristic mark of the person; in the second, however, it is merely accidental and transitory.

4. The *Passive voice* of the verb is always formed with *ser*, as: *Ser amado*, to be loved. The compound tenses do not differ from the English: *He sido amado*, I have been loved. (See the *Passive Voice*.)

5. The adjectives *atento*, attentive; *contento*, satisfied; *libre*, free; *enfadado*, angry, are commonly used with *estar*.

6. Very often *estar* with the *Gerund* is an equivalent for *to be* with the *present participle*, as:

Estoy buscando á mi hermano, I am looking for my brother.

Estaba leyendo un libro, I was reading a book.

Twelfth Lesson. — Lección doce.

Estar, to be*.

Indicative.

Present.

Estoy, I am.

estamos, we are.

estás, thou art.

estáis, you are.

está, he is.

están, they are.

Imperfect.

Estaba, I was.

estábamos, we were.

estabas, thou wast.

estabais, you were.

estaba, he was.

estaban, they were.

Definite.

Estuve, I was.

estuvimos, we were.

estuviste, thou wast.

estuvisteis, you were.

estuvo, he was.

estuvieron, they were.

* We need not add that *estar* (like *tener*) is no auxiliary, but a principal verb.

Future.

Estaré, I shall be.
estarás, thou wilt be.
estará, he will be.

estaremos, we shall be.
estaréis, you will be.
estarán, they will be.

Conditional.

Estaría, I should be.
estarías, thou wouldst be.
estaría, he would be.

estaríamos, we should be.
estaríais, you would be.
estarían, they would be.

Imperative.

Está, be (thou).

estad, be (you).

Participle.

Estado, been.

*Compound Tenses.**Compound Perfect.*

He estado, I have been.
has estado, thou hast been.
ha estado, he has been.

hemos estado, we have been.
habéis estado, you have been.
han estado, they have been.

Pluperfect.

<i>Habia</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	I had th. hadst he had	} been.	<i>habíamos</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	we had you had they had	} been.
<i>habías</i>				<i>habíais</i>			
<i>había</i>				<i>habían</i>			

2nd Pluperfect.

<i>Hube</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	I had th. hadst he had	} been.	<i>hubimos</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	we had you had they had	} been.
<i>hubiste</i>				<i>hubisteis</i>			
<i>hubo</i>				<i>hubieron</i>			

Compound Future.

<i>Habré</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	I shall th. wilt he will	} have been.	<i>habremos</i>	} <i>estado</i> ,	we shall you will they will	} have been.
<i>habrás</i>				<i>habréis</i>			
<i>habrá</i>				<i>habrán</i>			

Compound Conditional.

Habría estado, I should have been.
habríamos estado, we should have been.

Gerund.

Estando, being.

*Subjunctive.**Present.*

Esté, I be.
estés, thou be.
esté, he be.

estemos, we be.
estéis, you be.
estén, they be.

Imperfect.

<i>Estuviere</i> , I were.	<i>estuviésemos</i> , we were.
<i>estuvieses</i> , thou wert.	<i>estuvieseis</i> , you were.
<i>estuviese</i> , he were.	<i>estuviesen</i> , they were.

Future.

<i>Estuviere</i> , (that) I shall be.	<i>estuvieremos</i> , (that) we shall be.
<i>estuvieras</i> , (that) thou wilt be.	<i>estuviereis</i> , (that) you will be.
<i>estuviere</i> , (that) he will be.	<i>estuvieren</i> , (that) they will be.

Conditional.

<i>Estuviera</i> , that I should be.	<i>estuviéramos</i> , that we should be.
<i>estuvieras</i> , that thou wouldst be.	<i>estuvierais</i> , that you would be.
<i>estuviera</i> , that he would be.	<i>estuvieran</i> , that they would be.

Compound Tenses.

Like those of the Indicative Mood, they are formed by joining the Participle *estado* to the Subjunctive of *haber*, as:

<i>Haya estado</i> , (that) I have been.
<i>hubiese estado</i> , that I had been.
<i>hubiere estado</i> , that I shall have been.
<i>hubiera estado</i> , that I should have been.

Rule.—The past participle, used with *haber*, is always *invariable*, as in English; thus:

<i>Él ha estado</i> , he has been.
<i>ella ha estado</i> , she has been (and not <i>estada</i>).
<i>ellos han estado</i> , they (<i>m.</i>) have been (and not <i>estados</i>).
<i>ellas han estado</i> , they (<i>f.</i>) have been (and not <i>estadas</i>).

Thirteenth Lesson. — Lección trece.

Exercises. — Ejercicios.

Words.

<i>El deseo</i> , the wish, desire.	<i>el viaje</i> , the journey.
<i>la manera</i> , the manner.	<i>el extranjero</i> , the foreign country; <i>al extranjero</i> , abroad.
<i>el sueño</i> , the dream.	<i>el bebedero</i> , the trough, bird's trough.
<i>la cosa</i> , the thing.	<i>la cruz</i> , the cross.
<i>la situación</i> , the situation.	<i>el pájaro</i> , the bird.
<i>el heredero</i> , the heir.	<i>la virtud</i> , the virtue.
<i>el precio</i> , the price.	<i>el reino</i> , the kingdom.
<i>el buen juicio</i> , the good sense.	<i>la aldea</i> , the village.
<i>el error</i> , the mistake.	<i>el concierto</i> , the concert.
<i>la piedra</i> , the stone.	
<i>el duque</i> , the duke.	

la viuda, the widow.
el edificio, the building, edifice.
la plaza, the square.
el baile, the ball.
la compañía, the company.
la prosperidad, the happiness,
 prosperity.
lastimoso, -a, sorry, sad.
precioso, -a, precious.
enfadado, -a, cross.
cierto, -a, certain.
colmado, -a, filled.
favorable, favourable.

adornar, to adorn.
mirar, to look at.
conquistar, to conquer.
alcanzar, to obtain, to get.
vivir, to live, to dwell.
muerto, died (*Past. p.*), dead.
tarde, late.
lejos, far.
por desgracia, unfortunately.
aquí, here.
de paso, for the time being,
 actually.
en medio, in the middle, amidst.

Reading Exercise. 16.

El deseo de alcanzar fama es activo en muchos hombres. El sueño no es más que una fantasía (*fantasy*). Mi situación es muy lastimosa, no obstante de ser* yo un heredero rico. Las mercancías inglesas son de precios moderados. V. no está en su cabal juicio. V. estuvo en un error. ¿Estará V. en casa mañana? Esta cruz de oro estaba adornada de muchas piedras preciosas. El duque y la duquesa están aquí de paso en su viaje al extranjero. Los niños tendrán de cuatro á cinco años. Estoy mirando (*looking*) si (*whether*) el bebedero del pájaro tiene agua. Doña Julia está muy enfadada hoy. Por desgracia es cierto que el hijo de la pobre viuda ha muerto. ¿Qué edificio es aquel que está en medio de la plaza? ¿Estuvieron Vds. ayer en el baile? No hubo baile ayer. Sería muy hermoso este viaje, si no *hiciese tanto calor* (were not so hot). El duque ha estado en su palacio, y la duquesa estuvo en el extranjero. La vida es un sueño. Los niños no están en su cabal juicio. Mi padre quiere que yo esté en casa todo el día. Es una cosa deliciosa vivir en compañía de un amigo. La casa de su amigo de V.** está muy lejos de la ciudad. ¡Quiera (*would to*) Dios que sus años de V. sean colmados de toda (*all*) prosperidad! Las plazas fuertes de todo el reino están conquistadas.

Traducción. 17.

Where are *you***? Were *you* at home yesterday? No, sir, I was not at home. I was at the concert. The cross of the duchess was (set) adorned with precious stones. A poet

* *no obstante de ser*, although I am. In English, the Infinitive following *no obstante* should be rendered by the respective tense of the verb.

** *you* when printed in *italics* is always *V.* — For *Your*, see the *Note* on page 48.

says (*dice*): (the) Error is (the) life. The duke and the duchess are travelling (*tr.* on a journey) abroad. In the middle of the square there is a large palace and a beautiful garden. The building is very far from the village (*la aldea*). Where was (*Def.*) the son of the widow? The trough of the bird is without water. (The) Fortune is a precious thing; but (the) virtue is more (*más*) precious. Your cousin (*m.*) is very cross to-day. Unfortunately it is certain that the emperor has died. There were ten precious stones on the cross. The prices of (the) English goods are very moderate. Your brother (*Su hermano de V.*) has been greatly mistaken (*transl.* in a great mistake). Why are *you* not* satisfied with (*con*) your situation? I wish *you* to be (*tr.* I wish that you be) at home at 12 o'clock (*á las doce*). If *you* were in Madrid, *your* situation would be more favourable. Were *you* not at the concert yesterday? I should have been at home if your brother had come (*venido*). It is already (*ya*) somewhat (*algo*) late; why did *you* not come at ten o'clock (*á las diez*)? This man has always been very happy (*feliz*); notwithstanding (*sin embargo*) he is not satisfied with his (*su*) situation. I was just reading a book, when (*cuando*) my brother came (*vino*). What are *you* looking for? I am looking (*tr.* searching) for my hat.

Conversación.

¿Dónde está el duque?	Está en el palacio de la duquesa.
¿Qué deseo es activo en los hombres?	El deseo de alcanzar fama y riqueza.
¿Qué es el sueño?	El sueño es una cosa fantástica.
¿Por qué se lastima (<i>complain</i>) V.?	Porque mi situación es muy lastimosa.
¿Cómo son los precios de esos géneros (<i>commodities</i>)?	Son muy (<i>very</i>) moderados.
¿Estuvo V. ayer en su casa?	No, señor, estuve en casa de mi primo.
¿De qué (<i>With what</i>) estaba adornada la cruz del obispo (<i>bishop</i>)?	Estaba adornada de muchas piedras preciosas.
¿Qué edad es la de V.? (<i>or</i> tiene V?) — (<i>How old are you?</i>)	Tengo treinta años (<i>I am . . . old</i>).
¿Qué estás leyendo?	Estoy leyendo el Don Quijote.
¿Está V. buscando su sombrero?	No, señora, estoy buscando mis guantes.
¿Quién ha muerto?	El hijo de la pobre viuda ha muerto.

* In Spanish, the meaning of a verb is rendered negative by prefixing *no* to it, as: I do not think, (Yo) *no pienso*.

- ¿No puede (*Cannot*) V. decirme (*tell me*) qué (*what*) edificio es aquel? El edificio que está en medio de la plaza es el Tribunal Real (*royal*).
- ¿Qué quiere su padre de V.?^{*} Quiere que esté hoy en casa hasta la tarde.
- ¿Cómo está su padre de V.? Está un poco indispuerto (*unwell*).

Fourteenth Lesson. — Lección catorce.

Determinative Adjectives. — Adjetivos determinantes.

1. Demonstrative Adjectives. — Adjetivos demostrativos.

They are:

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Este</i> **, <i>esta</i> , <i>esto</i> , this	<i>estos</i> , <i>estas</i> , these.
<i>Ese</i> , <i>esa</i> , <i>eso</i> , that	<i>esos</i> , <i>esas</i> , those.
<i>Aquel</i> , <i>aquella</i> , <i>aquello</i> , that	<i>aquellos</i> , <i>aquellas</i> , those.

Demonstratives are considered to be *Pronouns* when employed *without* a substantive. When employed with a substantive, they are *Adjectives*.

§ 1. These demonstratives differ as follows. *Este* refers to anything which is near the speaker, and *ese* to anything which is near the person addressed. Thus *este sombrero* means *this* hat (near me), whereas *ese sombrero* means *this or that* hat (near you). *Aquel*, on the contrary, refers to a person or a thing distant from the speaker as well as from the person addressed to. Again *esta ciudad* is the town where the speaker or writer lives; *esa ciudad* means the town in which the person to whom I write or speak lives—*i.e.*, *your*, town; *aquella ciudad* is neither *my* town nor *yours*, but another place remote from both.

§ 2. The forms *esto* (this), *eso*, and *aquello* are *neuter* (like the article *lo*), and differ in the same way. They may never be coupled with a substantive. Ex.:

¿Le has hablado de *eso*? Have you spoken to him of it? (of that, thereof etc.)

* *Your* (polite mode) is expressed *el . . . de V.* (the . . . of you), or more elegantly *su . . . de V.* (your . . . of you). (See the following Lesson.)

** *De este*, *de esta*, *de esto* were formerly contracted into *deste*, *desta*, *desto*. This practice is now obsolete.

§ 3. *El mismo, la misma, lo mismo*, the same.

This demonstrative takes the definite article as well as the indefinite. Preceded by *un*, it corresponds to the English *similar* or *like*; thus:

El mismo árbol, the same tree.

Del mismo árbol, of the same tree, etc.

Un mismo uniforme, a similar (the like) uniform.

Mismo may also be joined to *este*, *ese*, and *aquel*, and then means *the very same*, or *this very . . .*, as:

Este mismo hombre, the identical man.

Lo mismo is neuter and means *the same thing*.

2. Interrogative Adjectives.

§ 4. *¿Qué?* *what? which?* is invariable as to gender and number; and its sense is more general than that of *¿cuál?* thus:

¿Qué hombre? What man?

¿Qué culpa tengo? What is my fault? *i.e.*, in what does my fault consist?

¿Qué libro tiene V.? Which book have you got?

Qué is also exclamative, as:

¡Qué hombre! What a man!

If followed by an adjective, *tan* (so, so much) or *más*, most (utmost) should be added, as:

¡Qué mujer tan hermosa! What a beautiful woman!

¡Qué casa más alta! What a high house!

N.B.—*Indirect* interrogative sentences are also introduced by *qué*, as:

No sabemos qué pasajeros han llegado.

We do not know which passengers have arrived.

Preguntaba qué noticias traía el vapor.

I was asking what news the steamer brought.

§ 5. The interrogative and exclamative *qué*, when joined to the Accusative of a *person*, does not, like the relative pronoun *que* (see Lesson 26), admit of the preposition *á*; thus:

¿Qué hombre ha visto V.? Which man have you seen?
and not: *¿A qué hombre ha visto V.?*

§ 6. *¿Cuál?* *¿Qué?* *what? which?*; *¿cuál?* *which? what?* (plur. *¿cuáles?*) are invariable only as to gender,

and used to specify or distinguish between two or more persons or things:

¿*Cuál hombre?* which man? what man?

¿*Cuál mujer?* which woman?

Pl. ¿*Cuáles hombres?* ¿*Cuáles mujeres?* which men? which women?

Words.

<i>La carta</i> , the letter.	<i>majestuoso</i> , -a, majestic.
<i>el muchacho</i> , the boy.	<i>pesado</i> , -a, heavy.
<i>la calle</i> , the street.	<i>natural</i> , native, born in.
<i>la arquitectura</i> , the architecture.	<i>alto</i> , -a, high.
<i>la iglesia</i> , the church.	<i>primorosamente</i> , first rate, very well.
<i>el nombre</i> , the name.	<i>hablo</i> , I speak.
<i>la tienda</i> , the shop.	<i>habla</i> , he (she) speaks.
<i>la señora</i> , the lady.	<i>mire V.</i> , look! (3rd Sing. Imper.)
<i>el lujo</i> , the magnificence.	<i>se llama</i> , is named.
<i>la carga</i> , the burden, weight.	<i>comprado</i> , bought.
<i>el oficial</i> , the officer.	<i>hecho</i> , done, made.
<i>el cuarto</i> , the room.	<i>cómo</i> , how.
<i>el color</i> , the colour.	<i>dos</i> , two.
<i>el extranjero</i> , } the foreigner.	
<i>la extranjera</i> , }	

Reading Exercise. 18.

Este hombre. Aquellas cartas. Esa mujer. Ese muchacho. ¡Qué calle tan hermosa! Ese (or aquel) teatro es muy grande. Esta casa no es grande. La arquitectura de aquella (or esa) iglesia es majestuosa. ¡Mire V. estos árboles! Aquellas dos señoras son extranjeras; son cantantes (*singers*). Esta señora es natural de Madrid (*es madrileña*). ¿Cómo se llama este café? ¡Qué lujo en esta casa! ¡Oh qué carga *tan* pesada! ¿Está bueno su amigo de V. en esa ciudad? ¿Tiene V. el mismo libro que tengo yo? Aquellos oficiales tenían un mismo uniforme. He visto á las mismas señoras que usted ha visto. ¿Qué deseo tiene su hermano de V.? ¿Cuál hombre estuvo en mi cuarto? No hablo de este hombre sino (*but*) de aquel. El mismo color. Las mismas personas. El hijo de aquel hombre es muy pequeño. He comprado las mismas plumas en la tienda de aquel mismo hombre. Hemos leído los mismos libros.

Traducción. 19.

This man is rich. That boy is poor. Those women were in my room. Have you seen that theatre? This church has a majestic architecture. What splendour in this palace! What [a] rich man! In your (§ 1) city there was (*hubo*)

a merchant who (*que*) had the same name. These two officers have the same uniform. This gentleman is called (has the name of) Charles, and that lady is called Elvira. Do you speak of these gentlemen or of those? Many flowers have the same colour. What [a] man! What [a] beautiful woman! These boys were at (the) church. I have seen the same persons. These gentlemen are natives of Paris, and those ladies of Madrid. The trees before your house are very high. This burden is very heavy. What is the name of that boy (*tr.* How calls himself that boy)? Do you speak of this gentleman or of that lady?

Conversación.

? Cómo se llama este muchacho?	Se llama Celedonio.
¿Y cómo se llaman esos hombres?	No sé como se llaman.
¿Es grande ese teatro?	Sí, señora, es muy grande.
¿Cómo es la arquitectura de aquella iglesia?	La arquitectura de aquella iglesia es majestuosa.
¿No es madrileña esta señora?	¡Perdone V.! (<i>I beg your pardon!</i>) Esta señora es natural de Paris (<i>or better</i> parisiense.)
¿Conoce V. esta flor?	Sí, es una rosa.
¿Y aquella?	Es un tulipán.
¿Son cantantes esas señoras?	No son cantantes, pero bailan (<i>they dance</i>) primorosamente.
¿Cómo estaban vestidos aquellos oficiales?	Tenían todos un mismo uniforme.
¿Qué hombre ha visto V.?	He visto al padre de este muchacho.
¿Qué ha hecho V. esta mañana?	He escrito una carta.

Fifteenth Lesson. — Lección quince.

Possessives. — Posesivos.

Possessives may be either adjectives (when immediately preceding or following a noun or its equivalent), or pronouns (when by themselves, whether preceded or not by an article). Compare:

¡Hija mía! my daughter. *Sus libros,* his books.

And *¿De quién es hija?* — *Mía.*
Whose daughter is she? — **Mine.**

¿Qué libros son? — *Los míos.*
Which books are they? — **Mine.**

In any case Possessives are treated as adjectives as to inflection and agreement, though in Spanish they agree with the possessed object, not with the possessor.

1. Possessive adjectives.

They assume two forms:

(a) Complete form (*which follows*):

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
<i>mío, mía, my</i> <i>tuyo, tuya, thy</i>	} his } its } her }	<i>míos, mías, my</i> <i>tuyos, tuyas, thy</i>	} his } its } her }
<i>suyo, suya, }</i> } your		<i>suyos, suyas, }</i> } your	
<i>nuestro, nuestra, our</i> <i>vuestro, vuestra, your</i>	} their } your	<i>nuestros, nuestras, our</i> <i>vuestros, vuestras, your</i>	} their } your.
<i>suyo, suya, }</i> } your		<i>suyos, suyas, }</i> } your.	

Referring to *only one* object possessed. Referring to *more than one* object possessed.

(b) Apococate form (*which precedes*):

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
<i>mi, my</i> <i>tu, thy</i>	} his } its } her }	<i>mis, my</i> <i>tus, thy</i>	} his } its } her }
<i>su, }</i> } your		<i>sus, }</i> } your	
<i>nuestro, nuestra, our</i> <i>vuestro, vuestra, your</i>	} their } your	<i>nuestros, nuestras, our</i> <i>vuestros, vuestras, your</i>	} their } your.
<i>su, }</i> } your		<i>sus, }</i> } your.	

Referring to *only one* object possessed. Referring to *more than one* object possessed.

Examples.

Mi amigo, my friend (= a friend of mine).

¡Amigo mío! my (dear) friend!

Fué por culpa mía y no por culpa suya, it was through my fault and not through his (fault).

Fué por mi culpa, y no por tu culpa.

§ 1. *His* and *her* are both rendered by *su*, as *su amigo*, his friend or her friend. — Besides, *su* signifies *their*, as: My brothers have sold *their* dog, *mis hermanos han vendido su perro.*

§ 2. *Mi, tu, su* have no particular form for the feminine gender; *nuestro* and *vuestro*, however, change the final *o* into *a*, as: *nuestro amigo*, our friend (*m.*); *nuestra amiga*, our friend (*f.*).

§ 3. As in English, the possessive adjective, when no stress is laid on it, may be omitted, if another substantive with a possessive adjective precedes, coupled by the conjunction *y* (and) or *ó* (or); thus:

Sus libros y (sus) plumas.

His books and (his) pens.

§ 4. If in English a possessive adjective is repeated before *two* adjectives expressing *matter* — as: wooden, gold, silver, etc. (when in Spanish, as stated in Less. 5, § 4, the material is expressed by a substantive with *de*) — the Spaniard *omits* the second possessive adjective and puts the definite article in its stead, as:

Neither your gold nor your silver watch.

Ni tu reloj de oro ni el de plata.

§ 5. Likewise, the demonstrative pronoun is rendered by the definite article, if a substantive preceded by a possessive adjective is followed by another substantive in the *Genitive* case, as:

My friend and *that* of my cousin.

Mi amigo y el de mi primo.

If we say: *El amigo mío y de mi primo*, the sense is different. In the first sentence we speak of *two* persons, whereas in the second phrase *the same* person is meant.

§ 6. The English expression: a friend, a relation, etc. of mine, should be translated *un amigo mío*, etc., as:

Charles is a friend of mine.

Carlos es (un) amigo mío.

§ 7. The possessive pronoun referring to the *polite form V.* is either *el (la) de V.* or more elegantly *su de V.*; simply *su* (and not *su de V.*), if *V.* precedes *immediately*, when no misunderstanding would arise, thus:

Have you *your* stick? ¿Tiene *V. su* bastón? (and not: *su bastón de V.*, because *V.* precedes.) Whereas:

I have *your* stick. *Tengo el bastón de V.*; or more elegantly: *Tengo su bastón de V.*

N.B.—The English possessive is rendered not by the Spanish possessive, but by the article, in such phrases as:

I have cut my hand, *me he cortado la mano.*

He has broken his arm, *se ha roto el brazo.*

Words.

<i>La dicha</i> , the fortune.	<i>la edad</i> , the age.
<i>el conocido</i> , the acquaintance.	<i>la ilusión</i> , the illusion.
<i>el mantenimiento</i> , the maintenance, livelihood.	<i>poético</i> , -a, poetical.
<i>la educación</i> , the education.	<i>único</i> , -a, sole, only.
<i>la incuria</i> , the carelessness.	<i>estudiar</i> , to study.
<i>el descuido</i> , the negligence.	<i>cuidar</i> , to care. [teem.]
<i>la causa</i> , the cause.	<i>apreciar</i> , to appreciate, to esteem, thou comest.
<i>la desgracia</i> , the misfortune.	<i>quieren</i> , they like.
<i>los padres</i> , the parents.	<i>repasad</i> , repeat (2nd Plur. Imperat.).
<i>el hierro</i> , the iron.	<i>hallado</i> , found.
<i>la cadena</i> , the chain.	

Reading Exercise. 20.

¡Mire V. mi reloj! ¿Vienes á estudiar con tu hermano? ¡Repasad vuestras lecciones, niños! Mis hermanos estuvieron ayer en su jardín de V. ¿Tiene V. su reloj de oro ó el de plata? Esta madre ha perdido su hijo y su hija*. Es culpa mía el no haber venido ayer. Ese hombre es mi amigo y no el de mi hermano. Mi amigo y el de mi hermano han muerto. ¡Por dicha mía he vendido mi casa! ¿No es amigo tuyo ese señor? Es un conocido mío. ¡Dadme (*give* [pl.] *me*) mi libro y mis plumas! Estos niños han perdido á su padre. He hallado su bolsillo de V. Esta casa es mía, y aquella es de** mi padre. Mi tío cuida de mi mantenimiento y educación. Tu incuria y descuido son la única causa de tu desgracia. Hemos hablado de nuestro amigo y no del tuyo. Me he cortado la mano. Se ha roto el brazo.

Traducción. 21.

His children are the cause of his misfortune. Have you studied (*estudiado*) with your brother? This gentleman has lost his son, and this lady has lost her daughter. These children love their parents. It is (by) your fault that I have lost (*el haber perdido yo*) my gold watch. Is this lady your friend or that of your sister? I have come with my cousin (*m.*) and with yours. Have you your silver or your gold chain? Have you your hat? I have not mine, but (*sino*) I

* *Ha perdido á su hijo* may mean: "has ruined her son."

** *To belong to*, is usually expressed by the verb *ser* with the Genitive case.

have my brother's hat. A friend of mine has provided for the education of the children. My friends and acquaintances (did not) have not come. I have found your purse in the garden. Our aunts have found their letters. He has broken his arm.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|---|
| ¡Mire V. (<i>look at</i>) mi reloj! | Su reloj de V. atrasa (<i>loses</i>). |
| ¿Cuál es la causa de su desgracia de V.? | La única causa de mi desgracia es mi descuido. |
| ¿Quieren esos niños á sus padres? | Si, señor, los quieren. |
| ¿Con quién ha venido V.? | He venido con mi amigo y el de mi hermano. |
| ¿Qué se ha de (<i>must one</i>) apreciar en un hombre? | Su persona y sus cualidades (<i>qualities</i>). |
| ¿Dónde estuvo V. ayer? | Estuve en el jardín de mi tío. |
| ¿Qué tiene su criado de V.? | Tiene mi gorra (<i>cap</i>) y su sombrero de V. |
| ¿Es ese señor su hermano de V.? | No, es mi primo; mi hermano es aquel. |
| ¿De qué debe (<i>ought, shall</i>) cuidar un buen padre? | Del mantenimiento y de la educación de sus hijos. |
| ¿No es ese señor un conocido de V.? | Si, señor, es un conocido mío. |
| Amigo mío, ¡qué has hecho (<i>done</i>)! | ¡No es culpa mía! |

2. Possessive pronouns.

<i>masc.</i>	<i>fem.</i>	<i>neutr.</i>	
(<i>el</i>) mío,	(<i>la</i>) mía,	(<i>lo</i>) mío, mine	} his
(<i>el</i>) tuyo,	(<i>la</i>) tuya,	(<i>lo</i>) tuyo, thine	
(<i>el</i>) suyo,	(<i>la</i>) suya,	(<i>lo</i>) suyo,	
or	or	or	} hers
(<i>el</i>) de él,	(<i>la</i>) de él	(<i>lo</i>) de él,	
(<i>el</i>) de ella,	(<i>la</i>) de ella,	(<i>lo</i>) de ella,	
(<i>el</i>) de V.,	(<i>la</i>) de V.,	(<i>lo</i>) de V.,	
			} its
			} yours
(<i>el</i>) nuestro,	(<i>la</i>) nuestra,	(<i>lo</i>) nuestro, ours	} Referring to one object possessed.
(<i>el</i>) vuestro,	(<i>la</i>) vuestra,	(<i>lo</i>) vuestro, yours	
(<i>el</i>) suyo,	(<i>la</i>) suya,	(<i>lo</i>) suyo,	
or	or	or	} theirs
(<i>el</i>) de ellos,	(<i>la</i>) de ellos,	(<i>lo</i>) de ellos,	
(<i>el</i>) de ellas,	(<i>la</i>) de ellas,	(<i>lo</i>) de ellas,	
(<i>el</i>) de VV.,	(<i>la</i>) de VV.,	(<i>lo</i>) de VV.,	
			} yours.

masc.	fem.	
(los) <i>mios</i> ,	(las) <i>mias</i> ,	mine
(los) <i>tuyos</i> ,	(las) <i>tuyas</i> ,	thine
(los) <i>suyos</i> ,	(las) <i>suyas</i> ,	} his
or	or	
(los) <i>de él</i> ,	(las) <i>de él</i>	} hers
(los) <i>de ella</i> ,	(las) <i>de ella</i> ,	
(los) <i>de V.</i> ,	(las) <i>de V.</i> ,	} its
		} yours
(los) <i>nuestros</i> ,	(las) <i>nuestras</i> ,	} ours
(los) <i>vuestros</i> ,	(las) <i>vuestras</i> ,	
(los) <i>suyos</i> ,	(las) <i>suyas</i>	
or	or	} theirs
(los) <i>de ellos</i> ,	(las) <i>de ellos</i>	
(los) <i>de ellas</i> ,	(las) <i>de ellas</i>	
(los) <i>de VV.</i> ,	(las) <i>de VV.</i> ,	

Referring to more than one object possessed.

N.B.—Each of the above forms may appear without the article:

¿Qué libro es éste? — El mio.

Which book is this? — Mine.

¿De quién es este libro? — Mio.

Whose book is this? — Mine.

Traducción.

Which hat have you got? (*¿tiene V.?*) — Mine. No; that is mine; this is yours. He has lost his (neuter) and hers (neuter). That house is ours; those windows are mine. Whose gloves are these? — Hers. I thought they (*creta que*) were yours.

Sixteenth Lesson. — Lección dieciséis.

Numerals. — Numerales.

1. Cardinal Numbers. — Numerales Cardinales.

Uno (un), una, one.

dos, two.

tres, three.

cuatro, four.

cinco, five.

seis, six.

siete, seven.

ocho, eight.

nueve, nine.

diez, ten.

once, eleven.

doce, twelve.

trece, thirteen.

catorce, fourteen.

quince, fifteen.

diez y seis or *dieciséis*, sixteen.

diez y siete or *diecisiete*, se-

venteen.

diez y ocho or *dieciocho*,

eighteen.

<i>diez y nueve</i> or <i>diecinueve</i> , nineteen.	<i>trescientos, -as</i> , }	300.
<i>veinte</i> , twenty.	<i>trecientos, -as</i> , }	
<i>veinte y uno</i> * } (<i>veintiuno</i>), }	<i>cuatrocientos, -as</i> , }	400.
<i>veinte y dos</i> , twenty-two.	<i>quinientos, -as</i> , }	500.
<i>veinte y tres</i> , twenty-three.	<i>seiscientos, -as</i> , }	600.
<i>veinte y cuatro</i> , twenty-four.	<i>setecientos, -as</i> , }	700.
<i>treinta</i> , thirty.	<i>ochocientos, -as</i> , }	800.
<i>cuarenta</i> , forty.	<i>novecientos, -as</i> , }	900.
<i>cincuenta</i> , fifty.	<i>mil</i> , }	1000.
<i>sesenta</i> , sixty.	<i>mil uno</i> , }	1001.
<i>setenta</i> , seventy.	<i>mil dos</i> , }	1002.
<i>ochenta</i> , eighty.	<i>mil tres</i> , }	1003.
<i>noventa</i> , ninety. [red.]	<i>dos mil</i> , }	2000.
<i>ciento</i> (contract <i>cien</i>), a hundred.	<i>tres mil</i> , }	3000.
<i>ciento uno</i> , 101.	<i>diez mil</i> , }	10,000.
<i>ciento dos</i> , 102.	<i>cien mil</i> , }	100,000.
<i>doscientos, doscientas</i> , }	<i>un millón</i> (antic., <i>un cuento</i>), }	1,000,000.
<i>docientos, docientas</i> , }		

1. *Uno*, either by itself or in its compounds *veintiuno*, *treinta y uno*, etc., drops the *o* when immediately followed by a substantive or its adjective, or the numerals *ciento*, *mil*, *millón*; thus: *un caballo*, a horse; *un buen caballo*, a good horse; *un millón de pesetas*, 1,000,000 pesetas.

2. Before *mil* (1000) and *ciento* (100) *un* is never used, provided no misconception may arise by omitting it. Thus, *one thousand one hundred and eleven* is translated *mil ciento once*; but, *cuatrocientos y un mil* 401,000, because *cuatrocientos mil* (without *un*) is 400,000.

3. *Ciento* drops the last syllable (*-to*) when immediately before a substantive or an adjective, and likewise before *mil* and *millón*, as: a hundred men, *cien hombres*, a hundred thousand, *cien mil*; but *ciento ocho*, 108. The English expressions: eleven hundred, twelve hundred, etc., must be rendered by *mil ciento* [one thousand one hundred], etc. Ex.: *mil ochocientos (-as)*, eighteen hundred.

4. *Ciento* in the plural (two hundred, three hundred, etc.) is inflected like an adjective, taking *s* before a

* In modern orthography, *veinte* is often written as one word with the following number, thus:

veintiuno, 21; *veintidós*, 22; *veintitrés*, 23, etc.

masculine and changing the final *o* into *as* before a feminine noun, as: *Doscientos hombres*, 200 men; *doscientas mujeres*, 200 women; but *cientos de hombres*, *cientos de mujeres*, hundreds of men, hundreds of women.

5. Some before *hundred* and *thousand* is translated *unos* (-*as*), as: some hundred (thousand) dollars, *unos cien (mil) pesos*.

6. The days of the month (except "the first," *el primero*) are expressed by *cardinal* numbers, generally preceded by the article, as: the 25th, *el veinte y cinco*; the 18th of January, *el diez y ocho de enero*. The general question is: *¿Á cuántos estamos?* what is the date of to-day? — *We have the* is translated *estamos á*: we have the 18th of January, *estamos á diez y ocho de enero*. The date of a letter is either given as in English, as: Madrid, May 4th, 1889, *Madrid, 4 (cuatro) de mayo, 1889*, or: *Madrid, y mayo 4 (cuatro) de 1889* (*lit.* Madrid and May the 4th of 1889).

Note.—The Spanish language sometimes prefers *cardinal* numbers where the English makes use of *ordinals*. The following may serve as examples: In his *third* year, *á los tres años de edad*; on the *ninth* day, *á los nueve días*.

7. The *hours* of the day are expressed by the article *la*, *las*, and the *cardinal* numbers. The English *o'clock* is omitted. What is the time? or what time is it? is rendered in Spanish by *¿Qué hora es?* Thus:

One o'clock, *la* una* (*i.e.* *hora*, hour).

Two o'clock, *las dos* (*i.e.* *horas*, hours).

Three o'clock, *las tres*, etc.

At is *á*, as: at four o'clock, *á las cuatro*.

Time between two consecutive hours is expressed thus:

A quarter past one, *la una y cuarto* (= $1\frac{1}{4}$).

Half past one, *la una y media* (= $1\frac{1}{2}$).

A quarter to two, *las dos ménos cuarto* (*lit.*: 2 o'clock less a quarter).

N.B.—*It will strike directly . . .* is: *está(n) para dar la(s) . . .*, or *pronto dará(n) la(s) . . .*; *it strikes . . .*

* The article is in the *singular*, because *one* o'clock means *one* hour; with all the other hours the article should be *plural*.

is: *da(n) la(s)* and: *it has just struck* . . . is: *acaba(n) de dar la(s)* — *Precisely at 5 o'clock* is: *á las cinco en punto*. *Afternoon* is *la tarde*, *evening* and *night* *la noche*. The *early morning* (before daybreak) is *la madrugada*; the *morning* (also before midday), is *la mañana*.

8. The expressions: a quarter of a year, half a year, etc., are rendered either by *un trimestre*, *un semestre*, or by *three months*, *six months*, etc., as: *tres meses* (three months); *seis meses* (six months). *Nueve meses* (nine months), etc. *Quince días* is a fortnight; *media hora*, half an hour.

9. The *age* of a person is commonly expressed by *tener* *años*, as: He is six years old, *tiene seis años* (he has six years). The question: *How old are you?* is therefore translated: *¿Cuántos años tiene V.?* or also: *¿Qué edad tiene V.?* (what age have you?).

10. *Both* is *los dos*, *las dos*, or *ambos* (*f. ambas*); or, though less frequently, *ambos* (*-as*) *á dos*, as: *He visto á los dos* (or *ambos á dos*) *en el paseo*, I have seen them both on the promenade.

The most important *collective numerals* are:

<i>Un par</i> , a pair, a couple.	<i>medio ciento</i> , half a hundred.
<i>una decena</i> , ten.	<i>una centena</i>
<i>una docena</i> , a dozen.	(<i>un ciento</i> , <i>un</i> } a hundred,
<i>una veintena</i> , a score.	<i>centenar</i> , <i>un</i> } some hundred.
<i>una treintena</i> , <i>cuarentena</i> , etc.,	<i>centenal</i>),
thirty, forty (some thirty,	<i>un millar</i> , a thousand, some
forty, etc.).	thousand, etc.
<i>media docena</i> , half a dozen.	

The names of the *days* and *months* are:

<i>Lunes</i> , Monday.	<i>marzo</i> , March.
<i>martes</i> , Tuesday.	<i>abril</i> , April.
<i>miércoles</i> , Wednesday.	<i>mayo</i> , May.
<i>jueves</i> , Thursday.	<i>junio</i> , June.
<i>viernes</i> , Friday.	<i>julio</i> , July.
<i>sábado</i> , Saturday.	<i>agosto</i> , August.
<i>domingo</i> , Sunday.	<i>setiembre</i> , September.
	<i>octubre</i> , October.
<i>Enero</i> , January.	<i>noviembre</i> , November.
<i>febrero</i> , February.	<i>diciembre</i> , December.

Words.

El alfonso, the alphonse (a gold coin). *el duro*, the dollar (= 4 shillings).

<i>el real</i> , the real (= 2 ¹ / ₂ pence).	<i>la calle</i> , the street.
<i>la peseta</i> = 4 reals.	<i>el puente</i> , the bridge.
<i>el céntimo</i> , the centime.	<i>el farol</i> , the (street-) lamp; the lantern.
<i>el billete de banco</i> , the bank-note.	<i>la luna</i> , the moon.
<i>la caja</i> , the box.	<i>la tierra</i> , the earth.
<i>la caja de cerillas (de fósforos)</i> , the box of matches.	<i>Júpiter</i> , Jupiter.
<i>la caja de cigarros</i> , the cigar-box.	<i>Mercurio</i> , Mercury.
<i>la cajetilla de cigarrillos</i> , the packet of cigarettes.	<i>Saturno</i> , Saturn.
<i>un fósforo (una cerilla)</i> , a match.	<i>Venus</i> , Venus.
<i>un cigarro</i> , } a cigar.	<i>el carnicero</i> , the butcher.
<i>un puro</i> , }	<i>el buey</i> , the ox.
<i>un cigarrillo</i> (colloq. <i>un pitillo</i>), a cigarette.	<i>la fecha</i> , the date.
<i>el tabaco</i> , the tobacco.	<i>la capital</i> , the capital.
<i>el estanco</i> , the tobacconist-shop.	<i>el zapato</i> , the shoe.
<i>el ternero</i> , the calf.	<i>el guante</i> , the glove.
<i>el cerdo</i> , the pig.	<i>el pañuelo</i> , the handkerchief.
<i>la revolución</i> , the revolution.	<i>América</i> , America.
<i>el mes</i> , the month.	<i>varón</i> , male.
<i>la legua</i> , the league.	<i>hembra</i> , female.
<i>el contorno</i> , the outskirts; circumference.	<i>medio -a</i> , half.
<i>el arrabal</i> , the suburb.	<i>fumar</i> , to smoke.
<i>el vecino</i> , the neighbour; the inhabitant.	<i>girar</i> , to turn round.
	<i>falleció</i> , he (she) died.
	<i>hace</i> , makes, does.
	<i>descubierto</i> , -a, discovered.
	<i>alrededor</i> , round, round about.
	<i>todavía</i> , yet; no . . . <i>todavía</i> (or <i>todavía no</i>), not yet.
	<i>ahora</i> , now.

Reading Exercise. 22.

1. El alfonso tiene cinco duros; el duro tiene cinco pesetas; la peseta tiene cien céntimos. ¿Quiere V. cambiarme este billete de banco? ¿Dónde hay un estanco? Déme V. una caja de cigarros. Media docena de cigarros. ¿Cuánto es? Déme V. tres cajetillas de cigarrillos. Una caja de cerillas. ¿Cuánto? ¿Fuma V.? ¿Quiere V. un cigarro? Aquí está la caja. Tome V. un cigarrillo.

2. ¿Sabe V. qué hora es? No es todavía la una y media. Son las ocho y cuarto de la noche. Mi hermano murió á los tres años de edad. Mi padre tiene 71 años. ¿Han dado ya las once? ¿Á cuántos estamos del mes? Hoy es el día diez y siete de julio. Estamos á veinte y siete (veintisiete) de enero.

3. El carnicero ha comprado 35 bueyes, 42 vacas, 88 terneros y 76 cerdos. Saturno hace su revolución en 30 años;

Júpiter en 2 años, la Tierra en 365 días y 6 horas; Venus en 225 días y Mercurio en 3 meses. La luna gira alrededor de la Tierra en 27 días, 7 horas y 43 minutos. Esta capital tiene 9 leguas de contorno, 18 arrabales, 1,500,000 vecinos, 2006 calles, 500,000 casas, 83 plazas, 26 hospitales, 15 puentes y 80,000 faroles. Están para dar las 10. He visto cien hombres*. ¿Ha visto V. á mis primos? Les he visto ayer á ambos en la calle.

Traducción. 28.

1. My aunt had 7 children**, 6 boys and a girl. The girl is seventeen years old. How old are you? I shall be twenty in March. My sister is 21 years old. When is your birthday (*cumpleaños*)? My birthday is on the 11th (*once*) of August. To-day is Wednesday. Have we to-day the 10th or the 11th of May? The 10th. I have 10 dollars and 4 pesetas. The butcher has bought 10 oxen, 37 pigs, and 17 calves. The city of Vienna has 1,201,000 inhabitants, 38 suburbs, and (is) 4 (German) miles in circumference. Louis XVI., king of France, died in Paris on the 21st of January, 1793. It has struck 9 o'clock. We have bought 16 pairs of gloves and two dozen handkerchiefs (*de —*). My brother was three months in Paris and half a year in Madrid. He came at 1 o'clock to-day. It is now 8 o'clock in the evening. He came (*has come*) at noon yesterday.

2. The Archduchess (*archiduquesa*) Sophia of Austria died in the third year of her age. The letter (bears) has the date: Vienna, the 8th of May, 1889. To-day we have the 23rd of April. Spain (*España*) has 17,500,000 inhabitants (*de —*). This town had 301,000 inhabitants. Three hundred and eighty seven pesetas and 12 centimes. I have given to the lawyer (*abogado*) some hundred dollars. America was discovered in the year 1492. The day has 24 hours, the hour has 60 minutes. June has 30 days, October has 31 and February has 28 or 29 days.

Conversación.

¿Qué edad es la de V.?	Tengo 41 años.
¿Y su padre de V.?	Tiene ahora 76.
¿Cuándo falleció el rey Luis XVI de Francia?	Murió (<i>he died</i>) el (á) 21 de enero de 1793.
¿Cuántos hijos tiene V.?	Tengo 4 hijos; 3 niños y una niña.

* The personal object in the Accusative, when preceded by a numeral, does not take *á*.

** As *hijos* means both *sons* and *children*, the sex must be expressed by the addition of the words *varón* (male) and *hembra* (female), as in the above sentence.

¿Qué ha comprado V.?	He comprado una docena de guantes y un par de zapatos.
¿Á cuántos estamos hoy?	Estamos á 18 de enero.
¿Ha recibido V. una carta?	Sí, he recibido una carta de Cádiz, con fecha 9 de octubre de 1903.
¿Han dado ya las doce?	No, señor; pero pronto darán.
¿Qué hora es?	Acaban de dar las 9.
¿Cuántos días tiene el año?	Un año tiene 365 días 6 horas.
¿Cuántos días tiene un mes?	Un mes tiene 30 ó 31 días.
¿Qué ha dado V. al abogado?	He dado al abogado cien pesos.
¿En cuánto tiempo hace Saturno su revolución alrededor del sol (<i>the sun</i>)?	En treinta años.
¿Ha perdido V. algo?	He perdido 4 duros.

Seventeenth Lesson. — Lección diecisiete.

Numerals. — Numerales.

2. Ordinal Numbers. — Fractionals. — Multiplicatives.

Ordinales. — Fraccionales. — Multiplicativos.

<i>El primero,</i> }	the first.	<i>el décimo cuarto,</i>	the 14th.
<i>la primera,</i> }		<i>el décimo quinto,</i>	the 15th.
<i>el segundo,</i> }	the second.	<i>el décimo sexto,</i>	the 16th.
<i>la segunda,</i> }		<i>el décimo séptimo,</i>	the 17th.
<i>el tercero,</i>	the third.	<i>el décimo octavo,</i>	the 18th.
<i>el cuarto,</i>	the 4th.	<i>el décimo nono,</i>	the 19th.
<i>el quinto,</i>	the 5th.	<i>el vigésimo,</i>	the 20th.
<i>el sexto (sesto),</i>	the 6th.	<i>el vigésimo primo (primero),</i>	the 21st.
<i>el séptimo</i> }	the 7th.	<i>el vigésimo segundo,</i>	the 22nd.
<i>(el sétimo),</i> }		<i>el vigésimo tercio,</i>	the 23rd.
<i>el octavo,</i>	the 8th.	<i>el vigésimo cuarto,</i>	the 24th.
<i>el nono</i> }	the 9th.	<i>el trigésimo</i> }	the 30th.
<i>(el noveno),</i> }		<i>(el tricésimo),</i> }	
<i>el décimo,</i>	the 10th.	<i>el cuadragésimo,</i>	the 40th.
<i>el undécimo</i> }	the 11th.	<i>el quincuagésimo</i> }	the 50th.
<i>(el oncenno),</i> }		<i>(el cincuenteno),</i> }	
<i>el duodécimo,</i>	the 12th.	<i>el sexagésimo,</i>	the 60th.
<i>el décimo tercio*,</i>	the 13th.		

* The forms *décimotercio*, *décimocuarto*, etc., are becoming more generally used.

<i>el septuagésimo</i> , the 70th.	<i>el quingentésimo</i> , the 500th.
<i>el octogésimo</i>	<i>el sexcentésimo</i> , the 600th.
(<i>el octuagésimo</i>), } the 80th.	<i>el septingentésimo</i> , the 700th.
(<i>el ochentésimo</i>), }	<i>el octogentésimo</i>
<i>el nonagésimo</i> , the 90th.	(<i>el octingentésimo</i>), } the 800th.
<i>el centésimo</i> , the 100th.	<i>el nonagentésimo</i> } the 900th.
<i>el centésimo primo (primero)</i> ,	(<i>el nongentésimo</i>), }
the 101st.	<i>el milésimo</i> , the 1000th.
<i>el centésimo segundo</i> , the 102nd.	<i>el dosmilésimo</i> , the 2000th.
<i>el ducentésimo</i>	<i>el penúltimo</i> , the last but one.
(<i>el doscentésimo</i>), } the 200th.	<i>el último</i> , }
<i>el trecentésimo</i> , the 300th.	<i>el postrero</i> , } the last.
<i>el cuadringentésimo</i> , the 400th.	

Note.—The numbers in brackets are less frequent. — Besides, there are a few archaic forms, as:

<i>el cuarenteno</i> , the 40th.	<i>el setentésimo</i> , } the 70th.
<i>el cincuentésimo</i> , the 50th.	<i>el setenteno</i> , }
<i>el sesentésimo</i> , } the 60th.	<i>el ochentésimo</i> , } the 80th.
<i>el sesenteno</i> , }	<i>el ochenteno</i> , }
<i>el noventésimo</i> , }	
<i>el noventeno</i> , }	the 90th.

The forms *setuagésimo* for *septuagésimo*, and *octuagésimo* for *octogésimo* are now obsolete.

Observations.

1. The numerals *primero*, *tercero*, and *postrero* drop the final *o* before a substantive, with the exception of *tercero* in the legal phrase *dentro de tercero día*, within three days. Ex.:

El primer día, the first day.

El tercer día, the third day.

Sometimes the feminine *primera* drops the final *a*, as: *la primer alma*, the first soul. If, however, *primero* is coupled by *y* or *ó* with another ordinal number, except *tercero* and *postrero* (last), the complete form should be used, as:

El primero y el octavo libro, the first and the eighth book.

But: *El primer y el tercer libro*, the first and the third book.

2. The forms *deceno*, *onceno* are becoming obsolete.

3. Proper names of *princes* take the ordinal numbers *without* an article, as:

Philip II., *Felipe segundo*.

Ferdinand IV., *Fernando cuarto*.

N.B.—With the names of the kings of *Spain* and of the *popes*, cardinal numbers are used up to the *tenth*, thus *Isabel segunda*, *Carlos III (tercero)*, Charles III., but *Alfonso X. (diez)*, *Alfonso doce*. From the *tenth* upwards, both cardinal and ordinal numbers may be used. Thus we may say indifferently: *Benedicto décimo cuarto*, Pope Benedict XIV., and *Benedicto catorce*. With the names of other foreign sovereigns, ordinal numbers are used up to the *tenth* or *eleventh*, and then follow *cardinal* numbers. Thus *Enrique cuarto*, Henry IV. (of France); *Luis once* or *undécimo*, Louis XI.; *Carlos doce*, Charles XII. (of Sweden). But: *Luis XIV (catorce)*, Louis XIV.

4. With some substantives, cardinal as well as ordinal numbers may be employed, but only beyond *undécimo*, the eleventh. In this case they should follow the substantive; thus:

Chapter 15th, *Capítulo décimo quinto* or *Capítulo quince*.
Page 20, *Página veinte* or *vigésima*.

Fractionals are expressed by ordinal numbers, as in English:

<i>medio</i> , -a, half* (la mitad, the half).	<i>un séptimo</i> (una séptima parte),	} a seventh.
<i>un tercio</i> (una tercera parte i.e., part),	<i>un octavo</i> (una octava parte),	} an eighth.
<i>un cuarto</i> (una cuarta parte),	<i>un noveno</i> (una novena parte),	} a ninth.
<i>un quinto</i> , a fifth (part).	<i>un décimo</i> (una décima parte),	} a tenth.
<i>un sexto</i> (una sexta parte),	<i>un centésimo</i> , $\frac{1}{100}$. <i>un milésimo</i> , $\frac{1}{1000}$.	} a sixth.

Note. Some feminine forms of fractional numbers are used in certain expressions only, as: *una cuarta*, i.e., *vara*, a quarter of an ell; *una tercia de carne*, a pound of meat. From *ten* upwards the fractional numbers are formed by adding the word *avo* (*liter.* fractional part) to the cardinal numbers, which thereby undergo some orthographical alteration. The numbers ending in *-ce* change this syllable into *x*, as: *tres onzavos*, $\frac{3}{11}$; *ocho quinzavos*, $\frac{8}{15}$. *Uno* is changed into *unavo(s)*. Beyond $\frac{1}{20}$, the termination *avo* is added to the last consonant, the word *y* (and) being written *i*, and the whole number contracted into *one* word.

For the sake of greater clearness, all these forms are given below in their arithmetical order:

* Without article. With the article, *un medio*, a half (subst.).

$\frac{1}{11}$ un onzavo.	$\frac{2}{11}$ dos onzavos.
$\frac{1}{12}$ un dozavo.	$\frac{2}{12}$ dos dozavos.
$\frac{1}{13}$ un trezavo.	$\frac{2}{13}$ dos trezavos.
$\frac{1}{14}$ un catorzavo.	$\frac{2}{14}$ dos catorzavos.
$\frac{1}{15}$ un quinzavo.	$\frac{2}{15}$ dos quinzavos.
$\frac{1}{16}$ un dieciseisavo.	$\frac{2}{16}$ dos dieciseisavos.
$\frac{1}{17}$ un diecisieteavo.	$\frac{2}{17}$ dos diecisieteavos.
$\frac{1}{18}$ un dieciochoavo.	$\frac{2}{18}$ dos dieciochoavos.
$\frac{1}{19}$ un diecinueveavo.	$\frac{2}{19}$ dos diecinueveavos.
$\frac{1}{20}$ un veintavo.	$\frac{2}{20}$ dos veintavos.
$\frac{1}{21}$ un veintiunavo.	$\frac{1}{30}$ un treintavo.
$\frac{1}{22}$ un veintidosavo.	$\frac{1}{40}$ un cuarentavo, etc.
$\frac{1}{23}$ un veintitresavo.	} un cienavo, } un centavo, } un centésimo.
$\frac{1}{24}$ un veinticuatroavo.	
$\frac{1}{25}$ un veinticincoavo, etc.	

un *céntimo* (in South America; *un centavo*) is $\frac{1}{100}$ of a peseta, franc, etc.

The *Multiplicatives* are:

Simple, simple.

duplo, -a, } double, twofold. *el doble*, } double the . . .
doble, }

triple, } threefold. *el triple*, the triple, etc.
triplo, -a, }
triplice, }

cuádruplo, -a, fourfold.

quintuplo, -a, fivefold.

séxtuplo, *séptuplo*, *óctuplo*, *nóncuplo*, *décuplo*, *céntuplo*, 6-, 7-, 8-, 9-, 10-, 100fold, etc.

The other multiplicatives are phrased with *veces* (times) and a *comparative* or *tanto* following, as: *Su pena es nueve veces mayor*, his punishment is ninefold (nine times greater). *Catorce veces tanto*, fourteenfold.

Words.

El diente, the tooth.

el café, the coffee.

la edad, the age.

el té, the tea.

la elección, the choice, election.

la semana, the week.

el maestro, the master.

la vara, the (Spanish) yard.

el mes, the month.

el paño, the cloth.

la libra, the pound.

el tomo, the volume.

la onza, the ounce.

mudar, to change.

el kilógramo, the kilogramme.

llamado, called.

el azúcar, the sugar.

sucedió, succeeded, followed.

viene, comes.

Reading Exercise. 24.

El caballo (*horse*) muda los dientes á los dos años y medio. Felipe Augusto fué el 42º, Franciso I el 58º, Enrique IV, llamado el Grande, el 70º rey de Francia. Carlos IV sucedió á Carlos III el 12 de agosto de 1788. ¿Sabe V. qué hora es? Todavía no es la una y media. Á los nueve días de su elección le sobrevino (*surprised him*) la muerte, que fué (*which happened*) el 23 de agosto, á los sesenta y cuatro años de edad. Mi maestro de música viene cada (*every*) tres días. He comprado una docena de guantes. Déme V. (*give me*) la vigésima parte (la quincuagésima, la sexagésima y la centésima parte). Un mes es la duodécima parte del año. Tome V. (*take*) siete veintavos y cuatro diecinueveavos. Enero es el primero, marzo el tercero, junio el sexto y diciembre el último mes del año. Compre V. (*buy*) dos libras y media de café, una libra de té y dos libras y tres onzas de azúcar. Cincuenta es la mitad de ciento. Quince es el quintuplo de tres, y la décima parte de ciento cincuenta.

Traducción. 25.

A week is the 52nd part of a year. I was one year and a half at Paris, and two years and one month in Italy. Louis XVI. of France died (*falleció*) in Paris the 21st of January, 1793. My brother is the fourteenth and my sister the eleventh of the class. Does your music-master come every fourth day? No, he comes every other day (*un día sí y otro no, lit. one day Yes and the other No*). Take the 10th, the 30th, the 70th, and the 90th parts. I have bought $8\frac{1}{2}$ pounds of sugar and $2\frac{2}{3}$ pounds of coffee. Give me $\frac{5}{6}$ and $\frac{4}{9}$. The first king of France, Pharamond (*Faramundo*), reigned (*reinó*) eight years. Louis XIV. of France died the 1st of September, 1715, at the age of 77 years. I have bought $6\frac{3}{4}$ yards of this cloth. The Emperor Francis Joseph (*José*) of Austria was born (*nació*) at Vienna the 18th of August, 1830. When were you born? (*¿nació V?*) I was born on the 6th of July, 1878. February is the second, April the fourth, May the fifth, July the seventh, August the eighth, September the ninth, October the tenth, and November the eleventh month of the year. I have read the 13th and the 14th chapter of the 2nd volume. A day is the seventh part of a week.

Conversación.

¿Cuándo muda el caballo los dientes? Á los dos años y medio de edad.
 ¿Cuándo murió el rey Luis XVI de Francia? Murió el 21 de enero de 1793.

¿Qué lugar (<i>place</i>) tiene su hermano de V. en el colegio?	Es el octavo ó el noveno de su clase.
¿Y su hermana de V.?	Creo (<i>I believe, I think</i>) que es la sexta.
¿En qué año nació V.?	Nací (<i>I was born</i>) en el año 1878.
¿En qué mes?	En enero.
¿Qué día?	El 18.
¿De qué emperador habla V.?	Hablo del emperador Francisco José de Austria.
¿Cuándo nació?	Nació en Viena el 18 de agosto de 1830.
¿Qué ha comprado V.?	He comprado ocho libras y media de azúcar y doce varas de tela (<i>cloth</i>).
¿Cuánto tiempo (<i>how long</i>) estuvo V. en París?	Año y medio*.
¿No viene su maestro de V. un día sí y otro no?	No, señor, viene cada tres días.

Eighteenth Lesson. — Lección dieciocho.

Numerals. — Numerales.

3. Indefinite Numerals. — Numerales indefinidos.

These words are *pronouns* when used without a substantive. With a substantive, however, they are *adjectives*. They are:

Alguno, -a, plur. *algunos*, -as, any, anybody, somebody; pl. any, some.

Alguien, any, anyone, anybody.

Ninguno, -a; no, nobody, no one; none.

Nadie, nobody.

Cualquiera, pl. *cualesquiera*, whoever, whatever.

Quiquiera, whoever.

Unos, *unas*, some, any, a few.

Uno (-a) *y otro* (-a),
plur. *unos* (-as) *y otros* (-as), } both, all.

Ni uno, not a single one.

Ni el uno ni el otro, neither the one nor the other.

Unos cuantos, *unas cuantas*, some, a few.

* In the expressions *one year* (hour etc.), *and a half*, the indefinite article is usually omitted. Ex.: *Hora y media*, an hour and a half. *Año y medio*, a year and a half.

Otro, -a (plur. *otros, -as*), other, another, someone else;
 plur. *los otros (las otras)*, the others.

Mismo, -a, plur. *mismos, -as*, same.

El mismo, la misma, the same.

Cada (in combination), every.

Cada uno (when alone), each.

Todo, -a, all; plur. *todos, -as*, all.

todos los (todas las), all who . . . ; every.

Tal, such; plur. *tales*, such.

Fulano, -a, } a certain; so and so.
Zutano, -a, }

Observations.

1. *Cada*, every, each, is used for both genders and numbers, and may be applied either to persons or things; as: *Cada hombre*, every man; *cada semana*, every week. With numerals in the plural, it corresponds to the English *every* followed by an *ordinal* number, as: *Cada cinco días*, every *fifth* day; *cada dos pasos*, every two steps. With *uno* it means *everyone*, as: *Cada uno de por sí*, everyone for himself.

2. *Alguien*, any, anybody, anyone, is likewise used for both genders and numbers, but only of *persons* and *affirmatively* or *interrogatively*, as: *¿Entra alguien?* does anybody enter? *Nobody* is *ninguno, -a* (referring either to persons or things), or *nadie* (only of persons), as: *Ninguno debe hablar*, nobody shall speak. If *ninguno* or *nadie* follow the verb, the negation *no* should precede it, as: *Eso no es de ninguna importancia*, that is of no importance.

3. *Cualquiera*, whoever, whatever, stands for both genders (in reference either to persons or things); plur. *cualesquiera*. The final *a* is sometimes dropped, but the complete form is preferable. Thus *any thing* means *cualquiera cosa* or *cualquier cosa*; pl. *cualesquiera libros* or *cualesquier libros*. A similar form is *quienquiera*, whoever; this pronoun being only used for *persons* and commonly followed by *que*, as: *Quienquiera que lo diga*, whoever says so (it).

4. *Nadie* is the English *nobody*, and *nada* is *nothing*. Like *ninguno*, *alguno*, and *ni uno ni otro* (neither one nor the other), these pronouns admit of *no negation* be-

fore the verb when *preceding* it, whereas the verb should be preceded by *no*, if *nadie* and *nada* follow. Ex.:

Nadie lo ha visto, nobody has seen it.

But: *No lo ha visto nadie*, > > > >.

Nada he dicho, I have said nothing.

But: *No he dicho nada*, > > > >.

5. *Alguno, -a*, any, anybody, anyone, is used in both genders and numbers, and referring either to persons or things. In the plural it means *several, a few, some*, etc. Like *uno*, it drops the final *o* before masculine nouns, as: *Algún hombre*, any man. Examples: *alguna mujer*, any woman; *algunos hombres*, several men; *algunas mujeres*, several women. With *no* and the verb *preceding*, it means *nobody, not anybody, not anyone*, etc., as: *No he visto (á) alguno**, I have seen nobody, I have not seen anyone. In this case it has the same signification as *nadie*, which may be used in its stead, provided it does not precede the verb. Thus:

Á nadie he visto, means: I have seen nobody;

whereas:

(Á) alguno he visto, means: I have seen somebody.

Note.—On *nadie* with the signification *anybody, somebody*, etc., see second Part.

6. *Fulano* and *zutano* mean *a certain, so and so*, etc. in quite a vague sense; *Fulano* is sometimes joined by *de tal* (lit. *of such*), as: *Fulano lo sabe*, so and so knows it; *el Señor don fulano de tal*, Mr. So and So. Commonly they are used together, as: *Fulano quiere á zutana*, a certain gentleman (Mr. So and So) loves a certain lady (Miss So and So).

7. *Otro, -a*, *other*, is never used with the indefinite article *un*; thus: Another has said so, *Otro* (not *un otro*) *lo ha dicho*. I have another pen, *tengo otra pluma*.

Words.

El orgullo, the pride.

la hora, the hour.

la fuerza, the strength.

el motivo, the reason.

la comida, the dinner, food.

la estampa, the engraving.

el paseo, the public walk,

promenade.

propio, -a, proper.

cierto, certain.

* The preposition *á* is there frequently omitted for the sake of euphony, or when not emphatic.

<i>ir</i>	} <i>á ver</i> , {	to call on, to	<i>trabajar</i> , to work.
<i>venir</i>		pay a visit.	<i>presumir de . . .</i> , to overrate.
<i>quejarse</i> , to complain.			<i>tener hambre</i> , to be hungry.
<i>tratar con</i> , to deal with, to treat.			<i>tener sed</i> , to be thirsty.
<i>acertar</i> , to succeed in.			<i>hecho</i> , done, made.
<i>preguntar por</i> , to ask for.			<i>ahora</i> , now.
<i>lisonjear</i> , to flatter.			<i>junto</i> , -a, together.
			<i>acaso</i> , perhaps.

Reading Exercise. 26.

Nada lisonjea más el orgullo de los hombres que la confianza de los grandes. V. tiene algunos libros. No he visto á nadie en casa de mi amigo. ¿Ha venido alguno? Nadie ha venido. He visto á su hermano cada día. Trabajamos todos juntos y cada uno *de por sí* (*by himself*). El mismo hombre me ha dado el dinero. Yo mismo lo he hecho. Hasta ahora nadie ha venido. Nadie en esta ciudad conoce á mi hermano. Ninguno está cierto de la hora de su muerte. Ninguno debe (*shall*) presumir de sus propias fuerzas. Quienquiera que lo diga, se equivoca (*is mistaken*). El uno decía (*said*) que sí (*yes*), el otro que no*. Cada seis meses tendré (*I shall come*) á verle á V. De todos los (*those*) que vran conmigo (*with me*), ¿hay acaso uno (alguno) que tenga motivo de quejarse? Cualquiera cosa que él haga (*may do*), la hará mal (*he will do it wrong*); no puede (*can*) acertar en nada. Fulano y zutano han preguntado por V. Todos hablan de ello (*it*), como si fuera cierto. Cualquiera comida es buena para quien (*him who*) tiene hambre. Quienquiera que sea, ha hecho mal en decirlo (*to say so*). ¿Tiene V. otro caballo?

Traducción. 27.

I have no other book. He has given me nothing. We have some good books and some fine engravings. Nobody has done it (*eso*). I have not seen anything. Whoever says so (*que — lo diga*), is mistaken. I do not believe (*creo*) it. Charles has not done it, someone else (*otro*) has done it. Has anybody asked for (*por*) me? No, sir, nobody has asked for you. I have seen the same lady. Everyone speaks (*habla*) for himself (*si mismo*). You (*tú*) have done it yourself. I do not know (*conozco*) anybody in this town. The one is hungry, the other is thirsty, but neither (of them) has money. I shall come every third day to call on you. *Does Mr. So and So live here?* (*¿Vive aquí . . .?*) He who is hungry says that all food is good. Both have done it. I think that someone else has

* After *decir*, "to say," the affirmative and negative particles *sí* and *no* are pleonastically preceded by *que*. [As in French.]

done it. Give me (*Déme V.*) some books. Nobody knows (*sabe*) it, because (*porque*) I (did not tell anyone) have not told it to anybody.

Conversación.

¿Quién (<i>who</i>) lo sabe?	Nadie lo sabe.
¿Quién lo ha hecho?	Ninguno lo ha hecho, <i>or</i> No lo ha hecho ninguno.
¿Qué han dicho?	El uno dijo <i>que</i> sí, el otro <i>que</i> no.
¿Cuándo vendrá V. á ver á mi padre?	Vendré cada cinco días.
¿Ha venido alguien?	Sí, señor; fulano y zutano han preguntado por V.
¿Á quién lo ha dicho V.?	Á nadie lo he dicho.
¿Quién lo ha creído (<i>believed</i>)?	Usted mismo lo ha creído.
¿No es verdad?	No, señor; quienquiera que lo diga, falta á la verdad (<i>tells a lie</i>).
¿Tiene V. otro sombrero?	No, señora, no tengo otro.
¿Ha visto V. á alguno en el paseo?	No he visto á nadie.
¿Quién ha visto á mi amo (<i>master</i>)?	Nadie le ha visto.
¿Ha visto V. á alguna de aquellas señoras?	Á decir verdad (<i>To speak the truth</i>), no he visto á ninguna.

Nineteenth Lesson. — Lección diecinueve.

The Adjective. — Del adjetivo.

Rule. — The Spanish Adjective *agrees* in *gender* and *number* with the word it qualifies.

§ 1. Adjectives ending in *o* change this vowel into *a* for the feminine, as:

hermoso, beautiful, fem. *hermosa*.

bueno, good, > *buena*.

Note.—The very limited number of adjectives ending in *-ete* and *-ote* follow the same rule: as:

regordete, short stout (man) — *regordeta*.

altote, very high — *altota*.

§ 2. Adjectives *not* ending in *o*, hence those ending in a consonant (*l, n, r, s, z*), or in one of the vowels *a, e, i*, have only *one* termination for *both* genders. Ex.:

un hombre cortés, a polite man.
una mujer cortés, a polite woman.
un hombre grave, a serious man.
una materia grave, a serious matter.
un objeto baladí, a trivial object.
una cosa baladí, a trivial thing.

Exceptions.

Some words, being used both as substantives and adjectives, take *a* in the feminine in either capacity, as:

holgazán, holgasana, idle and idler; *mamantón, mamantona*, suckling or nursling.

Also adjectives denoting *nationality*, as:

<i>francés</i> , French,	fem. <i>francesa</i> .
<i>andaluz</i> , Andalusian,	> <i>andaluza</i> .
<i>alemán</i> , German,	> <i>alemana</i> .
<i>inglés</i> , English,	> <i>inglesa</i> , etc.

Those terminating in *a*, like *persa*, Persian, are alike in *both* genders.

§ 3. Formation of the plural of the adjectives.

All adjectives ending in an *unaccented* vowel form their plural by adding *s*, as:

<i>bueno</i> ,	Plur. <i>buenos</i> .
<i>buená</i> ,	> <i>buenas</i> .
<i>francesa</i> ,	> <i>francesas</i> .

Adjectives terminating in an *accented* vowel or in a *consonant* add *es*, as:

<i>ruín</i> , bad, wicked,	plur. <i>ruínes</i> .
<i>baladí</i> , trifling,	> <i>baladíes</i> .
<i>español</i> , Spanish,	> <i>españoles</i> .

Note.—The orthographical rule given in § 1, Less. 2, is also applied to adjectives, as: *feliz*, happy; plur. *felices*, etc.

§ 4. The adjectives *alguno*, *ninguno*, *bueno*, *malo*, as well as the numerals *uno*, *primero*, *tercero*, *postrero*, lose the *o* before a *masculine* substantive in the singular; whilst *grande* drops its last syllable before any substantive in the singular either *masculine* or *feminine*. — *Ciento*, also, loses its last syllable before any plural (see Less. 16, Cardinal Numbers). Thus:

<i>buen hombre</i> for <i>bueno hombre</i> ,
<i>mal caballero</i> , > <i>malo caballero</i> ,
<i>algún libro</i> ,

gran caballo,
ningún amigo,
una gran casa,
un gran caballo.

Santo drops its last syllable before names of saints, and its abbreviation is *S.*

S. Juan (*San —*), St. John.

S. Pedro (*San —*), St. Peter.

N.B.—Before *feminine* nouns, the omission of the last syllable is very rare, except with *grande*. Thus one had better say: *la primera cosa*, the first thing, than *la primer cosa*. With *grande* the apocopation* is rather arbitrary, and before substantives beginning with vowels the full form is preferable, as: *grande alma* (soul); *grande hombre*, great man; *grande amigo*. It may be observed that before the names *Domingo*, *Tomás*, *Tomé*, and *Toribio* the adj. *santo* does not drop the last syllable; thus: *Santo Domingo*, St. Dominicus**.

§ 5. In reference to the *position* of the adjective, the following are the principal rules:

1. Adjectives as well as participles denoting a *general quality*, as attributed to all objects of the same kind, *precede*; whilst those denoting a *special quality* attributed to a certain object, *follow*:

La dulce miel, sweet honey.

La blanca nieve, the white snow.

Un pié pequeño, a small foot.

Una mano blanca, a white hand.

Note.—However, whenever it is desirable to emphasize the quality of a certain understood object, the adjective *precedes*:

Movió el pequeño pié, she moved her small foot.

Le alargó su blanca mano, she tended him her white hand.

2. Adjectives and participles used in a metaphorical meaning, as distinguished from their primary one, *precede*, while the latter *follow*:

hombre bueno, good man.

buen hombre, good fellow.

caballo grande, big horse.

gran caballo, fine horse.

niño pobre, a poor child.

¡pobre niño! poor child!

* *i.e.*, the omission of the final *de*.

** However: *la isla de San-Tomas*, the island of St. Thomas. The pupil is requested to remember the following "locus memorialis": *Santo Tomás nunca estuvo en San-Tomas*, St. Thomas was never in St. Thomas.

NB.—Consequently adjectives not susceptible of a metaphorical meaning, such as those expressing *nationality*, or *origin*, *scientific ideas* or *theories of any kind*, *quantity*, *number* or *division*, follow :

La nación española, the Spanish nation.

La bandera inglesa, the British flag.

Las fuerzas físicas, physical forces.

Una línea recta, a straight line.

La religión protestante, the Protestant religion.

Muchos libros, many books.

Dos billetes, two tickets.

Media peseta, half a peseta.

Note.—Adjectives denoting order may precede or follow :

Vivo en el piso segundo (or *en el segundo piso*).

I live on the second floor.

Lea V. el primer capítulo (or *el capítulo primero*).

Read the first chapter.

§ 6. An adjective qualifying *two* substantives must be in the plural; thus:

El amo y el criado están contentos.

The master and the servant are contented.

El ama y la criada están contentas.

The mistress and the servant-maid are contented.

If the substantives are of *different* genders, the adjective is put in the plural *masculine*, provided the nouns denote *persons* or *living beings*. Thus:

Los hombres y las mujeres fueron salvados.

The men and women were saved.

If, on the contrary, *things* are spoken of, the gender of the *last* substantive prevails, thus :

Ojos y orejas abiertas, eyes and ears open;

but: *Orejas y ojos abiertos*, ears and eyes open.

§ 7. A noun in the *plural* is followed by several adjectives in the *singular*, when each adjective would have, if alone, the noun in the singular:

Las lenguas latina y griega.

The Latin and the Greek languages.

Los cantos tercero y cuarto.

The third and fourth hymn.

Words.

La costumbre, the custom, *el temor*, the fear.
manner. *el vasallo*, the vassal.

<i>el orden</i> , the order.	<i>casado</i> , -a, married.
<i>la orden</i> , the command.	<i>feo</i> , -a, ugly.
<i>el discípulo</i> , the pupil, scholar.	<i>cuantioso</i> , -a, considerable.
<i>el autor</i> , the author.	<i>vano</i> , -a, vain.
<i>la suerte</i> , the fate.	<i>serio</i> , -a, serious.
<i>la materia</i> , the matter.	<i>alegre</i> , merry. [gent.
<i>la canción</i> , the song.	<i>trabajador</i> , -a, laborious, dili-
<i>el alma</i> (f.), the soul.	<i>desordenado</i> , -a, disorderly.
<i>la injuria</i> , the offence.	<i>hábil</i> , able, clever.
<i>la hacienda</i> , the estate, the fortune.	<i>célebre</i> , famous, renowned.
<i>el caudal</i> , the capital, fund.	<i>honrado</i> , -a, honoured.
<i>el difunto</i> , the dead (man), the late	<i>sonoro</i> , -a, sonorous.
<i>el pintor</i> , the painter.	<i>corrompen</i> , they corrupt, they taint.
<i>el perro</i> , the dog.	<i>fluctúan</i> , they fluctuate.
<i>la hazaña</i> , the heroic deed.	<i>crió</i> (3rd s. def.), (he) created.
<i>Burdeos</i> , Bordeaux.	<i>mantiene</i> , maintains.
<i>glorioso</i> , illustrious.	<i>perdona</i> , pardons.
<i>amable</i> , amiable.	<i>estudia</i> , studies.
	<i>aborrecido</i> , detested, abhorred.

Reading Exercise. 28.

Una mujer hermosa, virtuosa y rica se ha casado con un hombre feo, malo y pobre. Las malas compañías corrompen las buenas costumbres. Los hombres fluctúan siempre entre falsas esperanzas y vanos temores. Un hombre malo es siempre aborrecido. Un buen rey hace felices á sus vasallos. El primer hombre que Dios crió fué Adán, y la primera mujer fué Eva. Las españolas son serias y las francesas alegres y amables. Una mujer holgazana es siempre desordenada, pero una mujer trabajadora mantiene en orden su casa. El hábil maestro tiene discípulos aplicados. Miguel de Cervantes fué el célebre autor del D. Quijote de la Mancha. ¿Qué quiere V. hacer con esos objetos baladíes? La suerte de un hombre es una materia muy grave. Las canciones andaluzas son muy bonitas. Una grande alma perdona fácilmente (*easily*) una injuria. El «Teatro Grande» de Burdeos es un gran teatro. Mi hermano estudia las lenguas francesa y alemana. Lope de Vega fué un gran poeta. San Pablo (*Paul*) y Santo Tomás han honrado la iglesia católica. Una mujer regordeta no es hermosa. ¡Tenga V. las orejas y los ojos abiertos! La hacienda y los caudales del difunto eran considerables.

Traducción. 29.

This man was poor, but virtuous. (A) bad company is a great evil (*mal*). False fears and vain hopes are the lot (*el lote*) of (the) man. Happy subjects love their king. Cervan-

tes was a great writer (*escritor*) and Murillo a celebrated painter. The Germans are serious, and the French are merry. This idle girl has no (*no* —) order in her things. Polite people (tr. *men*) are very agreeable. A bad king is a misfortune for his subjects. Cæsar (*César*) was a great man. You live (*vive*) in a large house. One must (*Se debe*) admire (*admirar*) the good manners of these people. This gentleman has very amiable children (*hijos*). He studies (*estudia*) the history of the second civil (*civil*) war. The first, second, and third chapters (*capítulo*) are good. Our house is large, but our garden is small. A serious man does not speak of such (*tan*) trifling things. One must (*Se deben*) admire the glorious deeds of this prince. Men and women are small in that country. The books and letters on the table (*mesa*) were open. I have at home (*en casa*) a big dog and a little cat (*gato*). The first man was a sinner (*pecador*). The Spanish and Italian languages are very melodious (*transl.* the languages *Spanish* [fem. *sing.*] and *Italian* [fem. *sing.*] are . . .).

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Cómo es la casa? | La casa es muy grande. |
| ¿Quién perdona fácilmente una injuria? | Una grande alma. |
| ¿Qué lenguas estudia su hermano de V.? | Estudia las lenguas francesa y alemana. |
| ¿Qué canciones son muy agradables? | Las canciones andaluzas. |
| ¿Qué Santos han honrado la iglesia católica? | San Pablo y Santo Tomás. |
| ¿Qué sabe V. (<i>do you know, can you</i>) decirme (<i>tell me</i>) de Cervantes y Murillo? | Cervantes fué el célebre autor del D. Quijote, y Murillo fué un gran pintor. |
| ¿Cómo se deben tratar (<i>must be treated</i>) los asuntos (<i>matters</i>) graves? | Con ánimo (<i>mind</i>) sosegado (<i>quiet, calm</i>). |
| ¿Cuál es la situación de ese hombre? | Su situación es muy lastimosa. |
| ¿Qué traje (<i>suit</i>) llevaba (<i>wore</i>) el jóven (<i>young man, youth</i>)? | Llevaba traje azul (<i>blue</i>) y sombrero negro (<i>black</i>). |
| ¿Qué sombrero tiene V.? | Tengo un sombrero inglés. |
| ¿Qué causas (<i>law-suits</i>) defiende (<i>defends</i>) un abogado recto (<i>honest</i>)? | Un abogado recto defiende siempre las causas justas. |

Twentieth Lesson. — Lección veinte.

Degrees of Comparison. — Grados de comparación.

§ 1. The comparison of Spanish adjectives is somewhat analogous to the English. The *comparative* degree of superiority is formed by the word *más* (more), and its *superlative* by *el más*, fem. *la más*, neut. *lo más* (the most). Examples:

	Compar.	Superl.	
<i>hermoso, -a,</i>	<i>más hermoso, -a,</i>	<i>el más hermoso,</i>	} the most beautiful.
beautiful;	more beautiful;	f. <i>la más hermosa,</i>	

The comparison of inferiority is effected in a similar way by the adverb *ménos* (less), as:

	Compar.	Superl.	
<i>poblado, -a,</i>	<i>ménos poblado, -a,</i>	<i>el ménos poblado,</i>	} the least populous;
less populous;	so populous;	not f. <i>la ménos poblada,</i>	

§ 2. Again, there is an *absolute superlative*, by which a *high degree* is expressed. It is formed by the addition of the ending *ísimo* for the masculine and *ísima* for the feminine to the positive degree of the adjective, which then drops its final vowel, as:

docto, learned; abs. superl. *doctísimo*, very learned.
santo, holy; » » *santísimo*, very holy.

Note.—Some adjectives undergo a slight alteration in the formation of the *absolute superlative*. These are:

(a) Adjectives ending in *-io*, which drop the *i* when adding the ending *-ísimo*; thus: *amplio*, wide, abs. superl. *amplísimo*.

Except: *agrio*, sour; *frio*, cold; and *pío*, pious, which form *agruísimo*, *friusísimo*, *piusísimo*.

(b) Adjectives in *-ble*, which adopt their Latin stem, as: *amable* (Lat. *amabilis*), amiable, abs. superl. *amabilísimo*.

(c) Those in *-iente* and *-ierto*, which drop the *i* before *e*, as: *ardiente*, glowing — *ardentísimo*; *cierto*, certain — *certísimo*.

(d) And the following, which are directly derived from their corresponding Latin forms:

acre, sharp — *acérrimo*.

amigo, friendly — *amicísimo* (also *amiguísimo*).

antiguo, old — *antiguísimo*.

áspero, rough — *aspérrimo*, also *asperísimo*.

benéfico, beneficent — *beneficentísimo*.
benévolo, benevolent — *benevolentísimo*.
bueno, good — *bonísimo*.
célebre, famous — *celebérrimo*.
fiel, faithful — *fidelísimo*.
fuerte, strong — *fortísimo*.
íntegro, upright — *integérrimo*.
libre, free — *libérrimo*.
magnífico, magnificent — *magnificentísimo*.
miseró, miserable — *misérrimo*.
munífico, liberal — *munificentísimo*.
nuevo, new — *novísimo*.
pobre, poor — *paupérrimo*.
sagrado, hallowed — *sacratísimo*.
salubre, healthy — *salubérrimo*.
sabio, wise — *sapientísimo*.

(e) Adjectives ending in *-z*, *-co*, and *-go* change these terminations into *-císimo*, *-guísimo*, and *-quisísimo*, thus: *voraz*, voracious, — *voracísimo*, most voracious; *rico*, rich — *riquísimo*; *vago*, vague — *vaguisísimo*.

(f) Adjectives terminating in *i*, *l*, *n*, *r* — as: *turquí*, blue; *paternal*, paternal; *ruín*, wicked, bad; *secular*, secular — do take the ending *-ísimo*. The *absol. superl.* of these adjectives is formed by placing the adverb *muy*, very, before the positive; thus: *muy paternal*, etc.

Note.—The *absol. superl.* of every adjective may be formed by placing *muy* before the positive. Thus: *Very faithful* is *fidelísimo* or *muy fiel*; *very learned*, *muy docto* or *doctísimo*.

§ 3. The following adjectives, besides their ordinary regular comparison, have an *irregular* form for the comparative of superiority and the superlatives:

<i>bueno</i> , -a, good.	<i>mejor</i> , better.	$\left. \begin{array}{l} el \\ la \\ lo \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} mejor, the \\ best. \end{array}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} \acute{o}ptimo, -a^* \\ (bonísimo, -a) \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} very \\ good. \end{array}$
<i>malo</i> , -a, bad.	<i>peor</i> , worse.	$\left. \begin{array}{l} el \\ la \\ lo \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} peor, the \\ worst. \end{array}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} p\acute{e}simo \\ (malísimo) \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} very \\ bad. \end{array}$
<i>grande</i> **, great.	<i>mayor</i> , greater.	$\left. \begin{array}{l} el \\ la \\ lo \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} mayor, the \\ greatest. \end{array}$	$\left. \begin{array}{l} m\acute{a}ximo \\ (grandísimo) \end{array} \right\} \begin{array}{l} very \\ great. \end{array}$

* Almost obsolete.

** When *grande* implies *size*, its degrees of comparison are regular.

<i>pequeño, -a,</i> little, small.	<i>menor,</i> less, smaller.	<i>el</i> } <i>menor,</i> the <i>la</i> } least, <i>lo</i> } smallest.	<i>mínimo</i> (<i>pequeñí- simo</i>)	} very lit- tle, very small.
<i>alto, -a,</i> high.	<i>superior,</i> higher.	<i>el</i> } <i>superior,</i> <i>la</i> } the highest. <i>lo</i> }	<i>supremo,</i> <i>sumo</i> (<i>altísimo</i>)	} very high.
<i>bajo, -a,</i> low.	<i>inferior,</i> low- er, inferior.	<i>el</i> } <i>inferior,</i> <i>la</i> } the lowest. <i>lo</i> }	<i>ínfimo</i> (<i>bajísimo</i>)	} very low.

Adjectives and Adverbs.

{ <i>poco,</i> little, few.	<i>ménos,</i> less.	<i>los ménos,</i> least (people, etc.).	<i>poquísimo,</i> very little.
{ <i>mucho,</i> much.	<i>más,</i> more.	<i>los más,</i> most (people, etc.).	<i>muchísimo,</i> very much.

Note.—The difference in the use of the double form of the the above adjectives and adverbs is as follows:

Mejor and *peor* are more frequent than *más bueno* and *más malo*. *Mayor* means *greater, larger, more considerable*, and *menor* denotes the contrary of *mayor*. Besides, *mayor* signifies *elder*, and *menor* means *younger*, like the Latin *major natu* and *minor natu*. — *Superior, supremo,* and *inferior, ínfimo* denote by preference *rank*, sometimes also the *situation* of a place or a thing. — The regular abs. sup. *grandísimo* is more in use than *máximo*. — *Más* and *ménos* are adjectives and adverbs. When used as adjectives, they may, of course, take the definite article; thus *las más noches*, most nights, etc. *Lo más* and *lo ménos* are *neuter*, and mean *the most, the least* (for instance, *lo ménos que V. puede hacer*, etc., the least you can do, etc.).

§ 4. *Than*, after a comparative, is translated in various ways — *viz*:

(a) By *que*, if “than” is followed by a *substantive*, a *pronoun*, or another *adjective*, as:

Tu primo es más rico que mi hermano.

Your cousin is richer than my brother.

Tu primo es más rico que yo.

Your cousin is richer than I.

Ese hombre es más desdichado que malo.

That man is more unhappy than wicked.

(b) By *de lo que*, if “than” is followed by a *sentence*, as:

He is more clever than he seems (*i.e.*, to be).

Es más listo de lo que parece.

(*c*) By *de*, if followed by a numeral, as: more than six. *más de seis*.

§ 5. *As — as = tan — como.* Ex.:

Tan elocuente como Cicerón.

But if the comparison concerns *quantity, number, etc.*, *as — as* is expressed by *tanto, -a — cuanto, -a* or *tanto, -a — como, as*:

Tiene tanta hacienda cuanto (como) tenía su padre.

He has as much wealth as his father had.

Esta traducción tiene tantas faltas como las otras.

This translation has as many faults as the others.

Note.—It must be distinctly understood that *tanto* and *cuanto* are *adjectives*, and therefore *agree* with their respective substantives in gender and number, as in the above sentences. Instead of *cuanto, -a, como* is used if *no* verb follows, as in the second instance. With the verb following (see the first sentence, *cuanta tenía su padre*), *cuanto* is *preferable*, though *como* is admissible, too.

§ 6. If an *accessory* sentence is introduced by “*that*,” this conjunction is rendered by *que*, as:

He has so many books *that he cannot read them all*.

Tiene tantos libros que no los puede leer todos.

Words.

La firmeza, the firmness.

el capitán, the captain.

la prudencia, the prudence.

el valor, the bravery, valour.

el obispo, the bishop.

la isla, the island.

la almendra, the almond.

la cerveza, the beer.

la noticia, the news.

el pariente, the relation.

floreciente, flourishing.

cansado, -a, tired.

valiente, brave.

dócil, docile, obedient.

cuerdo, -a, } reasonable, pru-
prudente, } dent.

sabroso, -a, savoury, delicious.

dulce, sweet.

bajo, -a, low.

sincero, -a, sincere.

barato, -a, cheap.

obrar, to work.

conozco, I know.

vienen, they come.

contar, to count, to number,
to tell (a story, etc.).

Reading Exercise. 80.

La rosa es hermosísima. Pedro está muy cansado. El padre es más prudente que el hijo. Este niño es menos dócil que prudente. El perro es tan fiel como valiente. Él no es

tan cuerdo como su hermana. Yo no tengo tanto dinero, tanta firmeza y tantos amigos como V. El capitán obró con tanta prudencia como valor. La madre de mi amigo es la mujer más virtuosa que conozco. V. tiene un criado fidelísimo. Estamos aquí en un lugar salubérrimo. El piísimo obispo Fulano ha muerto. Mi reloj es mejor que el suyo, pero el (*that*) del doctor es el mejor de todos. Italia tiene buen vino, Francia *lo** tiene mejor, pero España es la que tiene el mejor vino. Esta isla es más grande que aquella. Mi primo está en la clase superior, y mi hermano en la clase inferior. Las frutas más sabrosas se hallan en la baja Andalucía. Mi vecino es un hombre integérrimo. Galicia es un país fríísimo. Las almendras son dulces, pero el azúcar es más dulce. Mi primo es el hombre más sincero del mundo, y mi prima es la mujer más hermosa de la ciudad. Esta cerveza es más cara que el vino, pero es malísima. Las pérdidas por (*by*) mar son más considerables que por tierra. Las manufacturas inglesas son más baratas que *las* (*those*) que vienen de Francia. El comercio de Sevilla es ménos floreciente que *el* (*that*) de Barcelona. Europa es la parte más pequeña del mundo, y Asia la más grande.

Traducción. 31.

This rose is prettier than that; it is the prettiest of all my flowers. My father is very de old; he is older than yours (*el de usted*). Mrs. (*La Señora de*) Muntañola is very amiable; she is the most amiable lady (*that*) I know. This news is quite certain (*abs. sup.*). Murillo was a very famous Spanish painter. That bishop was very beneficent; now (*ahora*) he is very poor. Is your brother (*su . . . de V.*) older or younger than you (*usted*)? He is taller than I, but he is younger. A very rich man is not always a very happy man. This fruit is more sweet than sour. This translation is more difficult than it seems. The captain was as brave as [he was] generous. He has so many relations that he cannot count them all. That is the richest man of the town. The island of Madeira is finer than the island of Majorca. Galicia is the coldest region of Spain, [it] is a very cold country. Are you in the upper or in the lower class? This wine is very bad; the beer is better. We were all very tired, but my sister was the most tired of all. Why are you (*usted*) not as obedient as your (*su — de V.*) brother? You would have been more prudent if you had been older (*más viejo*). Do you know a fruit which is more

* *Some*, referring to a preceding substantive, and followed by an *adjective*, is rendered by the *accus.* of the *personal pronoun*; thus: *lo tiene mejor*, has some better (*i.e.*, wine).

delicious than this? That book had as many mistakes as the other. God is the Supreme Being (*Ser*).

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Cómo fué el comercio de esta ciudad? | Fué muy floreciente. |
| ¿Es fuerte su hermano de V.? | Sí, es un hombre fortísimo. |
| ¿Quién ha muerto ayer? | El piísimo obispo Fulano. |
| ¿Cómo era el capitán? | Era tan valiente como sincero. |
| ¿Es pequeña esta casa? | Al contrario, es más grande <i>de lo que</i> parece. |
| ¿Tiene V. tantos criados como tenía su padre? | Tengo más. |
| ¿Es cierta esta noticia? | Sí, señor, es certísima. |
| ¿Es íntegro ese empleado (<i>clerk</i>)? | Es un empleado integérrimo. |
| ¿Cómo es la almendra? | Es dulcísima, pero menos dulce que el azúcar. |
| ¿Tiene V. buenas almendras? | Las (see Exercise 30) tengo buenas, pero mi vecino <i>es quien</i> las tiene mejores. |
| ¿Quién era Murillo? | Murillo era un celeberrimo pintor español. |
| ¿Conoce V. á un hombre sincero? | Conozco á un hombre muy sincero, le conozco á V. |

Twenty-first Lesson. — Lección veintiuna.

On the Regular Verb. — Del verbo regular.

By the termination of the *Infinitive Mood* we distinguish *three* different forms of conjugation—*viz.*:

The *first* conjugation, with the Infinitive Mood ending in *ar*, as: *amar*, to love.

The *second* conjugation, with the Infinitive ending in *er*, as: *comer*, to eat.

The *third* conjugation, terminating in *ir*, as: *vivir*, to live.

Note.—The vowel preceding the final *r* is *characteristic* of the whole conjugation. The inflections *after* these characteristic vowels are nearly alike in all three conjugations.

I. Conjug.

Infin.

Am-ar, to love.
(Charact. vowel a.)

II. Conjug.

Infin.

Com-er, to eat.
(Charact. vowel e.)

III. Conjug.

Infin.

Viv-ir, to live.
(Charact. vowel i.)

Simple Tenses.

Indicative.

Present.

Yo am-o, I love.
tú -as, thou lovest.
él -a, he loves.

nosotros -amos,
we love.

vosotros -áis,
you love.

ellos -an,
they love.

Com-o, I eat.
-es, thou eatest.
-e, he eats.

-emos, we eat.

-éis, you eat.

-en, they eat.

Viv-o, I live.
-es, thou livest.
-e, he lives.

-imos, we live.

-ís, you live.

-en, they live.

Imperfect.

Amaba, I loved.
-abas, thou lovedst.
-aba, he loved.

-ábamos, we loved.
-abais, you loved.
-aban, they loved.

Comía, I ate.
-ías, thou atest.
-ía, he ate.

-íamos, we ate.
-íais, you ate.
-ían, they ate.

Vivía, I lived.
-ías, thou livedst.
-ía, he lived.

-íamos, we lived.
-íais, you lived.
-ían, they lived.

Definite.

Amé, I loved.
-aste, thou lovedst.
-ó, he loved.

-amos, we loved.
-asteis, you loved.
-aron, they loved.

Comí, I ate.
-iste, thou atest.
-ió, he ate.

-imos, we ate.
-isteis, you ate.
-ieron, they ate.

Viví, I lived.
-iste, thou livedst.
-ió, he lived.

-imos, we lived.
-isteis, you lived.
-ieron, they lived.

Future.

Amaré, I shall
love.
-arás, thou wilt
love.
-ará, he will love.

Comeré, I shall
eat.
-erás, thou wilt
eat.
-erá, he will eat.

Viviré, I shall live.
-irás, thou wilt
live.
-irá, he will live.

— <i>aremos</i> , we shall love.	— <i>eremos</i> , we shall eat.	— <i>iremos</i> , we shall live.
— <i>aréis</i> , you will love.	— <i>eréis</i> , you will eat.	— <i>iréis</i> , you will live.
— <i>arán</i> , they will love.	— <i>erán</i> , they will eat.	— <i>irán</i> , they will live.

Conditional.

<i>Amaría</i> , I should love.	<i>Comería</i> , I should eat.	<i>Viviría</i> , I should live.
— <i>arías</i> , thou wouldst love.	— <i>erías</i> , thou wouldst eat.	— <i>irías</i> , thou wouldst live.
— <i>aría</i> , he would love.	— <i>ería</i> , he would eat.	— <i>iría</i> , he would live.
— <i>ariamos</i> , we should love.	— <i>eríamos</i> , we should eat.	— <i>iríamos</i> , we should live.
— <i>ariáis</i> , you would love.	— <i>eríais</i> , you would eat.	— <i>iríais</i> , you would live.
— <i>arian</i> , they would love.	— <i>erían</i> , they would eat.	— <i>irían</i> , they would live.

Imperative.

<i>Ama</i> , love (thou)!	<i>Come</i> , eat (thou)!	<i>Vive</i> , live (thou)!
<i>amad</i> , love (you)!	<i>comed</i> , eat (you)!	<i>vivid</i> , live (you)!
<i>Ame V.*</i> , love! (polite form.)	<i>Coma V.*</i> , eat! (pol. form.)	<i>Viva V.*</i> , live! (pol. form.)

Negatively.

<i>No ames*</i> , do (thou) not love!	<i>No comas</i> , do (thou) not eat!	<i>No vivas</i> , do (thou) not live!
<i>No améis*</i> , do (you) not love!	<i>No comáis</i> , do (you) not eat!	<i>No viváis</i> , do (you) not live!
<i>No ame V.*</i> , do not love! (pol. form.)	<i>No coma V.</i> , do not eat! (pol. form.)	<i>No viva V.</i> , do not live! (pol. form.)

Subjunctive.

Present.

<i>Ame</i> , I love.	<i>Coma</i> , I eat.	<i>Viva</i> , I live.
— <i>es</i> , thou love.	— <i>as</i> , thou eat.	— <i>as</i> , thou live.
— <i>e**</i> , he love.	— <i>a</i> , he eat.	— <i>a</i> , he live.

* These forms are taken from the *present* of the *Subjunctive Mood* (see the following Note).

** The *3rd pers. sing.* of the *Pres. Subj.* is of great importance, because used with *V.*, it replaces the *Imperative* of the *polite form*, thus: *Ame V.!* (Do) love! *Coma V.!* (Do) eat! *Viva*

- <i>emos</i> , we love.	- <i>amos</i> , we eat.	- <i>amos</i> , we live.
- <i>éis</i> , you love.	- <i>áis</i> , you eat.	- <i>áis</i> , you live.
- <i>en</i> , they love.	- <i>an</i> , they eat.	- <i>an</i> , they live.

Imperfect.

<i>Amase</i> , if I loved.	<i>Comiese</i> , if I ate.	<i>Viviese</i> , if I lived.
- <i>ases</i> , if thou lovedst.	- <i>teses</i> , if thou atest.	- <i>teses</i> , if thou livedest.
- <i>ase</i> , if he loved.	- <i>tese</i> , if he ate.	- <i>tese</i> , if he lived.
- <i>ásemos</i> , if we loved.	- <i>iésemos</i> , if we ate.	- <i>iésemos</i> , if we lived.
- <i>aseis</i> , if you loved.	- <i>teseis</i> , if you ate.	- <i>teseis</i> , if you lived.
- <i>asen</i> , if they loved.	- <i>tesen</i> , if they ate.	- <i>tesen</i> , if they lived.

Future.

<i>Amare</i> , if I should love.	<i>Comiere</i> , if I should eat.	<i>Viviere</i> , if I should live.
- <i>ares</i> , if thou shouldst love.	- <i>teres</i> , if thou shouldst eat.	- <i>teres</i> , if thou shouldst live.
- <i>are</i> , if he should love.	- <i>tere</i> , if he should eat.	- <i>tere</i> , if he should live.
- <i>áremos</i> , if we should love.	- <i>iéremos</i> , if we should eat.	- <i>iéremos</i> , if we should live.
- <i>areis</i> , if you should love.	- <i>tereis</i> , if you should eat.	- <i>tereis</i> , if you should live.
- <i>aren</i> , if they should love.	- <i>teren</i> , if they should eat.	- <i>teren</i> , if they should live.

V.! (Do) live! The indirect affirmative construction would be: *Quiero que V. ame or que ame V.* The difference between the affirmative and the interrogative forms, with which the so-called Imperative of the polite form is easily confounded, will be seen best in the following table:

I. Conjug.

You love, *V. ama.*
Do you love? *¿Ama V.?*
Do love! *¡Ame V.!*

II. Conjug.

You eat, *V. come.*
Do you eat? *¿Come V.?*
Do eat! *¡Come V.!*

III. Conjug.

You live, *V. vive.*
Do you live? *¿Vive V.?*
Do live! *¡Viva V.!*

Conditional.

<i>Amara</i> , if I loved.	<i>Comiera</i> , if I ate.	<i>Viviera</i> , if I lived.
— <i>aras</i> , if thou lovedst.	— <i>ieras</i> , if thou atest.	— <i>ieras</i> , if thou lived.
— <i>ara</i> , if he loved.	— <i>tera</i> , if he ate.	— <i>tera</i> , if he lived.
— <i>áramos</i> , if we loved.	— <i>iéramos</i> , if we ate.	— <i>iéramos</i> , if we lived.
— <i>arais</i> , if you loved.	— <i>ierais</i> , if you ate.	— <i>ierais</i> , if you lived.
— <i>aran</i> , if they loved.	— <i>ieran</i> , if they ate.	— <i>ieran</i> , if they lived.

Gerund.

<i>Amando</i> , loving.	<i>Comiendo</i> , eating.	<i>Viviendo</i> , living.
-------------------------	---------------------------	---------------------------

Participle.

<i>Amado</i> , loved.	<i>Comido</i> , eaten.	<i>Vivido</i> , lived.
-----------------------	------------------------	------------------------

Compound Tenses.

Indicative.

Compound Perfect.

<i>He</i> } <i>has</i> } <i>ha</i> } etc.	<i>amado, comido, vivido,</i>	<i>I have</i> } <i>thou hast</i> } <i>he has</i> } etc.	} loved, eaten, lived.
--	-------------------------------	--	------------------------

Pluperfect.

<i>Había</i> } <i>habías</i> } <i>había</i> } etc.	<i>amado, comido, vivido,</i>	<i>I had</i> } <i>thou hadst</i> } etc.	} loved, eaten, lived.
---	-------------------------------	---	---------------------------

2nd Pluperfect.

<i>Hube amado, comido, vivido,</i> etc.	<i>I had loved, eaten, lived.</i> etc.
--	---

Compound Future.

<i>Habré amado, comido, vivido,</i>	<i>I shall have loved, eaten, lived.</i>
-------------------------------------	--

Compound Conditional.

<i>Habría amado, comido, vivido,</i>	<i>I should have loved, eaten, lived.</i>
--------------------------------------	---

Subjunctive.

Compound Perfect.

<i>Haya amado, comido, vivido,</i>	<i>that I have loved, eaten, lived.</i>
------------------------------------	---

Pluperfect.

Hubiese amado, comido, vivido, if I had loved, eaten, lived.

Compound Future.

*Hubiere amado, comido, vi-
vido,* if I shall have loved, eaten,
lived.

Compound Conditional.

*Hubiera amado, comido, vi-
vido,* that I should have loved,
eaten, lived.

By way of practice the pupil should conjugate the following regular verbs:

After the First Conjugation.

<i>Arreglar</i> , to order, put in order.	<i>ilustrar</i> , to illustrate.
<i>bajar</i> , to descend.	<i>llegar</i> , to arrive.
<i>criar</i> , to create, breed.	<i>llevar</i> , to carry, to wear.
<i>emplear</i> , to apply.	<i>olvidar</i> , to forget.
<i>engañar</i> , to deceive.	<i>representar</i> , to represent.
<i>fumar</i> , to smoke.	<i>trabajar</i> , to work.
<i>gastar</i> , to spend.	<i>viajar</i> , to travel.

After the Second Conjugation.

<i>Aprender</i> , to learn.	<i>emprender</i> , to undertake.
<i>correr</i> , to run.	<i>esconder</i> , to conceal.
<i>conceder</i> , to concede, grant.	<i>sorprender</i> , to surprise.
<i>deber</i> , to be obliged, to be indebted to, to owe.	<i>vender</i> , to sell.

After the Third Conjugation.

<i>Acudir</i> , to hasten to.	<i>percibir</i> , to penetrate, look
<i>exigir</i> , to demand.	<i>recibir</i> , to receive. [through.
<i>hundir</i> , to sink (trans.).	<i>subir</i> , to ascend.

Remarks.

Although the use of the tenses will be given in the Second Part, it is desirable to give here a few hints on those tenses which offer the greatest difficulties to the beginner.

1. In *Conditional* clauses beginning with "if," the Spaniard uses the *Imperfect* of the Subjunctive or the *Conditional* of the same Mood, and the *principal* sentence follows (or precedes) with the *Conditional* of the Indicative Mood, thus:

Imperf. Subj. *Cond. Subj.* *Cond. Indic.*

Si amases (or *amaras*) *los buenos libros, serías más
instruido.*

If you loved good books, you would be more learned.

Condit. Subj. Impf. Subj.

Si las riquezas hubieran (or hubiesen) podido saciar

Condit. Ind.

mis deseos, las habría amado.

If riches could have satisfied my wishes, I should have loved them.

2. In *exclamations* expressing *desire*, etc., the *Imperfect* of the *Subjunctive* is used as well as the *Conditional* of the same mood, as:

¡Ojalá fuera (or fuese) eso así!

Would that it were so!

3. After to *tell*, to *say*, to *think*, and similar verbs, the *Conditional* of the *Indicative* is used, if the principal sentence is *affirmative*. If, on the contrary, the principal sentence is *negative*, *interrogative*, or expresses *doubt*, either the *Conditional* or the *Imperfect* of the *Subjunctive* should be employed in the accessory sentence, thus:

He said (had said) that he would come.

Cond. Ind.

Decía (dijo) (había dicho) que vendría.

I did not think that they would overtake us.

Cond. Subj. Impf. Subj.

No creía que nos alcanzarán or alcanzasen.

4. After the verbs "to be willing, to desire, to wish, to pretend," etc., the *Conditional* of the *Indicative* should never be used; the *Conditional* of the *Subjunctive* or the *Imperfect* of the same Mood are employed, as:

I wished he would come.

Quería que viniera or viniese (but never vendría).

5. The *Future* of the *Subjunctive* refers to a *Future* or *Imperative* in the principal sentence, as:

You will come if you can (properly: if you will be able to come).

Vendrá V. si pudiere (or puede, pres.).

This is commonly the case, if the accessory sentence is introduced by "he who," "that which," "all that," where in English, too, the *Future* might be used instead of the *Present*, as:

Choose of these places that which pleases you best.

Elija V. de estos puestos el que más le agradare (or agrada, pres. Subj.).

Words.

<i>Los estudios</i> , the studies.	<i>estudiar</i> , to study.
<i>el joven</i> , the young man, youth.	<i>creer</i> , to believe, to think.
<i>la escoba</i> , the broom.	<i>comprender</i> , to understand.
<i>la capa</i> , the cloak.	<i>meter</i> , to put.
<i>el negocio</i> , the business.	<i>temer</i> , to fear.
<i>el negociante</i> , } the merchant.	<i>ofender</i> , to offend.
<i>el comerciante</i> , }	<i>partir</i> , to leave (for), to set out.
<i>piadoso</i> , -a, pious.	<i>trabajar</i> , to work.
<i>diligente</i> , diligent.	<i>llegar</i> , to arrive.
	<i>dicho</i> , said (past part).

Reading Exercise. 32.

¿Qué busca V.? Busco mi sombrero, y estos niños buscan sus libros. Amamos á nuestros padres (*parents*) y parientes (*relations*). Hablaba siempre de sus flores y pájaros. Ese rey ama á su pueblo. Amaremos siempre á los que (*those who*) son virtuosos. Hablaré mañana al médico. Hablaría más de sus estudios, si fuese más diligente. ¿Cree V. que nuestro vecino llegue hoy? Creo que llegará mañana. ¿Ha comprendido V. lo que he dicho? No lo he comprendido todo. La criada dejó la escoba en el cuarto, cuando hubo acabado (*done*) de barrerlo (*it*). ¿Venderá V. sus perros? Venderé mis caballos, pero no venderé mis perros. Vendería su capa si se la comprasen (*if they . .*). Estos negociantes no venderían sus casas, si hubiesen hecho (*done*) mejores negocios. ¿Á quién ha vendido V. sus libros? ¿Cuándo partirá su padre de V. para Madrid? Partirá esta tarde. ¿Desde (*since*) cuándo vive V. en esta casa? Desde hace siete ú (inst. of *ó*, or; see the Conjunctions) ocho días. ¿Cuándo ha recibido V. el dinero? Recibí el dinero ayer.

Traducción. 33.

Will you (*usted*) look for (tr. *search*) my books and pens? I should look for them (*los*), if I had more time. We always speak for our friends. Shall you (*V.*) speak to the physician to-morrow? I should speak to the physician to-day, if he were here. The good king always loved his (*su*) people. Do you understand (*Entiende V.*) the book which I have given (*dado*) you? I have understood all* very well (*muy bien*). The footman has put the hat on the table. If you (*V.*) were more diligent, you would speak more of your studies. God loves those who are pious and virtuous. My friend always spoke of his horses and dogs. I do not think that the Spanish merchant has (Subj.) yet (*todavía*) arrived. The young man

* Everything.

studied the whole day. I should leave this afternoon if the weather were not so bad. Do you think (that) you will set out to-day? I should set out at once (*desde luego*) if I had received my (*el*) money. We have been living for three months in this house. The footman has not swept the room to-day.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|--|
| ¿Quiere (<i>to love, like</i>) V. á mi hermano? | V. á Le quiero mucho á su hermano de V. |
| ¿Á quién ama Dios? | Dios ama <i>al que</i> (<i>him who</i>) hace bien á los desdichados. |
| ¿Qué buscaba su criado de V.? | Buscaba mi sombrero y mis guantes. |
| ¿Ha cogido (<i>taken</i>) V. mi cortaplumas (<i>penknife</i>)? | No he cogido nada. |
| ¿Hablará V. hoy á aquel sujeto (<i>that man</i>)? | Le (<i>to him</i>) he hablado ya (<i>already</i>). |
| ¿Trabajará V. esta tarde? | No trabajaré, porque no tengo tiempo. |
| ¿Por qué llora (<i>cries, weeps</i>) este niño? | Porque no tiene nada <i>que</i> (<i>to</i>) comer (<i>eat</i>). |
| ¿Vive aquí su tío de V.? | No, señor, vive <i>en casa</i> (<i>at</i>) de Don Casimiro Verguero (<i>Mr. V.'s</i>). |
| ¿Cree V. que el criado llegue (<i>see Lesson 22, 2</i>) pronto (<i>soon</i>)? | No creo que llegue hoy. |
| ¿Qué ha vendido su amigo de V.? | Ha vendido sus caballos y sus perros. |
| ¿Desde cuándo vive V. en esta calle? | Desde hace año y medio. |
| ¿Ha recibido V. una carta de Sevilla? | Aún (<i>yet</i>) no la he recibido. |
| ¿Dónde viven las hijas de su amigo de V.? | Viven en una quinta (<i>country-house, cottage</i>) muy lejos (<i>far</i>) de la ciudad. |

Reading Exercise.

Geografía de España.

Situación, clima, extensión, población.

España tiene la misma longitud de las Islas Británicas, y la misma latitud del Norte de los Estados Unidos. Confina al N. con el Mar Cantábrico y Francia; al E. con el Mediterráneo; al S. con el Mediterráneo, el Estrecho de Gibraltar y el Océano Atlántico, y al O. con Portugal y el Atlántico. — La Península Ibérica está enteramente rodeada de

mar, excepto por la parte donde los Pirineos la separan de Francia.

Su clima es vario; en el Norte frío y nebuloso, en el Sud cálido, en el Centro frío ó cálido, segun las estaciones; en general el clima es muy seco, por la destrucción de los bosques.

La extensión superficial de España es de 504 517 kilómetros cuadrados, y la población de 18 000 000 de habitantes.

Twenty-second Lesson. — Lección veintidós.

Euphonic Changes in Certain Verbs.

Certain classes of regular Verbs undergo various orthographical modifications in order to retain their pronunciation. These are as follow:

1. Verbs ending in *-car*, as: *tocar*, to touch, change the *c* into *qu* before *e*; whilst those in *-quir*, as *delinquir*, to transgress, change *qu* into *c* before *o*, *a*; i.e.:

Perf.	Imper.	Subj.
<i>toqué,</i> etc.	<i>toque V.,</i> (Do) touch, etc.	<i>toque,</i> <i>toques,</i> <i>toque,</i> etc.

But: *toco, tocas,* etc.

Ind. Pr.	Imper.	Subj.
<i>delinco,</i> etc.	<i>delinca V.,</i> etc.	<i>delinca,</i> <i>delincas,</i> <i>delinca,</i> etc.

But: *delinque,* etc.; *delinquí,* etc.

2. Those in *-gar* as: *pagar*, to pay, insert *u* after *g* before *e*; whilst those in *-quir*, like *distinguir*, to distinguish, change *qu* into *g* before *o*, *a*; i.e.:

Perf.	Imper.	Subj.
<i>pagué,</i> etc.	<i>pague V.,</i> etc.	<i>pague,</i> <i>pagues,</i> <i>pague,</i> etc.

But: *pago, pagas,* etc.

Ind. Pres.	Imper.	Subj.
<i>distingo,</i> etc.	<i>distinga V.,</i> etc.	<i>distinga,</i> <i>distingas,</i> <i>distinga,</i> etc.

But: *distingues,* etc.; *distinguí,* etc.

3. Verbs in *-zar*, as: *rezar*, to pray, change *z* into *c* before *e*; verbs in *-cer* and *-cir* change *c* into *z* before *a* and *o*, *ca*, *co*, *ga*, *go*:

	<i>rezar</i> , to pray.		
<i>rccé.</i>	<i>rece,</i>	<i>rece V.</i>	
	<i>rece,</i>		
	<i>reces</i> , etc.		
<i>vencer,</i> to conquer.	<i>esparcir,</i> to scatter.	<i>conocer,</i> to know.	<i>yacer,</i> to lie down.
<i>venzo,</i>	<i>esparzo,</i>	<i>conozco,</i>	<i>yazgo,</i>
<i>venza,</i>	<i>esparza,</i>	<i>conozca,</i>	<i>yazga,</i>
etc.	etc.	etc.	etc.

4. Verbs ending in *-ger* and *-gir* change *g* into *j* before *a* or *o*, as:

<i>escoger</i> , to choose.	<i>dirigir</i> , to direct.
<i>escojo,</i>	<i>dirijo,</i>
<i>escoja,</i>	<i>dirija,</i>
<i>escojas,</i>	<i>dirijas,</i>
<i>escoja,</i>	<i>dirija,</i>
etc.	etc.

5. Verbs in *-guar* assume the diaeresis before *e*, *é*; while those in *-güir* lose the diaeresis before endings not having *i* with the stress or *í*:

<i>averiguar</i> , to ascertain.	<i>argüir</i> , to argue.
<i>averigüé,</i>	<i>arguyo,</i>
<i>averigüe,</i>	<i>arguyes,</i>
<i>averigües,</i>	<i>arguye,</i>
<i>averigüe,</i> etc.	etc.

But: *averiguo*, etc.; *argüí*, etc.

6. *o* if diphthongised to *ue* assumes the form *hue* in *oler*, and the form *üe* if preceded by *g*:

<i>oler</i> , to smell.	<i>avergonzarse</i> , to be ashamed.
<i>huelo,</i>	<i>me avergüenzo,</i>
<i>huelas,</i>	<i>te avergüenzas,</i>
<i>huele,</i>	<i>se avergüenza,</i>
etc.	etc.

7. *i* unaccented between two vowels is converted into *y*, the same as *i* unaccented, initial, before a vowel:

<i>argüir</i> , to argue.	<i>errar</i> , to make a mistake.
<i>arguyo,</i>	<i>yerro,</i>
<i>arguyes,</i>	<i>yerras,</i>
<i>arguye,</i>	<i>yerra,</i>
etc.	etc.

Words.

<i>El cuarto</i> , the room.	<i>avergonzarse</i> , to be ashamed.
<i>la sencillez</i> , the simplicity.	<i>oler</i> , to smell.
<i>el error</i> , <i>la falta</i> , } the fault.	<i>olvidar</i> , to forget.
<i>el defecto</i> ,	<i>ignorar</i> , not to be aware.
<i>el lujo</i> , luxury.	<i>entregar</i> , to deliver, to give.
<i>el escritorio</i> , } the counting-	<i>padeecer</i> , to suffer.
<i>el despacho</i> , } house, office.	<i>llegar</i> , to arrive.
<i>escoger</i> , to choose.	<i>escoger</i> , to choose.
<i>la cuenta</i> , the account.	<i>dirigir</i> , to direct.
<i>el abuelo</i> , the grandfather.	<i>huir</i> , to flee, to fly (French: <i>fuir</i>).
<i>el periódico</i> (or <i>diario</i>), the newspaper.	<i>buscar</i> , to search, to look for.
<i>creer</i> , to believe.	<i>es preciso</i> , it is necessary; <i>me</i>
<i>pegar</i> , to beat.	(<i>te</i> , <i>le</i>) <i>es preciso</i> , I, (thou,
<i>tocar</i> , to touch.	he), etc., <i>must</i> .

Reading Exercise. 34.

¿No le pegue usted al perro? ¿No toque V. eso! ¿Por qué toca V. eso? Huyamos del lujo y busquemos la sencillez. Olvidamos nuestros defectos, creyendo que el mundo los ignora. Llegué ayer con su hermano de V. Huela V. esta rosa. Búsquele V., entréguele la cuenta, y que se la pague. ¿Por qué no paga V. lo que V. ha comprado? Mi abuelo está leyendo el periódico. ¿Huya V. la mala compañía y busque V. la buena! escoja V. lo mejor. Averigüe V. donde tiene el despacho. ¡Cuanto padezco! Se avergüenza de que yo le conozca.

Traducción. 35.

(Do) choose one of these rooms! Why did you beat my dog? I did not beat *him* (*le* precedes the verb). What are you reading (use *leer*)? I am reading the newspaper. The man who conquers his passions is prudent. Do not beat the poor boy. He has suffered much in (= *during*) his life*. Why don't you pay (*transl.* Why not pay you) me (no me —)? Do pay him! One must pay one's (*sus*) bills. *Did* you arrive (*Def.*) from Paris? I attributed (*use atribuir*) his faults to his bad company. Do not touch that, and do not argue. Do you want me (*Quiere V. que*) to ascertain it? Do not be ashamed, everybody (*todo el mundo*) makes a mistake (*use errar*). When you know him, you will like him (*le querrá*). He does not want me to (*No quiere que le —*) direct him. Smell these roses. Give it to him when he arrives (*use the Subj.*).

* Lifetime.

Conversación.

¿Qué hace V.?	Escojo lo mejor.
¿Qué creía su padre de V.?	Creía que estaba V. leyendo.
¿Qué quiere V.?	Que V. le dirija.
¡Págume V.!	Como quiere V. que le pague si no me pagan.
¿Quién es prudente?	El hombre que vence (<i>conquers</i>) sus pasiones.
¿De qué se avergüenza V.?	Me avergüenzo de que él no se avergüenze.
¿Cuándo llegó V.?	Llegué ayer.

Reading Exercise.

Cantares.

Yo no sé lo que yo tengo,
ni sé lo que me hace falta,
que siempre espero una cosa,
que no sé como se llama.

(Ferrán, "La Soledad," XVIII.)

Antes piensa y despues habla,
y después de haber hablado,
vuelve á pensar lo que has dicho,
y verás si es bueno ó malo.

(Ferrán, "La Soledad," XLI.)

Twenty-third Lesson. — Lección veintitrés.

Personal Pronouns. — Pronombres personales.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns.

1st Person.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Femin.</i>
Yo, I. <i>de mí</i> , of me. <i>á mí, me</i> , to me, me.* <i>conmigo</i> , with me.	Nosotros (<i>nos</i>), <i>de nosotros</i> , <i>á nosotros, nos</i> , <i>con nosotros</i> ,	Nosotras (<i>os</i>), we. <i>de nosotras</i> , of us. <i>á nosotras, nos</i> , to us, us. [us. <i>con nosotras</i> , with

2nd Person.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>	<i>Femin.</i>
<i>tú</i> , thou. <i>de tí</i> , of thee. <i>á tí, te</i> , to thee, thee. <i>contigo</i> , with thee.	Vosotros, <i>de vosotros</i> , <i>á vosotros, os</i> , <i>con vosotros</i> ,	Vosotras (<i>os</i>), you. <i>de vosotras</i> , of you. <i>á vosotras, os</i> , to you, you. [you. <i>con vosotras</i> , with

* As we stated (Lesson III.), the personal accusative is rendered in Spanish by the *dative*.

3rd Person.

(Masculine.)

<p>Sing. <i>Él</i>, he. <i>de él</i>, of him. <i>á él</i>, <i>le</i>, to him, him. <i>con él</i>, with him.</p>	<p>Plur. <i>Ellos</i>, they. <i>de ellos</i>, of them. <i>á ellos</i>, <i>les</i>, to them, them. <i>con ellos</i>, with them.</p>
--	---

(Feminine.)

<p>Sing. <i>Ella</i>, she. <i>de ella</i>, of her. <i>á ella</i>, <i>le</i>, <i>la</i>, to her, her. <i>con ella</i>, with her.</p>	<p>Plur. <i>Ellas</i>, they. <i>de ellas</i>, of them. <i>á ellas</i>, <i>les</i>, <i>las</i>, to them, them. <i>con ellas</i>, with them.</p>
--	---

(Neuter.)

<p>Sing. <i>Ello</i>, it. <i>de ello</i>, of it. <i>á ello</i>, <i>lo</i>, to it. <i>con ello</i>, with it.</p>
--

Polite Form of Address, i.e., you (always in the third person).

For both genders.

<p>Sing. <i>Usted</i> (V.), <i>de usted</i> (V.), <i>á usted</i> (V.); substitute, <i>le</i>, <i>la</i>.</p>	<p>Plur. <i>Ustedes</i> (V.V.). <i>de ustedes</i> (V.V.). <i>á ustedes</i> (V.V.); subst. <i>los</i>, <i>les</i>, <i>las</i>.</p>
---	--

Reflective of Third Person (*usted* included).

For both genders and numbers.

<p>Gen. <i>de sí</i>, of himself, herself, itself, themselves. Dat. and } <i>á sí</i>, to himself, herself, itself, themselves. Accus. } himself, herself, itself, themselves. Ablat. <i>consigo</i>, with himself (herself, itself, yourself, polite); themselves, yourselves (pol.).</p>
--

Remarks.

1. The forms *de él*, *de ella*, *de ello*, etc., were formerly contracted into *del*, *della*, *dello*, etc. These contractions are now obsolete.

2. *Nos* and *vos*, instead of *nosotros*, *-as*, *vosotros*, *-as*, as nominatives, are only used in official style, *nos* expressing the so-called "plural of Majesty". Ex.: *Nos Don N., Obispo de . . . os mandamos*. We NN. bishop . . . bid you.

Nos — as accusative — and *os* are placed before the verb:

Nos lo dijo, he told us.

¿No os lo contó? did he not tell you?

Contrary to the practice of other Romance languages, in Spanish *we* and *you* have a *masc.* and *fem.* gender. Thus: *Nosotros* (masculine); *vosotras* (feminine).

3. The preposition *con* (with) is contracted with *mi*, *ti*, *sí* into *conmigo*, *contigo*, *consigo*, with me, with thee, with him(self), etc.

4. In the dative and in the accusative there are two kinds of personal pronouns—*viz*: the *absolute* and the *conjunctive*; the former is always *detached from the verb*; the latter is only employed in the *dative* and *accusative* cases and may *closely join* the verb.

Yo lo tengo (el periódico), I have it (the paper).
Tómelo V., Have it.

5. The difference between the forms *de él*, *de ella*, *de ello*, *de V.*, *de ellos*, etc., *á él*, *á ella*, etc., *con él*, *con ella*, etc., and the forms, *de sí*, *á sí*, *consigo* is that the latter refer to the subject of the sentence, whilst the former refer to a different person or thing. Compare:

Iba hablando con él, he was talking to him.

Iba hablando consigo, he was talking to himself.

6. *Ello* (nominative) may only be used as the subject of the sentence, and should be placed at the *beginning*. In the middle of the phrase, *lo* is used instead of *ello*; as:

(Ello) parece difícil, mas no lo es.

It seems (to be) difficult, but it is not.

7. The English expressions "I myself" or "my own self," "he himself," "your own self," etc., are always rendered by *yo mismo*, *fem. yo misma*; *él mismo*, *V. mismo*, *-a*, etc.

N.B.—The Spanish personal pronoun in the nominative, *i.e.*, as a subject, is *always suppressed*, unless required for the sake of emphasis, contrast, or to avoid ambiguity.

Words.

El dinero, the money.

ver, to see.

luego (adv.), soon.

tener razón, to be right.

no tener razón, to be wrong.

alabar, to praise.

acusar, to accuse.

llevar, to carry.

Reading Exercise. 36.

¿Quién lo (*it, so*) dice? Yo, — él — ella — nosotros — vosotras. Nosotros tuvimos razón; vosotras lo veréis (*will see*) luego. ¿Quién lo ha dicho, él ó ella? ¿Vienes tú conmigo? No voy contigo. ¿Quién estuvo aquí, él ó ella? No hablo de él, sino de ellas. Hablamos de vosotros y de vosotras. ¿Habla V. de ellos ó de ellas? Esos hombres se ala-

ban á sí mismos (*themselves*). Las mujeres se acusan á sí mismas. Harías* mejor (*You had better*) en ocuparte (*care*) de tí mismo (*mind your own business*). Llevo todo mi dinero conmigo; él nunca lleva dinero consigo cuando voy con él. ¿Quién ha hablado de mí? Yo he hablado de V., de él y de ella. ¡No hable V. siempre de sí mismo! ¿Me ha dado V. el dinero á mí ó á mi amigo? Se lo he dado á él. Vosotros tenéis razón.

Traducción. 37.

Who is there? He, she, we, you, they. Do you give (*da V.*) the money to me or to her? I love (*quiero*) thee, but I do not love him. Have you seen me or her? You carry it all about (*con*) you. Has (*use llevar*) he money about him? She has no money about her. We (*m.*) are poor, but you (*f.*) are rich. We (*m.*) speak of you (*f.*), and you (*f.*) speak of us (*m.*). Have you any money? I have more (of it) than you. Have you any friends? I have none (*no los tengo*). That (it) seems [to be] very difficult, but it is very easy. I have seen you (*m. pl.*) and them (*f. pl.*). She loves thee, but she does not love me. He and she were here; they have spoken (to) with him and (to) with her. I did not speak of you, but (*sino*) I spoke of them (*pl. fem.*). This lady praises herself. Why do you accuse her, and not him? Shall you take all your money with you? He would have taken all his books with him, if he had had time (*tiempo*).

Conversación.

¿Quién ha hecho eso?	Yo, tú, él, ella.
¿Quién ha hablado de mí?	Yo he hablado de V.
¿Quién ha venido conmigo?	Yo he venido contigo.
¿Tiene dinero?	Tiene más dinero que yo, pero nunca lleva dinero consigo.
¿Qué falta tiene ella?	Que habla mucho de sí misma.
¿Me llamas (<i>Dost thou call</i>) á mí?	No te llamo á tí, les llamo á él y á ella.
¿Quién se acusa á sí mismo?	Pocos se acusan á sí mismos.
¿De quién habla él?	Habla de nosotros y de vosotras.
¿Ha llegado sola ella?	No, ha llegado conmigo.

Reading Exercise.

Geografía de España. (Continuación.)

Mares, golfos, cabos; montañas, ríos.

Sus mares son el Atlántico y el Mediterráneo; la parte del Atlántico que se extiende por la costa norte se llama Mar Cantábrico ó Golfo de Vizcaya, ó de Gascuña. En Cataluña

* From *hacer*, to do.

hay el golfo de Rosas. Sus principales cabos son el de Creus, en Cataluña, el de Palos en Murcia, el de Gata en Almería, la Punta de Europa en Cádiz, el Finisterre y Ortegá en la Coruña, el de Peñas en Asturias, y el Machichaco en Vizcaya. En España no hay lagos.

El país está cortado por varias cordilleras paralelas y una transversal; á saber: al N. la cordillera Pirenaica, con las Montañas de Santander y los Montes de Asturias; en el Centro la cordillera Carpetana, con las Sierras de Somosierra y Guadarrama, y la cordillera Oretana con los Montes de Toledo; al S. la cordillera Bética, con la Sierra Morena, y la Penibética con la Sierra Nevada; y al E. la cordillera Ibérica, que parte de las Montañas de Santander y termina en el cabo de Gata. Esta cordillera es la principal divisoria de las aguas.

Los principales ríos corren entre esas cinco cordilleras paralelas, y la cordillera oriental y los dos mares, y son: el Duero, el Tajo, el Guadiana, el Guadalquivir y el Ebro; éste es el único de ellos que desemboca en el Mediterráneo.

Twenty-fourth Lesson. — Lección veinticuatro.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns. — Pronombres personales afijos.

As we observed in the foregoing lesson, these pronouns have only the *dative* and *accusative* cases. They are:

		<i>Sing.</i>		
Dat. <i>me</i> , me (to me);	<i>te</i> , thee (to thee);	}		
Acc. <i>me</i> , me;	<i>te</i> , thee;			
Dat. <i>le</i> ; á <i>V.</i> , him (to him); to you.	<i>le</i> , her (to her);			
Acc. <i>lo</i> , him;	<i>la</i> her; — <i>lo</i> , it.			
		<i>Plur.</i>		
Dat. <i>nos</i> , us (to us);	<i>os</i> , you (to you);	}		
Acc. <i>nos</i> , us;	<i>os</i> , you;			
Dat. <i>les</i> , á <i>V. V.</i> , them (to them); to you (<i>m.</i>);	<i>les</i> , them (to them) (<i>f.</i>);			
Acc. <i>los</i> , them (<i>m.</i>);	<i>las</i> , them (<i>f.</i>).			

Observations.

1. The rule given in Lesson 3, that the object of the person is put in the dative, holds good also for the

pronouns, but in this case it is not employed with the same consistency by all Spanish writers. Thus, when speaking of persons, we find *le* and *lo* for the sing. and *les* and *los* for the pl. masc.; for the fem. sing. *la*, more rarely *le*, and for the pl. *las*, more rarely *les*. On the other hand, *la* and *las* occur occasionally, besides *le* (to her), *les* (to them) for the dat. feminine—*e.g.*, *la doy*, I give to her; but *le* is better for both genders.

Examples:

Nuestro amigo salía de su casa, cuando le (or lo) asaltaron unos ladrones.

Our friend left his house, when several robbers assaulted him.

¿Dónde están sus hermanos de V.? No les or los he visto.

Where are your brothers? I have not seen them.

Creer las mujeres que los hombres las (acc.) aprecian particularmente por su hermosura; pero lo que les (or las) asegura para siempre una estimación verdadera es la modestia, la virtud, etc.

Women think that men appreciate them particularly for their beauty; but what always secures them real esteem is modesty, virtue, etc.

In speaking of *inanimate* objects *le* or *lo* are used for the masculine, the latter in preference—*e.g.*:

He comprado este libro, pero no lo (or le) he leído todavía.
I have bought this book, but have not yet read it.

2. Concerning the *construction* of these pronouns, the following are the most important rules:

(a) The conjunctive pronouns *precede* the verb in the *Indicative*, the *Subjunctive*, and the *Imperative* moods; in this latter case only when *negatively* employed, as:

Lo doy, I give it.

Lo he dado, I have given it.

Te mando, I command thee.

No le conocía á V., I did not recognize you.

Os ha visto, he has seen you.

Quiere que se lo diga, he wants me to tell him.

¡No lo diga V.! do not tell him.

A very remarkable anomaly is presented by the pronouns of the *third* person. Whenever a *dative* of this person (masculine or feminine, singular or plural)

Vino á visitarme, he came to pay me a visit.

Quererse, to love oneself.

Estoy escribiéndolo, I am writing it.

Note.—In this case, whenever two conjunctive personal pronouns — one in the *dative*, and the other in the *accusative* — meet in the sentence, the *dative* precedes:

Déjame lo hacer, let me do it.

Díganoslo V., tell us.

Estoy escribiéndoselo, I am writing it to him.

N.B.—Notwithstanding the preceding rules, *the conjunctive form precedes (not follows), in the negative imperative:*

No se lo deje V. hacer, do not let him do it.

No nos lo diga V., do not tell us.

Note.—Ancient writers contract the pronoun with the Infinitive mood in a peculiar manner. Instead of *tomarla*, to take her, they say *tomalla*; instead of *tenerle* — *tenelle*, etc. In the 2nd Pl. of the Imperative mood, which ends in *-d*, this consonant was put *before* the *l*— of the pronoun. Thus, instead of *tomadlo*, take (you) it, they said: *tomaldo*; instead of *decidle* (tell it), *decilde*. This metathesis, or transposition, is frequently met with, for instance, in Cervantes, but is now quite obsolete.

(c) If the Imperative, the Infinitive, or the Gerund is coupled with an *auxiliary* verb, or with a verb which may be considered as an auxiliary, like *hacer*, to make, *dejar de*, to cease, *volver á*, to do again, etc., the pronouns very often precede these verbs, as:

Se deja ver, liter. he lets himself see = he shows himself (instead of *deja verse*).

No me vuelvas á hablar, do not speak to me again instead of *no vuelvas á hablarme*.

(Euphony alone decides where the pronoun should be placed in this case.)

(d) For euphony's sake, a slight alteration is originated by the pronouns *nos* (us) and *os* (you)—*viz.*:

1. When *nos* is affixed to a form ending in *-s*, the final *-s* of the verb is dropped, thus:

Amémonos, let us love one another, for: *amémosnos*.

Vémonos, we see each other, for: *vémosnos*.

2. When *os* meets with the final *-d* of the Imperative mood, this consonant is dropped, thus:

Amáos, love (you) yourselves, for: *amados*.

Note.—The only exception is *id*, go (you). Thus: *idos*, go away, begone!*

General Remark. — Notwithstanding the preceding rules, in poetry as well as in literary style the Conjunctive Pronouns most often *follow*, not precede, the verb.

Words.

El nombre, the name.
la libertad, the liberty.
el estado, the state, condition.
el lacayo, the footman.
la impaciencia, (the) impatience.
la hora, the hour.
comenzar, to begin.
lamentar, to lament.
recomendar, to recommend.
saber, to know.
afligir, to afflict.
ver, to see.
hallar, to find.
escribir, to write.

parecer, to seem.
esperar, to expect, to wait for.
sentarse, to sit down.
prometer, to promise.
ir } *á ver*, {to come, to see, to
venir } {call, to visit**.
vencer, to conquer.
anunciar, to announce, to impart.
estar enterado, to be acquainted.
mucho tiempo há, it is a good while.
dí, tell (thou).
apénas, scarcely.
algo, something.

Reading Exercise. 38.

¡Díganos V. la verdad! ¡Envíele V. esta carta! Le conocemos. No le conocemos. La conozco mucho tiempo há. Estaba enterado de la muerte de su padre, pero no he querido anunciársela por no afligirle. Escribaselo V. Puede V. hablarle. No le he de decir mi nombre. ¿No sabe V. quién es esa mujer? ¿Se lo ha recomendado V.? Te lo he dicho á tí, y no á él. El pobre muchacho se comenzó á lamentar de su suerte. El caballero halló á su enemigo; y vencéndole (*after having conquered him*) en batalla singular (*duel*), después de perdonarle generosamente, le dió la libertad. ¿Han venido Vds. á verme? Ella no se lo ha prometido á él. Apénas me hubo visto uno de los tres pastores, cuando me llamó. Hallábame en este estado, cuando supe (*knew, learned*) que el Señor Gil Blas estaba sin lacayo. Sentámonos á la mesa mi hermana y yo. Esperábamos con impaciencia la hora para

* French: *Allez-vous-en!*

** In the Romance languages, "to go" (Fr. *aller*; Ital. *andare*; Span. *ir*) denotes a motion *towards the person spoken to*, whereas "to come" (Fr. *venir*; It. *venire*; Sp. *venir*) implies a motion *towards the speaker*. "Come to see me" is therefore Fr. *Venez me voir*; It. *Venga a trovarmi*; Sp. *Venga V. á verme*. "I'll call on you" is: Fr. *J'irai vous voir*; It. *Andró a trovarla*; Sp. *Iré á verle á V.*

vernos y hablarnos. ¿Tiene V. algo que decirnos? ¿Conoce V. á esos hombres? Les he visto ayer en casa de mi amigo, pero no les conozco. Dime la verdad, que (*and*) no te arrepentirás (*you will not repent*) de haberla hecho. Se lo dijeron (*told*) á mis hermanas. Á mi amigo no le pareció bien este consejo.

Traducción. 39.

Tell me (*pol. form*)! Tell (thou) it us! I expected you. I do not expect him. Had you expected it? He has given it to him. There are the books; has he given them to them (*fem.*)? He has given them to the daughters of the neighbour. Leave them (to) them! I promised them to them. Has my brother seen you (*plur.*)? Why will you not impart it to him, if you are acquainted (with) of it? Have you told him so? I have told her, but not him. Tell him! We were not able (*lit. in the state*) to promise him it. Why have you promised it her? I should not have promised it to her, if you had *not given it to me*. Begone! I do not give you so much money as I gave you (the) last time (*vez*). Love one another, O men! He was very sorry (*tr. to afflict one's self*), when he heard (*transl. knew*) that you had not recommended him. Have you known this gentleman? I did not know him, but I knew his sister (*transl. but his sister, I knew her*). He has recommended her to me. We came (*tr. have come*) to visit him, but as we do not find him at home, we shall (*wait for*) expect him. I have something to tell you. *Did you know* (*— supo V.*) it? I am acquainted with his condition, and I (*did tell him so*) have also told him, but he will not believe it (*me*). Do you know that I will send them (*masc.*) to them?

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Dígame V. la verdad! | La digo siempre. |
| ¿Conoce V. á ese señor? | Le conozco muy bien; es el primo de la Señorita de Figueras. |
| ¿Espera V. á su amigo? | Espero á mi tío: me ha prometido venir á verme hoy. |
| ¿Se lo ha dicho V. á él, ó á ella? | Se lo he dicho á ella, y no á él. |
| ¿Por qué lo han hecho? | Lo han hecho para honrarle (<i>in his honour, lit. to honour him</i>). |
| ¿Á quién se lo dijeron (<i>told they</i>)? | Se lo dijeron á mis hermanas. |
| ¿Se lo ha prometido? | Sí, se lo ha prometido. |
| ¿Quién ha venido? | Ha venido un caballero á verle á V. |

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Qué nos manda (<i>orders, commands</i>) el Evangelio (<i>Gospel</i>)? | Nos manda amarnos como hermanos y socorrernos (<i>assist</i>) en la desgracia. |
| ¿Ha enviado V. las cartas á la marquesa? | Se las enviaré por el correo (<i>post</i>). |
| ¿Por qué no le da (<i>gives</i>) dinero su padre? | No puede darle dinero, porque no <i>lo</i> * tiene. |
| ¿Quiere V. prestarme este libro? | No puedo prestárselo (<i>or</i> no se lo puedo prestar) á V. porque lo estoy leyendo. |

Reading Exercise.

Cantares.

Quando nacemos, lloramos,
y sonrien los demás,
y al morir nos sonreímos,
y ellos se echan á llorar.

[Palau, "Nuevos Cantares," CXXXI.]

Despedida, despedida,
eres fuente de dolores,
cuando las manos se sueltan
se rompen los corazones.

[Palau, "Nuevos Cantares," CCXCVIII.]

Twenty-fifth Lesson. — Lección veinticinco.

Demonstrative and Interrogative Pronouns. — Pronombres demostrativos é interrogativos.

Demonstrative Pronouns.

As stated in Lesson 14, these words are *pronouns* when used in lieu of a Substantive—*i. e.*, *alone*. Of course, they may be inflected with the prepositions *á*, *de*, *con*, etc. They are:

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Este, esta</i> , this;	<i>esto</i> (n.), this;
<i>Ese, esa</i> , this;	<i>estos, estas</i> , these.
<i>Aquel, aquella</i> , that;	<i>eso</i> (n.), this;
<i>aquello</i> (n.), that;	<i>esos, esas</i> , these.
	<i>Aquellos, aquellas</i> , those.

Note.—The forms *aqueste, aquesta, aquesto*, for *este, esta, esto*; *aquese, aquesa, aqueso* for *ese, esa, eso*, are now

* As the Spanish language has no precise equivalent for *some* or *any* in this meaning, the personal pronoun is often used instead, as in the above sentence. Thus: *¿No come V. fruta?* Do you not eat fruit? *Nunca la como*, I never eat *any* (lit. *it*).

completely obsolete. This is also the case with the compounds of *este* and *ese* with *otro*: *estotro*, *estotra*, this other = the other.

Again, the articles *el*, *la*, and *lo* are used as *demonstrative* pronouns in phrases such as:

Mi caballo y el de mi hermano.

My horse and that of my brother.

The English phrases *he who . . .*, pl. *those who . . .*, are rendered by the *definite* article with *que* following:

Los que no moderan sus pasiones son infelices.

Those who do not moderate their passions are unhappy.

The neuter *lo* should be added where the English *that* is commonly omitted, as:

No sabe lo que dice.

He does not know what (that which) he says.

He who, especially in the singular, is often translated by *quien*, and not by *el que*—e.g.:

Quien calla, otorga, he who is silent gives consent.

(French: Qui ne dit mot, consent.)

The neuter forms *esto*, *eso*, *aquello* are only used substantively—i e., without a noun following, as:

He hablado de esto, de eso, de aquello.

I have spoken of it (that).

N.B.—Besides their general use similar to that of the demonstrative adjectives, the Spanish demonstratives may refer to a person or thing already mentioned:

Escribí á mi amigo, y éste no me contestó.

I wrote to my friend but he did not answer.

Vi al padre y al hijo; aquel no me vió, éste sí.

I saw the father and the son; the former did not see me, the latter did.

Interrogative Pronouns.

The interrogative pronouns differ in their form from the relative pronouns only in as much as they have the written accent, but they differ in their use. Besides those enumerated in Lesson 14, § 4, 5, and 6 (*cuál* and *qué*), we should mention:

¿ *Quién*? plur. ¿ *quiénes*? who?

¿ *Cuál*? plur. ¿ *cuáles*? which? and

¿ *Cuyo*? f. ¿ *cuya*? whose?

(a) *¿Quién?*, *¿quiénes?* are never used with a substantive; the singular may sometimes be used instead of the plural. This pronoun is inflected with *de*, *á*, *con*, etc. Examples:

¿Quién habla? Who speaks? Plur. *¿Quiénes hablan?*
¿De quién (de quiénes) habla V.? Of whom do you speak?

(b) *¿Cuál?* plur. *¿cuáles?* never takes the article, and thus differs from the relative pronoun *el cual*. Thus:

¿Cuál es el más rico? Who is the richest? Whereas:
Es una ciudad en la cual no he estado, it is a town where (in which) I have not been.

(c) *¿Cuyo?* fem. *¿cuya?* plur. *¿cuyos?* f. *¿cuyas?* corresponds with the English *whose*, and agrees in gender and number with the noun to which it refers. However, the pupil should be cautioned against the use of this interrogative pronoun, which very rarely occurs, and advised to replace it by: *¿de quién?* plur. *¿de quiénes?* Thus:

¿De quién es este libro? rather than *¿Cuyo libro es este?*
¿De quién es esta carta? rather than *¿Cuya carta es esta?*
¿De quiénes son estos libros? r. th. *¿Cuyos libros son estos?*
¿De quiénes son estas cartas? r. th. *¿Cuyas cartas son estas?*

Whose book is this?
 Whose letter is this?
 Whose books are these?
 Whose letters are these?

N.B.—*¿Quién?* (on anyone knocking at a door), who is there? *¿Qué?* what?

Words.

<i>El vicio</i> , vice.	<i>la virtud</i> , virtue.
<i>el carpintero</i> , the joiner.	<i>pernicioso</i> , dangerous.
<i>el extranjero</i> , the foreigner.	<i>degradar</i> , to degrade.
<i>las señas</i> , the address.	<i>elegar</i> , to elevate.
	<i>dudar</i> , hesitate.

Reading Exercise. 40.

¿Quién se lo ha dicho á V.? *¿Cuál es el enemigo más pernicioso del hombre?* El vicio. *¿De quién (whose) es esta casa, y de quiénes (whose) son esos jardines?* *¿Cuáles son los señores que han venido?* Ventrán (*will come*) unas mujeres. *¿Quiénes?* — *La del jardinero y la del carpintero?* *¿Á quién hablaba V?* *Á un extranjero?* *¿Á cuál?* *Á un muchacho que está en casa.* *¿Tiene V. mis señas y las de mi amigo?*

Tengo solo las de V. Tenía un buen amigo, pero ese se murió (*died*). ¿Quién duda entre el vicio y la virtud?; aquél degrada, ésta eleva. ¿Quién? (*on anyone knocking at a door*). No he hallado lo que buscaba. Hemos hablado de esto y de aquello. ¿Son esos sus hermanos de V.? No, señor, estos son mis primos, aquellos son mis hermanos.

Traducción. 41.

Who was (*tr. has been*) there? Who is there (*on anyone knocking at a door*)? Which of these men has done it? Whose dog is this? That of our neighbour. To whom do these flowers belong (*use pertenecer*)? Which is the finest of them? To whom have you given the bill? I do not know the gentleman to whom I have given it. Who (*plur.*) has come? The children whose father was here yesterday. Of which girls do you speak? Who has seen the foreigner? Have you my address and that of my friend? I have yours only. These are they (*do not translate they*). Who hesitates between vice and virtue?; the former degrades, the latter elevates. I have bought (*comprado*) something. — What?

Conversación.

¿Quién está ahí?	No sé (<i>I do not know</i>) quien.
¿Á quién ha hablado V.?	He hablado á un amigo, que ha venido ayer.
¿Tiene V. mi libro ó el de mi hermano?	Tengo el de su hermano de V.
¿De quién es esta casa?	No sé de quien es.
¿De quién son esos vestidos?	Son los de los niños.
¿De quién son esas flores?	¿Cuáles?
¿Son esos sus niños de V.?	Sí, lo son.
¿De quién hablaba V.?	De un amigo. — ¿De cuál?

Reading Exercises.

Geografía de España. (Continuación.)

Producciones, Industria, Comercio.

Las principales producciones de España son: granos (Castilla), legumbres y frutas, principalmente naranjas (Aragón, Valencia y Andalucía), arroz (Valencia), vinos y aceites (Andalucía); azafrán, esparto, cáñamo y seda. En las regiones meridionales se ha aclimatado el café, el tabaco, la caña de azúcar y el algodón.

La producción animal consiste principalmente en bueyes (Galicia, Castilla y Andalucía), caballos (Andalucía), mulos (Estremadura y Aragón), ovejas (Castilla, Aragón y Andalucía) y cerdos (Estremadura, Asturias é Islas Baleares).

La producción mineral es rica y variada: hierro (Provincias Vascongadas), carbón (Asturias), cobre (Rio Tinto), plomo (Linares), mercurio (Almadén) y sal (Cardona).

La industria está poco desarrollada, aunque progresa: maquinaria y metalurgia en las Provincias Vascongadas y Cataluña, hilados y tejidos en Cataluña y Valencia, salazones en Galicia y Asturias, molinería en Castilla y Cataluña, vinos y azúcares en Andalucía, y papel en las Provincias Vascongadas y Cataluña.

El comercio español progresa, y se verifica principalmente con Francia é Inglaterra, la América del Sud, Portugal, Bélgica y las antiguas posesiones españolas de las Antillas y Filipinas.

Twenty-sixth Lesson. — Lección veintiséis.

Possessive and Relative Pronouns. — Pronombres posesivos y relativos.

Possessive Pronouns.

The rules given in Lesson 15 on the possessive adjectives are also applicable to the possessive pronouns. We have only to add here one observation, reserving full particulars on this part of speech for the Second Part.

If *two* sentences have the *same* substantive for a *predicate*, the repetition of which is avoided by the use of a possessive pronoun, the Spanish language requires the *neuter indefinite* article before the verb of the following sentence, thus:

Charles is my friend, and I am his (friend).

Carlos es mi amigo, y yo lo soy suyo.

Relative Pronouns.

As was said in Lesson 25, these pronouns differ from the interrogative pronouns in their use, except *cual*, which, when a relative pronoun, commonly takes the article. They are:

que (*el que, la que, los que, las que*), which, who.

quien, who, pl. *quienes*.

el cual, f. *la cual*; pl. *los cuales*, f. *las cuales*, who, which.

cuyo, f. *cuya*; pl. *cuyos*, f. *cuyas*, whose.

cual, m. & f., pl. *cuales* (without article, mostly with *tal, tales*, preceding), which, as, like, etc.

1. These pronouns are varied with *con*, *de*, and *á*, but the relative *que* only takes *á* when preceded by the definite article (*al que*, *á la que*, *á los que*, *á las que*); without the article it can also be used to express the accusative of the person, but then it does not take *á*. *Qué* is alike in singular and plural, and used both of persons and things, as:

Un libro que he comprado, a book which I have bought.

V. es el hombre que yo buscaba (or *á quien yo buscaba*).

You are the man whom I sought (was seeking).

Los muebles de que está adornada la casa que habitamos.

The furniture with which the house in which we live is adorned.

2. *Quien*, plur. *quienes*, is used of persons only, irrespective of gender, as:

El hombre á quien V. debe la vida.

The man to whom you owe your life.

Las niñas á quienes ví.

The girls whom I saw.

If a *particular stress* is laid on a personal pronoun (where in French with the phrases *c'est toi*, *c'est lui*, etc., *qui* is used), the pronoun in conjunction with *el que*, *la que* or *quien*, in their corresponding cases are used, as:

Yo soy quien (or *el que*) *lo dice*.

It is I who say it.

To *him* you owe your life.

Á él es (or *Es á él*) *á quien le debe V. la vida*.

3. *Cual*, plur. *cuales*, when relative pronouns, are preceded by the article, as:

El hermano de mi madre, el cual*.

My mother's brother, who

Notes.—(a) *Que* adds to the preceding sentence one of secondary importance, whereas *cual* joins to the foregoing thought a new one of equal weight. For this reason *el cual* is always preceded by a comma, and *que* is not**.

(b) If *cual* introduces an indirect interrogative sentence, it is used *without* the article, as:

Es difícil determinar cuál de los dos ha hablado mejor.

It is difficult to decide which of the two has spoken better.

* *Hermano*; Latin, *germanus*.

** In English, the relative pronouns, though understood, are often omitted after the noun. In Spanish, they must be added. Ex.: The letter you have written. *La carta que V. ha escrito*.

4. *Cual* is likewise used without the article when expressing a *comparison*, in which case the English employ *as, like*, etc. Ex.:

Era una mujer cual la podía desear.

She was such a woman as he could wish for.

Cual furioso león, like a furious lion.

*La vida hay que aceptarla tal cual es**.

One must take life such as it is.

5. If the relative pronoun refers, not to a single word, but to a *whole sentence preceding*, *lo que, lo cual*, (French: *ce qui*; It. *il che, locchè*) replace *que*, as:

Los reos fueron absueltos, lo que (or lo cual) causó un sentimiento general.

The criminals were discharged *which* (i.e., their being discharged) caused a general sensation.

6. If the relative pronoun *que* is preceded by several substantives, so that it might become doubtful to which it refers, the definite article is added to *que*. Ex.:

La relación de las aventuras de Don Quijote en la que los lectores vulgares sólo ven un asunto de entretenimiento, etc.

The narration of Don Quixote's adventures, in which superficial readers only see a matter of amusement, etc.

7. *Cuyo, -a*, plur. *cuyos, -as*, when a relative pronoun, means *whose*, and does not differ in its form from the interrogative pronoun (see the preceding Less.), as:

El padre á cuyos niños he visto.

The father whose children I saw.

N.B.—But here, too, as with the *interrogative* pronoun *cuyo*, the cases of *quien* or *el cual*, etc., may be used:

El padre de quien he visto á los niños, or

El padre á los niños del cual he visto.

As to the further use of *cuyo*, see Part II., Lesson 9.

Words.

La circunstancia, the circumstance.

el deudor, the debtor.

ser deudor, to be indebted, to owe.

el puesto, the place, situation.

el favor, the favour, kindness.

la amistad, the friendship.

la estación, the season.

el olor, the smell.

* *Tal, cual*; Latin, *talis, qualis*.

<i>la modestia</i> , modesty.	<i>quería</i> , loved, wished.
<i>el literato</i> , the literary man.	<i>matar</i> , to kill.
<i>la primavera</i> , the Spring.	<i>gastar</i> , to spoil, to spend, to waste.
<i>suave</i> , soft, lovely.	<i>desconfiar</i> , to distrust.
<i>brusco</i> , harsh.	<i>alentar</i> , to encourage.
<i>digno</i> , worthy.	<i>lograr</i> , to obtain.
<i>verdadero</i> , true.	<i>andar</i> , to have intercourse with, to associate with.
<i>respetable</i> , respectable.	<i>podemos</i> , we can.
<i>admirable</i> , admirable, wonderful.	<i>desear</i> , to wish, to desire.
<i>locamente</i> , in a foolish way.	<i>es preciso</i> , it is necessary, one must.
<i>prudentemente</i> , prudently.	
<i>reluce</i> , shines.	

Reading Exercise. 42.

Él era quien lo quería. Él fué quien le mató. Quien gasta locamente su dinero, no conoce su valor. De sí mismo es de quien uno debe desconfiar. Hay circunstancias en que es preciso obrar prudentemente. La casa que V. ha comprado vale más que aquella. El jóven de quien he hablado á V. es digno de ser alentado. ¿Sabe V. á quien es deudor del puesto que ha logrado? Dime con quien andas y te diré quien eres. Me ha hecho un favor cual lo esperaba de su amistad. Estas son frutas cuales las podemos desear en la estación en que estamos. Tengo aquí flores cuyo olor es muy suave. Fulano es un literato cuya modestia es admirable. Ellos son quienes lo han hecho. No es oro todo lo que reluce. Los niños cuyo padre ha muerto están en la casa de mi vecino. Yo soy quien lo he hecho todo por mis amigos. Lo que agrada (*pleases*), seduce (*seduces*). Su hermano de V. me dijo unas palabras bruscas, lo que me afigió mucho.

Traducción. 43.

I have done it (*tr.* It is I who . . .). *Thou* hast not said so. To her we owe (*debemos*) (everything) all. I do not know which of these gentlemen (has) said so. The man who (has) wasted his money in such a foolish way is not worthy of being assisted. The friends of my father who were here, have gone (*se — ido*) to France. Do you know which of the two has done it? Is it you who spoke (has spoken), or is it she who spoke? On the contrary, I have never (*nunca*) spoken, it is Miss So-and-so who is always speaking. The flowers whose smell is so sweet are the children of (the) Spring. Be my friend, and I shall be yours (*thine*). The generous prince to whom I owe my situation, encourages me where (ever) he can. The soldiers (that) we have seen on (*en*) the road (*camino*), were very tired. The circumstances in which

I found him, were very sad. We cannot expect favours of these strangers as we expect them of our friends. We are those to whom you owe your life. What (*tr.* that which) is true is also estimable. The young man obtained the situation, which (see 5) delighted (*fr. alegrar*) his mother.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|---|
| ¿Quién es aquel señor? | Es mi amigo, de quien he hablado á V. |
| ¿De quién son estas tijeras (<i>scissors</i>)? | Son las de la niña. |
| ¿De quién es ese perro? | Es mío. |
| ¿Cuál es su opinión de V.? | No tengo opinión en esa materia. |
| ¿Quién ha escrito esta carta? | El capitán cuya hermana ha venido ayer. |
| ¿Cuál de esos señores ha hablado mejor? | Es difícil decir cuál de los dos ha hablado mejor. |
| ¿Á quién debo (<i>must I</i>) hablar? | Á Pedro es á quien debe V. hablar. |
| ¿Quiénes son aquellos hombres? | Los hombres de quienes le hablé á V. |
| ¿De quién debe uno desconfiar? | De sí mismo <i>es de quien</i> uno debe desconfiar. |
| ¿Quién es digno de ser alentado? | El jóven de quien le he hablado á V. |

Reading Exercise.

Cantares.

¡Despedida de mi casa
bien te he recordado siempre!
Mi padre exclamó: "Sé honrado";
mi madre decía: ¡"Vuelve"!
[F. de Arteaga, "Quinientos Cantares," 76.]

La muñeca hace á la niña,
y la niña á la mujer:
¡Madres las que tenéis niñas,
educad muñecas bien!
[F. de Arteaga, "Quinientos Cantares," 405.]

Twenty-seventh Lesson. — Lección veintisiete.

The Passive Voice. — De la voz pasiva.

The passive voice is formed in Spanish by joining to the auxiliary *ser*, to be, the *past participle* of the

active verb. This past participle, when coupled with *ser*, is always considered an *adjective*, and consequently agrees in *gender* and *number* with the *noun* or *pronoun* to which it refers.

Infinitive.

Ser amado, -a; Plur. *ser amados, -as*, to be loved.

Indicative.

Present.

Sing.

Plur.

<i>Soy amado, -a</i> , I am loved.	<i>somos amados, -as</i> , we are loved.
<i>eres amado, -a</i> , thou art loved.	<i>sois amados, -as</i> , you are loved.
<i>es amado</i> , he is loved.	<i>son amados</i> , they are loved (<i>m.</i>).
<i>es amada</i> , she is loved.	<i>son amadas</i> , they are loved (<i>f.</i>).

Imperfect.

Era amado, -a, I was loved, etc.

Definite.

Fui amado, -a, I was loved, etc.

Future.

Seré amado, -a, I shall be loved.

Conditional.

Sería amado, -a, I should be loved.

Imperative.

Sing. <i>Sé amado, -a</i> , be (thou) loved.	Plur. <i>Sed amados, -as</i> , be (you) loved.
---	---

Subjunctive.

Present.

Sea amado, -a, I (may) be loved.

Imperfect.

Fuese amado, -a, I was loved.

Future.

Fuere amado, -a, that I shall be loved.

Conditional.

Fuera amado, -a, that I should be loved.

Gerund.

Siendo amado, -a, being loved.

Compound Tenses.

Infinitive.

Haber sido amado, to have been loved.

Indicative.

*Perfect.**He sido amado*, -a, I have been loved.*Pluperfect.**Había sido amado*, -a, I had been loved.*2nd Pluperfect.**Hube sido amado*, -a, I had been loved.*Compound Future.**Habré sido amado*, -a, I shall have been loved.*Compound Conditional.**Habría sido amado*, -a, I should have been loved.

Subjunctive.

*Perfect.**Haya sido amado*, -a, I have been loved.*Pluperfect.**Hubiese sido amado*, -a, (that) I had been loved.*Compound Future.**Hubiere sido amado*, -a, (that) I shall have been loved.*Compound Conditional.**Hubiera sido amado*, -a, (that) I should have been loved.

Remarks.

1. It is a peculiarity of the Spanish language to render almost always the passive voice by the *active form* with the pronoun *se*—i.e. *reflectively*. Thus:

Estas mercancías se venden (literally: these goods *sell themselves*), rather than *estas mercancías son vendidas*, these goods are sold.

Fué prometida una recompensa, a reward was promised; or reflectively:

Prometióse una recompensa, they promised a reward, *lit.* a reward *promised itself**.

* *Se* with the verb commonly precedes the subject of the sentence.

In English such sentences are translated with the words: *people, they, one, etc.*, or with the *passive voice*, thus:

Se cree, one believes, they believe, people believe, etc., it is believed.

Se asegura, one affirms, they, people, etc., affirm.

2. The construction with *se* is frequently *impersonal*, as in the above sentences, *se cree, se asegura*, where no accusative follows the verb. In this case *se* is used with the singular of the verb, as in the preceding examples. But whenever an accusative follows in English, as in the sentence: One sells (people sell) these goods, the verb, in Spanish, agrees with its nominative; thus:

Estas mercancías se venden, or *se venden (véndense) estas mercancías*.

3. Where the reflective form might seem *ambiguous*, as in the sentence: *One loves the children*, reflectively: *The children love themselves* = *Los niños se aman*, this mode of expression should be avoided, and the sentence rendered by the passive voice, as:

Los niños son amados;

or a convenient *nominative* may be used with the active verb, as in English; thus:

Amamos á los niños, we love the children.

Aman á los niños, they love the children.

Uno ama á los niños, one loves children.

N.B.—The same idea may be expressed in the following way:

se ama á los niños,
á los niños se les ama.

This is also the case, when the English *one, people, etc.*, is used with a *reflective* verb. Thus a mode of speaking like *se se ama*, one loves oneself, is quite inadmissible, because here the sentence would have *no* nominative case, but in its stead a *double accusative*. Sentences like: *One flatters oneself* should, therefore, be rendered:

(*Nosotros*) *nos lisonjamos*, we flatter ourselves, or:

(*Vosotros*) *os lisonjeáis*, you flatter yourselves, or:

Los hombres se lisonjean, men flatter themselves, or:

Alguno se lisonjea, somebody flatters himself, or:

V. se lisonjea, you flatter yourself.

4. If in English the object is a *personal pronoun*, the subject being *one, people, etc.*, the passive voice should be preferred in Spanish, as:

One loves him, *él es amado*;

or one of the above *nominatives* may be chosen, as:

Alguno (V.) la ama, etc., also *le aman*.

5. *Dative* cases of the personal pronouns likewise occur with this reflective form, as:

Se me cree, one believes me, or: I am believed, people believe me, etc.

Se le quiere, one loves him.

Se me contestó negativamente, I was answered in the negative.

6. Whenever the subject is omitted, as in sentences of a vague character, such as: "they say," "people will talk," "it is whispered about," "it is generally believed," "he is generally beloved," etc., the 3rd pers. plur. *without* the personal pronoun (a nominative like *los hombres*, people, being understood) is employed. Ex.: *Creen*, it is believed; *aseguran*, people affirm; *se lisonjean*, they flatter themselves; *prometieron una recompensa*, a reward was offered; *le aman*, he is liked; *venden estas mercancías*, these goods are being sold; *me han robado*, I have been robbed.

N.B.—The Passive voice, rather than the reflective, is, however, preferred in narratives and statements, to express what is considered as an accomplished fact:

Un niño ha sido atropellado por un coche.

A child has been run over by a carriage.

El herido fué llevado al hospital.

The wounded person was taken to the hospital.

The English *by* with passive verbs is rendered by *por* if the agent is a living being, or considered as such, or in expressing material actions; and by *de* with verbs of feeling or emotion, or used figuratively:

Un hombre ha sido muerto por otro.

A man has been killed by another.

Era muy querido de todos.

He was most beloved by all.

N.B.—*Fué muerto de un balazo*, he was killed by a shot.

Neuter Verbs.

They denote either a *state of rest*, as *dormir*, to sleep, or an intransitive *action*, such as *morir*, to die, *llegar*, to arrive, *caer*, to fall, etc. Their use is very simple, the compound tenses being *almost always* formed with the auxiliary *haber*; thus:

Hube llegado, I had arrived.
Ha muerto, he has died.
He dormido, I have slept, etc.

Words.

<i>Los preliminares</i> , the preliminary	<i>el compañero</i> , the companion.
<i>la paz</i> , the peace. [minaries.	<i>soberbio, -a</i> , proud.
<i>el embustero</i> , the liar, hypocrite, cheat.	<i>herido, -a</i> , wounded.
<i>la lana</i> , the wool.	<i>feroz</i> , ferocious, wild.
<i>el cuero</i> , the leather.	<i>matar</i> , to kill, slaughter.
<i>el asunto</i> , the object, matter.	<i>asesinar</i> , to murder.
<i>la memoria</i> , the report, the memoir, memory.	<i>derrotar</i> , to put to flight, to rout (an army).
<i>el dueño</i> , } the master.	<i>asegurar</i> , to assure.
<i>el amo</i> , }	<i>firmar</i> , to sign.
<i>la felicidad</i> , the happiness.	<i>quejarse</i> , to complain.
<i>el volumen</i> , the volume, circumference, extent.	<i>pedir</i> , to ask, to demand.
<i>el nombre</i> , the name.	<i>ser muy solicitado</i> , to be in (great) demand.
<i>el apuro</i> , the want, necessity.	<i>encumbrar</i> , to raise.
<i>la fortuna</i> , the fortune.	<i>buscar</i> , to seek.
<i>el poder</i> , the power, might.	<i>acabar</i> , to finish, to terminate.
<i>el ladrón</i> , the thief, robber.	<i>corregir</i> , to correct, to mend.
<i>el imperio</i> , the empire.	<i>invitar</i> , to invite.
<i>el viajero</i> , the traveller.	<i>maltratar</i> , to ill-treat.
	<i>concluir</i> , to conclude.

sostener, to maintain, to sustain.
mucho tiempo ha, it is a good while.

Reading Exercise. 44.

Dicen que los alemanes (*Germans*) han sido derrotados por los rusos (*Russians*). Aseguran que se han firmado los preliminares de la paz. Se quejan de V. Somos amados de todos nuestros amigos. El embustero es aborrecido. La lana de España es muy solicitada. Los cueros son muy buscados. Gustavo Adolfo, rey de Suecia (*Sweden*), fué muerto en la batalla de Lützen. El militar que ha sido herido por un paisano (*civilian*), ha muerto esta noche. Cuando nuestras traducciones se acaben, serán corregidas por el maestro. Fui invitado por el ministro á escribir una memoria sobre ese asunto. ¿Han llegado esos señores de Madrid? Este perro es muy maltratado por su dueño. La operación fué concluida con toda felicidad. El libro que he dado á mi prima está escrito (*written*) por un hombre muy docto (*learned*). El imperio de los Césares se ha sostenido mucho tiempo sólo por su extensión y su nombre. Si su padre no hubiera muerto, no se vería (*he would not see [find] himself*) en tanto apuro.

El soberbio y feroz Atila fué vencido por los francos y los godos. Julio César, encumbrado por la fortuna al más alto grado del poder, fué asesinado por Bruto y sus compañeros.

Traducción. 45.

Wallenstein was murdered by two of his officers. The hypocrite is despised by all, and is loved by none. Leather and wool *were* much *in demand*. By whom has the letter been signed? We were invited a long time ago, but we had no time to come. The traveller and his companions were murdered by the robbers. (The) king Gustavus Adolphus of Sweden was killed at Lützen. They say that a '*great many*' (*muchos*) soldiers have been wounded in the battle. Do they think (believe) that the preliminaries of (the) peace have been signed? They assure that these goods are selling well. One is mistaken, if one flatters oneself. My father (has) said that all the goods have been sold (*tr.* have sold themselves). When did the gentleman arrive? The friends of the merchant had all been invited. By whom have the Goths been conquered? This book has been written by one of the first Spanish poets. Frequently one does not believe what one affirms (before) to others. The pupils would have been praised by their masters if they had done their translations without any mistakes (*falta*).

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Por quién fué asesinado Julio César? | Por Bruto y sus compañeros. |
| ¿Ha llegado ayer su amigo de V.? | No, ha llegado hoy. |
| ¿Cuándo ha muerto? | Ha muerto ayer; fué muerto por otro en una riña (<i>in a quarrel</i>). |
| ¿Por quiénes fué vencido Atila? | El soberbio y feroz Atila fué vencido por los francos y los godos. |
| ¿Cómo se concluyó la operación? | Fué concluida con toda felicidad. |
| ¿Por quién está escrito ese libro? | Está escrito por un hombre muy docto. |
| ¿Cuándo murió Gustavo Adolfo? | Fué muerto en la batalla de Lützen. |
| ¿Ha muerto el militar que ha sido herido? | No ha muerto; al contrario, está mejor hoy que ayer. |
| ¿Por quién serán corregidas nuestras traducciones? | Serán corregidas por nuestro maestro. |
| ¿Quién es aborrecido? | El embustero es aborrecido de todo el mundo. |

- ¿Cuándo se ha celebrado (*taken place*) la boda (*the wedding*)? Se ha celebrado hoy.
- ¿Qué se dice de nuevo en la ciudad? Dicen que Su Majestad el emperador ha llegado.

Reading Exercise.

Geografía de España. (Continuación.)

Gobierno.

El gobierno de España es monárquico, constitucional, hereditario; el heredero del trono tiene el título de Príncipe de Asturias. El poder legislativo reside en las Cortes, compuestas del Congreso de Diputados y del Senado; el poder ejecutivo reside en el Rey y en el Ministerio, compuesto de un Presidente del Consejo de Ministros y ocho ministros que son, el ministro de Estado, el ministro de Gracia y Justicia, el ministro de Hacienda, el ministro de la Gobernación, el ministro de Instrucción Pública, el ministro de Agricultura, el ministro de la Guerra y el ministro de Marina. España está dividida en cuarenta y nueve provincias y tiene por capital Madrid. — El gobierno local de cada provincia depende de un Gobernador y de la Diputación Provincial; el gobierno local de cada término municipal depende de un Alcalde y del Ayuntamiento ó Municipio. Del gobernador dependen los guardias civiles y los polizontes, del Alcalde dependen los municipales.

La Administración de Justicia tiene en cada término municipal un juez municipal para las faltas menores, y en cada provincia varios partidos judiciales con jueces de primera instancia para las causas civiles y criminales; cierto número de partidos judiciales forman una Audiencia Territorial con sus Magistrados, y en Madrid reside el Tribunal Supremo, para la tercera y última apelación.

Twenty-eighth Lesson. — Lección veintiocho.

Pronominal or Reflective Verbs. — Verbos pronominales ó reflexivos.

These verbs are called *pronominal* or *reflective*, because their object is a personal pronoun, referring to and identical with the subject. In the *simple tenses* this pronoun, with very few exceptions, may either *precede* or *follow* the verb. In the latter case it is subjoined to the verb.

Reflective verbs are very frequent in Spanish, a great many of them being rendered in English by *neuter verbs* — that is to say, by a verb without a direct object. Example:

Me alegro (or *alégrome*), I rejoice.

Infinitive.

Alegrarse, to rejoice.

Indicative.

Present.

Sing. Me alegro (*alégrome*), I rejoice.

te alegras (*alégraste*), thou rejoicest.

se alegra (*alégrase*), he rejoices.

Plur. Nos alegramos (*alegrámosnos*), we rejoice.

os alegráis, you rejoice.

se alegran (*alégranse*), they rejoice.

Imperfect.

Sing. Me alegraba (*alegrábame*), I rejoiced.

te alegrabas (*alegrábaste*), thou rejoicest.

se alegraba (*alegrábase*), he rejoiced.

Plur. Nos alegrábamos (*alegrábamosnos*), we rejoiced.

os alegrabais, you rejoiced.

se alegraban (*alegrábanse*), they rejoiced.

Definite.

Sing. Me alegré (*alegréme*), I rejoiced.

te alegraste, thou rejoicest.

se alegró (*alegróse*), he rejoiced.

Plur. Nos alegramos (*alegrámosnos*), we rejoiced.

os alegrasteis, you rejoiced.

se alegraron (*alegráronse*), they rejoiced.

Future.

Me alegraré, I shall rejoice.

te alegrarás, thou wilt rejoice.

se alegrará, he will rejoice, etc.

Conditional.

Me alegraría, I should rejoice.

te alegrarías, thou wouldst rejoice, etc.

Imperative.

Alégrate, rejoice (thou)!

alegraos, rejoice (you *plur.*)!

alegrémonos, let us rejoice! (See Less. 24, page 101.)

Polite form :

Sing. alegrase V., rejoice (you)!*Plur. alegrense Vds.*, rejoice (you)!

Subjunctive.

*Present.**Me alegre*, I rejoice.*te alegres*, thou rejoice, etc.*Imperfect.**Me alegrase*, I might rejoice.*te alegrases*, thou mightest rejoice, etc.*Future.**Me alegrare*, (that) I shall rejoice, etc.*Conditional.**Me alegrara*, (that) I should rejoice.

Gerund.

Alegrándose, rejoicing.

Compound Tenses.

Indicative.

*Perfect.**Me he alegrado*, I have rejoiced.*te has alegrado*, thou hast rejoiced, etc.*Pluperfect.**Me había alegrado*, I had rejoiced, etc.*2nd Pluperfect.**Me hube alegrado*, I had rejoiced, etc.*Compound Future.**Me habré alegrado*, I shall have rejoiced, etc.*Compound Conditional.**Me habría alegrado*, I should have rejoiced, etc.

Subjunctive.

*Perfect.**Me haya alegrado*, I have rejoiced, etc.*Pluperfect.**Me hubiese alegrado*, (that) I had rejoiced, etc.*Compound Future.**Me hubiere alegrado*, (that) I shall have rejoiced.*Compound Conditional.**Me hubiera alegrado*, (that) I should have rejoiced.

Notes.

1. Very often the Spanish reflexive form of the verb implies *separation* or *isolation*. Thus: *estar* is "to be," *estarse*, "to be alone"; *ir* "to go," *irse*, "to go away."*

2. Likewise, verbs denoting a state of *transition* are very frequently rendered by the Spanish reflexive verb. Thus: *dormir*, to sleep, *dormirse*, to fall asleep; *morir*, to die, *morirse*, to die away (French: "se mourir"); *ahogarse*, to be drowned; *quemarse*, to be burned down, etc.

3. Again, the Spanish reflexive form is either redundant or modifies the meaning of the verb in a way which, in English, must be rendered by an *adverb* or in some other mode; thus:

beber, to drink, *beberse*, to drink (out).

comer, to eat, *comerse*, to eat up.

jugar, to gamble, *jugarse*, to gamble away.

Sometimes the meaning of the verb is rendered more emphatic by the reflexive form. Thus:

Estar sin hacer nada, to be doing nothing.

Pasarse el día leyendo, to read the whole day.

4. At others the reflexive form is used in conjunction with the article to translate the English possessive:

Quemarse la mano, to burn one's hand.

Cortarse un dedo, to cut one's finger.

5. Finally, in the *plural*, the Spanish reflexive verb expresses *reciprocity*; thus: *se aman* means "they love themselves" and also "they love each other," or "one another." Where a misconception might arise, the word *mismo*, *-a*, should be added to correspond with "self," and *el uno al otro*, etc.; for "one another, each other," etc.

N.B.—In English a great many verbs are *neuter* or *passive*, which in Spanish require the reflexive form. Such verbs are:

llamarse, to be called or named (French: *s'appeler*).

enojarse, to grow angry.

levantarse, to rise.

acostarse, to go to bed.

pasearse, to take a walk.

sentarse, to sit down, to take a seat.

* In narratives, the Imperfect of *ser*, to be, used reflexively, corresponds with the English *there was in days of yore*, *there was in olden times*, etc. Ex.: *Érase un rey*, etc. There was in olden times a king, etc.

Words.

<i>La orden</i> , the order.	<i>incomodarse</i> , to take pains, to trouble oneself.
<i>la razón</i> , the reason.	<i>ordenar</i> , to order.
<i>la marcha</i> , the march.	<i>retirar</i> , to draw (or go) back, retire.
<i>el bolsillo</i> , the pocket, the purse.	<i>divertirse</i> , to amuse oneself.
<i>el jefe</i> , the chief.	<i>apartarse</i> , to stand away, to keep back.
<i>la mesa</i> , the table.	<i>acomodarse</i> , to conform oneself to
<i>los naipes</i> , the cards.	<i>sacar</i> , to take out
<i>la bondad</i> , the goodness.	<i>saber</i> , to know.
<i>el camino real</i> (or <i>la carretera</i>), the main-road.	<i>dió</i> (3rd sing. def.), gave.
<i>el juego</i> , the game (French <i>jeu</i>).	<i>muy de mañana</i> , very early (early in the morning).
<i>engañarse</i> , to be mistaken.	<i>á orillas</i> , at the side, brink, border, edge, etc.
<i>jugar</i> (<i>á los naipes</i> or <i>á las cartas</i>), to play (cards).	
<i>se juega</i> , one plays, they play, etc.	
<i>sentarse</i> , to sit down.	

luego que, as soon as.

Reading Exercise. 46.

V. se engaña. Los hombres se han engañado siempre unos á otros. Unas veces se juega á los naipes y otras veces se habla sobre alguna cosa. ¡Tenga V. la bondad de sentarse! No se incomode V. ¿Se ha divertido mucho V. ayer en el baile (*ball, dance*)? Me alegro mucho que se haya divertido V. tanto (*so well*). V. se ha acostado tarde, pero yo me he levantado muy de mañana. Dióse la orden y todos se dispusieron (*prepared themselves*) á retirarse. Se ordenó á los soldados que se apartasen del camino real. Sentéme al pié de un árbol que estaba á orillas del camino, y para divertirme saqué (see Lesson 22, 1) un libro que tenía en el bolsillo. Si no se acomodare V. á la vida que hago (*I lead*), será dueño (*to be at liberty*) de retirarse. Sábetes que no te he traído (*brought*) aquí *para que* (*that*) te mueras de hambre. Luego que nos levantamos (*Def.*) de la mesa, el criado me dió la carta.

Traducción. 47.

My mother was (transl. *has been*) mistaken, when she gave (tr. *dando* . . . giving . . .) you the letter. If I had been mistaken, I should have told (you so) it you. Get up, child! Rise, sir! I gave myself much trouble to pull the book out of my pocket. We did not deviate from the main-road. Leave (from *apartarse de* . . .) this society! Shall we sit down at the foot of that tree? We should draw back if the chief (gave the order) ordered it. Did they not state (*tr.* was not given [fr. *darse*]) the reason of this order? Do they play at

cards (fr. *jugarse*) every night at your cousin's?* Cards are seldom played (*i.e.*, they seldom play) there, but they (talk about) speak of (a great) many things. Do not trouble (yourself), sir, I have already (*ya, prec.*) taken [a] seat (fr. *sentarse*). Yesterday I rose at 4 o'clock, and to-morrow I shall likewise (*también*) rise at 4 o'clock. Are you not afraid to abuse (*abusar de . . .*) my goodness? I was alone (see 1) in my room when the footman gave me the letter. There was once a king who had a daughter. Alas (*¡Ay de mí!*)! the unhappy man will be drowned! We love ourselves and we love one another. How can you laugh at (*de*) the misfortune of others?

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Se ha engañado V.? | Perdone V., no me he engañado. |
| ¿Á qué hora se levanta V. cada día? | Me levanto á las cinco ó seis de la mañana. |
| ¿Cuándo se acuesta** V. (<i>go to bed</i>)? | Me acuesto tarde (<i>late</i>), á las diez ú*** once, y me levanto temprano (<i>early</i>). |
| ¿Quiere V. pasearse conmigo? | Gracias, no tengo tiempo ahora. |
| ¿No se ha divertido V. ayer en el teatro? | Al contrario, me he divertido muchísimo. |
| ¿Que se ordenó á los soldados? | Se les ordenó que se apartasen del camino real. |
| ¿Cuándo le dió á V. la carta el criado? | Luego que nos levantamos de la mesa. |
| ¿Dónde se sentó V.? | Me senté al pié de un árbol. |
| ¿Por qué no juega V. á los naipes? | Porque no me gusta (<i>I do not like</i>) el juego (<i>playing [cards]</i>). |

Reading Exercise.

Soneto.

Los padres y los hijos.

Un enjambre de pájaros metidos
 en jaula de metal guardó un cabrero,
 y á cuidarlos voló desde el otero
 la pareja de padres afigidos.

Si aquí, dijo el pastor, vienen unidos
 sus hijos á cuidar con tanto esmero,
 ver como cuidan á los padres quiero.
 los hijos por amor y agradecidos.

* *En casa de su primo.* The English phrase with the Saxon genitive: at my brother's, cousin's, butcher's, tailor's, etc., should be rendered with *en casa de*, at the house of

** See Lesson 36. — *** See Lesson 33, 2.

Deja entra redes la pareja envuelta,
la puerta abre el pastor del duro alambre,
cierra á los padres y á los hijos suelta.

Huyó de los hijuelos el enjambre,
y como en vano se esperó su vuelta,
mató á los padres el dolor y el hambre.

(Campoamor.)

Twenty-ninth Lesson. — Lección veintinueve.

Impersonal Verbs. — Verbos unipersonales.

1. These verbs are either *really impersonal*, i.e., they are only used in the third person singular, as *llueve* — it rains, or they are used as impersonal verbs, as *parece*, it seems, etc.

True impersonal verbs are:

<i>Llover</i> , to rain	— <i>llueve</i> , it rains.
<i>helar</i> , to freeze	— <i>hiela</i> , it freezes.
<i>nevar</i> , to snow	— <i>nieva</i> , it snows.
<i>tronar</i> , to thunder	— <i>trueno</i> , it thunders.
<i>escarchar</i> , to be a hoar frost	— <i>escarcha</i> , it is a hoar frost.
<i>relampaguear</i> , to lighten	— <i>relampaguéa</i> , it lightens.
<i>lloviznar</i> , to drizzle	— <i>llovizna</i> , it drizzles.
<i>granizar</i> , to hail	— <i>graniza</i> , it hails.
<i>amanecer</i> *, to dawn, to grow light	— <i>amanece</i> , it dawns.
<i>anochecer</i> , to grow dark	— <i>anochece</i> , it is growing dark.

2. Many others are coupled with *hacer*, to make, *ser*, to be, *haber*, to have, *valer*, to be worth, etc., as:

Es preciso, it is necessary, one must (see 4).

es justo, it is just.

es verdad, it is true.

es cierto, it is certain, sure.

hace calor, it is hot (il fait chaud).

hace frío, it is cold (il fait froid).

hace luna, the moon shines.

ocho días hace, it is a week ago.

mucho tiempo hace, it is a long while.

hay un año, it is a year ago.

* *Amanecer* and *anochecer* are also *personally* used as:
Amanecí en París, I arrived in Paris at daybreak.

hay muchos hombres, there are many persons.
más vale tarde que nunca, better late than never.
más valdría, it would be better.

3. As already stated (Lesson 8, 5), *there is*, plur. *there are*, is rendered by *hay*. In all the tenses of this impersonal verb, the 3rd pers. *sing.* of *haber* is used, whether followed by a singular or by a plural, as:

Hubo un hombre, there was a man. (*Il y avait un homme.*)

Hubo hombres, there were men. (*Il y avait des hommes.*)

(When speaking of time, *hay* is almost always replaced by *hace*, which corresponds with *ago*; thus: *hace dos años*, two years ago.)

If *some*, or *any*, joined to "there is" or "there are", refers to a *foregoing* substantive (where the French use *en*, and the Italians *ne*), the Spanish language requires the *personal* pronoun, which then agrees with the preceding substantive in gender and number. Thus:

If there are cowards, he is one.

Es cobarde si los hay.

I shall give you some books, if there be any.

Te daré libros, si los hay.

We shall eat cherries, if there be any.

Comeremos guindas, si las hay.

4. The English verbs *must*, *to be obliged*, etc., are commonly rendered by *deber*, as:

Se debe escribir, one must write.

Very often their meaning is expressed by *haber de . . .*, *tener que . . .* (see Lesson 8, 6) or *es preciso*, *es necesario*, *es menester* with *que* and the subjunctive mood, thus:

You must expect my brother.

Se ha de esperar á mi hermano, or:

Se tiene que esperar á mi hermano, or:

Es preciso (menester, necesario) esperar (or que se espere) á mi hermano (= It is necessary to . . .).

If the nominative is the indefinite pronoun *one*, as: *One must wait*, etc., the infinitive is used, as in English; thus:

Es menester esperar, one must wait.

Words.

<i>El remedio</i> , the remedy.	<i>la tronada</i> , the thunderstorm.
<i>la puerta</i> , the door*.	<i>callar</i> , to be silent.
<i>el nombre</i> , the name.	<i>aprender</i> , to learn.
<i>el calor</i> , the heat.	<i>creer</i> , to believe.
<i>el cuarto</i> , the room.	<i>enseñar</i> , to teach.
<i>la ciencia</i> , the science.	<i>adivinar</i> , to guess.
<i>el almacén</i> , the shop.	<i>demasiado</i> , too, too much.
<i>pronto</i> , quick, swift, prompt.	

Reading Exercise. 48.

¿Llueve? No, graniza. Hace un mes que estuve en su casa. No hay otro remedio que esperar. Jamás hubo rey tan bueno como él. ¿Hay alguno á la puerta? Más vale el buen nombre que muchas riquezas. Más vale callar que hablar mal. Hace demasiado calor en su cuarto de V. Este pobre muchacho tiene hambre y frío. Es preciso estudiar mucho para aprender bien una lengua. Te daré dinero, si lo hay. Hay hombres que creen que había una ciencia que enseñaba á adivinar lo futuro. Hacía buen tiempo ayer cuando llegó mi hermano. Ha helado hoy, y ayer ha escarchado. Hace un año que no he visto á mi hermana. Ocho días hace que estuvimos en Viena. ¿Qué debemos hacer? Debemos ir al mercado para comprar pan y frutas. Es preciso que la criada me llame temprano. Ha de venir V. pronto para ir al almacén.

Traducción. 49.

Did it rain yesterday? No, it snowed. I think (*creo*) (that) it will snow. It thunders and lightens. It has thundered and lightened. Does it rain? No, it does not rain, it drizzles. *I arrived at night (anochece)* at Madrid. *It was daybreak when we arrived (amanecer)* at Toledo. There are many friends who are no (*tr. not*) better than enemies. Was there much money in that purse? I think there were 10 dollars in it. It is too hot (*tr. warm*) to-day; we shall have a thunderstorm. It is too cold in this room. I should give you some money, if I had some (*any*). He has given him no money, because he had none. I must write a few letters to-day; yesterday I was obliged to write six. It is necessary to work if one wishes to learn something. My brother must wait till (*hasta que*) my sister comes. Where were you last year? A year ago I was at Seville, and two years ago I was at Rome. Is it true (*verdad*) that you have written this letter? I have written it a long time ago.

* *el puerto*, the harbour; French: *le port*.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|--|
| ¿Hace frío hoy? | Al contrario, hace mucho calor. |
| ¿Tiene V. hambre? | No tengo hambre, pero tengo sed. |
| ¿Es verdad que su hermano de V. ha llegado esta mañana? | No ha llegado esta mañana; llegará esta noche. |
| ¿Es cierto que el rey ha muerto? | Todavía no (<i>not yet</i>) ha muerto, pero está malísimo. |
| ¿Hay alguno en este cuarto? | No, no hay ninguno. |
| ¿Cuánto tiempo hace que estuvo V. en París? | Dos años hace que estuve allí. |
| ¿Es preciso que espere yo á su padre de V.? | No es menester esperarle. |
| ¿Debe V. ir al mercado? | Debo ir allá. |
| ¿Es verdad que ha comprado V. algunos libros? | No, señor, no es verdad, no he comprado nada. |
| ¿Cuántos años hace que está V. en esta ciudad? | Hace tres años y algunos meses. |

Reading Exercise.

Geografía de España. (Continuación.)

Instrucción Pública.

La Instrucción Pública se dá en España en las Escuelas Públicas (ó en las escuelas y colegios particulares), en las Escuelas Normales, en los Institutos, y en las Universidades. Las Escuelas Públicas están sostenidas por los Ayuntamientos, los Institutos por las Diputaciones Provinciales, y las Universidades por el Estado. En las Escuelas Públicas se dá la enseñanza elemental, en las Escuelas Normales la enseñanza superior, ó sea la preparación para maestros y maestras; en los Institutos se estudia la segunda enseñanza, que termina con el grado de bachiller, y en las Universidades se estudia facultad, que termina con el grado de Licenciado: los Institutos y las Universidades están abiertos á las mujeres. En los colegios particulares se dá tambien la segunda enseñanza. El curso académico empieza el primero de octubre y termina el 31 de mayo. En España hay diez Universidades (Barcelona, Granada, Madrid, Oviedo, Salamanca, Santiago, Sevilla, Valencia, Valladolid y Zaragoza) y 59 Institutos, de los cuales hay uno en cada capital de Provincia. — La enseñanza primaria es obligatoria y gratuita, pero á pesar de eso solo un 30 por 100 de la población sabe leer y escribir.

Thirtieth Lesson. — Lección treinta.

Adverbs. — Adverbios.

Adverbs modify *verbs*, *adjectives*, or *other adverbs*. They denote *manner*, *time*, *place*, *motion*, *order*, *quantity*, *quality*, etc.

They are either *proper adverbs* (see next Lesson), as *bien*, well; *demasiado*, too, too much, etc., or formed from *adjectives* or *participles* by the addition of the termination *-mente*, under the following Rules.

Rules.

1. If the adjective ends in *-o*, the adverb is formed by adding *-mente* to the *feminine* form in *-a*, thus:

docto, learned, fem. *docta*, adv. *doctamente*.
diestro, dexterous, > *diestra*, > *diestramente*.

2. If the adjective does *not* end in *-o*, *-mente* is simply added to the termination, thus:

fácil, easy, adv. *fácilmente*.
constante, constant, > *constantemente*.

Note.—A peculiarity of the Spanish language is that when several adverbs ending in *-mente* follow each other, this termination is, for the sake of euphony, added to the *last* only. Thus:

Cicerón escribió clara, concisa y elegantemente.
 Cicero wrote distinctly, concisely, and elegantly.

(Instead of: *claramente, concisamente y elegantemente*.)

An adverb in *-mente*, not derived from an adjective ending in *-o*, may not come between adverbs derived from adjectives in *-o*, but should, for the sake of euphony, be placed at the end. Thus the sentence:

Cicero wrote learnedly, elegantly, concisely, and distinctly, may not be translated:

Cicerón escribió docta, elegantemente, concisa y claramente, but only:

Ciceron escribió docta, concisa, clara y elegantemente.*

* Likewise, if two or more adverbs in *-mente*, not derived from adjectives in *-o*, follow each other, the termination *-mente* of all the adverbs, except the last, may be dropped: thus, instead of *prudentemente y lealmente* we may also say *prudente y lealmente* (prudently and loyally).

3. The Spanish adverb in general takes its place *after* the verb; thus:

El discípulo estudia siempre su lección.

The pupil always studies his lesson.

In compound tenses the adverb cannot be placed *between* the verb and the auxiliary, as in English, but it must *always follow* the past participle, thus:

El discípulo ha estudiado siempre su lección.

The pupil has *always* studied his lesson.

N.B.—Adverbs of negation are excepted:

El discípulo no estudia. (See page 136, § 5.)

4. Adverbs form their *comparative* like adjectives (see Lesson 20), as:

Compar.

*Doctamente, más doctamente que,
ménos doctamente que,
tan doctamente como.*

The *superlative*, used to express *comparison*, does not differ in form from the comparative, and thus has *no article*; it can always be gathered from the context, whether the comparative or superlative of the adverb is to be put in English; *e.g.*:

Manuelito lee el francés peor que su hermana.

The little Emanuel reads French worse than his sister.

But: *De todos los discípulos tú eres el que te portaste peor.*

Of all the pupils, you are the one who behaved the worst.

Adverbs are also derived from the *absolute superl.* of the adjectives, by changing *ísimo* in *ísimamente*, as:

Doctísimo, adv. *doctísimamente*, in a very learned manner.

(We need not add that here also the termination *-mente* is affixed to the *feminine* form in *a*.)

5. *Irregular* are:

<i>bien</i> , well,	<i>mejor</i> , better,	<i>lo mejor</i> , the best.
<i>mal</i> , badly,	<i>peor</i> , worse,	<i>lo peor</i> , the worst.
<i>mucho</i> , very,	<i>más</i> , more,	<i>lo más</i> , the most.
<i>poco</i> , little,	<i>menos</i> , less,	<i>lo menos</i> , the least.

Absolute Sup. of *mal*, *pésimamente*.

The following are *both* adjectives and adverbs:

Bastante, enough, but also adv. *bastantemente*;

cierto, certain, » » » *ciertamente*, certainly;

demasiado, too, too much, etc., but also adv. *demasiadamente*;

derecho, right, but also adv. *derechamente*, rightly;
*solo**, alone, > > > *solamente*, only, solely;
temprano, early > > > *tempranamente*.

The signification of the following adverbs differs from that of the corresponding adjectives:

Alto, high, aloud — *altamente*, magnificently, proudly.
bajo, low, in a low voice — *bajamente*, basely, vilely.
caro, dear, beloved — *caramente*, dearly.
primero, first, before — *primeramente*, firstly. [promptly].
pronto, direct, forthwith — *prontamente*, (also = *pronto*),

Words.

<i>El orador</i> , the orator.	<i>digno</i> , -a, worthy.
<i>el verano</i> , the summer.	<i>ancho</i> , -a, broad, large.
<i>el embajador</i> , the ambassador.	<i>estrecho</i> , -a, narrow.
<i>el actor</i> , the actor.	<i>constante</i> , constant.
<i>el deseo</i> , the desire.	<i>generoso</i> , -a, generous.
<i>el gozo</i> , the pleasure.	<i>raro</i> , -a, rare, seldom.
<i>el lugar</i> , the village.	<i>perdonar</i> , to pardon.
<i>la razón</i> , the reason.	<i>levantarse</i> , to get up.
<i>tener razón</i> ** , to be right.	<i>ver</i> (irr.), to see.
<i>el consejo</i> , the advice.	<i>llenar</i> , to fill.
<i>la voluntad</i> , the will.	<i>sigar</i> , subj. pres. of <i>seguir</i> , to follow.
<i>la honradez</i> , the honesty, de-	<i>vestir</i> , to clothe, to dress.
<i>la obra</i> , the work. [cency.	<i>conservar</i> , to preserve.
<i>el inventor</i> , the inventor.	<i>tratar</i> , to treat.
<i>la bota</i> , the boot.	<i>continuar</i> , to continue.
<i>próximo</i> , -a, near, next.	<i>incomodar</i> , to molest, incom-
<i>propio</i> , -a, proper.	<i>venir bien</i> , to fit. [mode.
<i>capaz</i> , capable.	

Reading Exercise. 50.

Este hombre habla muy elocuentemente. Habla mejor que el otro orador. Me ha dado V. demasiado dinero. Yo no tengo bastante. En verano me levanto cada día temprano. El actor no habla bastante alto. ¡Hable V. bajo! El autor ha escrito clara, concisa y elegantemente. El deseo de ver la ciudad y principalmente el palacio real (*royal* —) me llenó de gozo. Los lugares próximos á una gran ciudad venden bien sus frutos. La razón quiere que el hombre siga más los prudentes consejos que no (*than*) su propia voluntad. El rey dió órdenes para vestir ricamente á los pobres. La honradez

* *solo*, alone (adjective) without accent, *sólo*, only (adverb) with accent.

** *Tener razón*, French: *Avoir raison*.

se conserva tratando siempre derechamente con los hombres. Cervantes hizo ver (*showed, proved; lit. made see*) que ninguna pluma era capaz de continuar dignamente su obra, sino la de su inventor. Este vestido me incomoda mucho; no es bastante ancho. Las botas me son demasiado estrechas; no me vienen bien. Cuando uno quiere hablar de una obra, es menester que la vea primero.

Traducción. 51.

This author writes well. The orator has spoken distinctly, concisely, and elegantly. He has sent me too much money. He writes too much; if he wrote less he would write more elegantly and more distinctly. This actor speaks too low. Do speak loud, sir! I rose (have risen) very early to-day. He has certainly done it. The lawyer spoke very learnedly, but not distinctly enough. Your coat is better made than mine; it fits you very well. I gave (have given) money enough to my son. Why have you followed your own will more than (*que no*) the wise advice of your friends? The ambassadors were all very richly dressed. I always learn my lesson, and I have always learned it well. He spoke of a work which he had never seen before. Nobody is always happy in this world. The king has generously pardoned his enemies. Which man has always spoken well? We (have) arrived to-day very early. (The) rich people are seldom happy.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Cómo ha hablado este hombre? | Ha hablado elocuentísimamente. |
| ¿Cómo escribió Cicerón? | Cicerón escribió concisa, clara y elegantemente. |
| ¿Ha estudiado V. la lección? | He estudiado siempre mis lecciones. |
| ¿Quién es siempre feliz en este mundo? | Nadie. |
| ¿Ha dado V. bastante dinero á su hijo? | Le he dado demasiado. |
| ¿Que quiere la razón? | Que el hombre siga los prudentes consejos. |
| ¿Cómo su conserva la honradez? | Tratando siempre derechamente con los otros. |
| ¿Qué hizo ver Cervantes? | Que otra pluma no era capaz de continuar dignamente su obra. |
| ¿Por qué le incomoda á V. su vestido? | Porque no es bastante ancho. |
| ¿No le vienen bien á V. sus botas? | No, son demasiado estrechas. |

Reading Exercise.

Soneto.

Los Hijos y los Padres.

Ni arrastrada un pastor llevar podía
 Á una cabra infeliz que oía amante
 Balar detrás al hijo, que, inconstante
 Marchar junto á la madre no quería.
 — ¡Necio! — al pastor un sabio le decía,
 — Al que llevas detrás, ponle delante;
 Echate el hijo al hombro, y al instante
 La madre verás ir tras de la cría. —

Tal consejo el pastor creyó sencillo,
 Cogió la cría y se marchó corriendo
 Llevando al animal sobre el hatillo.

La cabra sin ramal los fué siguiendo,
 Mas siguiendo tan cerca al cabritillo,
 Que los piés por detrás le iba lamiendo.

[Campoamor.]

Thirty-first Lesson. — Lección treinta y una.

The Adverbs continued.

In the foregoing Lesson we observed that besides the adverbs derived from adjectives or participles by addition of the termination *-mente*, there are a great many proper adverbs denoting *place*, *time*, *order*, *manner*, etc. Thus we have 1. Adverbs of *place*. 2. Adverbs of *time*. 3. Adverbs of *manner*. 4. Adverbs of *quantity*. 5. Adverbs of *affirmation*, *negation*, and *doubt*.

There are also *adverbial expressions*—*i. e.*, *compounds* of substantives, adjectives, etc., with *prepositions*, as: *por fuerza*, on compulsion, *en poco tiempo*, soon, etc.

1. Adverbs of Place.

Aquí, here.

ahí, there.

allá, there (= thither).

acá, here (= hither).

donde, where.

adonde, } whither.

á donde, } whither.

de donde, whence.

arriba, up, above.

cerca, near, about.

abajo, down, below.

debajo, beneath.

enfrente, opposite.

fuera, } outside.

afuera, } outside.

delante, in front.

adelante, forward, on.

detrás, behind.

atrás, backward, behind.

junto, near, next to . . .

encima, upon, on.

lejos, far.

dentro, within, inside.

adentro, towards the interior.

N.B.—Adverbs of place answer the question *¿dónde?* where?

Aquí, *allí*, are used with verbs of rest; *acá*, *allá*, with verbs of motion; *ahí*, with either.

Aquí, *acá*, refer to the place where the speaker is;

ahí, to the place where the person addressed is;

allí, *allá*, to any other place more or less distant from both.

2. Adverbs of Time.

Cuando, when.

ayer, yesterday.

hoy, to-day.

mañana, to-morrow.

luego, directly, immediately.

tarde, late.

temprano, early.

siempre, always.

despacio, slowly.

presto, } quickly.

pronto, }

aún, yet.

á menudo, often.

entonces, then, afterwards.

después, after.

ya, already.

pues, then, afterwards.

todavía, still.

aprisa, quickly.

ahora, now.

interín, meanwhile.

N.B.—Adverbs of time answer the question *¿cuándo?* when?

Cuando is followed by the Indicative in speaking of customary actions or positive facts, and by the Subjunctive if denoting possibility, contingency, or futurity:

Cuando voy á paseo voy solo.

Whenever I go for a walk, I go alone.

Cuando venga se lo diré.

I will tell him when he comes.

The adverb *recientemente*, recently, drops its last three syllables before *participles* and adjectives used instead of *participles*, as:

Un niño recién (= recientemente) nacido.

A new-born child.

Los recién llegados.

The new comers.

Se embarcaron con cuatro personas de las recién libres (= libradas). Cerv.

They embarked with four persons of the recently rescued (from among those who had been recently rescued).

3. Adverbs of Manner.

<i>Como</i> , how.	<i>recio (reciamente)</i> , violently,
<i>bien</i> , well.	severely.
<i>mal</i> , badly.	<i>aparte</i> , separately.
<i>así</i> , so, thus.	<i>quedo</i> , quietly.
<i>alto</i> , aloud.	<i>medianamente</i> , middling, tole-
<i>bajo</i> , low, softly, gently.	<i>casi</i> , almost, nearly. [rably.

N.B.—Adverbs of manner answer the question *¿cómo?* how?

Adverbs in *-mente* (Lesson 30) belong to this class, as: *dulcemente*, sweetly; *lealmente*, loyally.

The same meaning may be expressed in the two following ways:

Con dulzura, or *de un modo (de una manera) dulce*, in a sweet manner.

4. Adverbs of Quantity.

<i>Cuanto</i> , how much.	<i>demasiado</i> , too, too much.
<i>mucho</i> , much.	<i>además</i> , besides.
<i>muy</i> , very, much.	<i>tan, tanto</i> , so much.
<i>más</i> , more.	<i>cuan, cuanto</i> , how much.
<i>bastante</i> , enough.	<i>harto</i> , enough.
<i>poco</i> , little.	<i>apenas</i> , scarcely.

N.B.—Adverbs of quantity answer the question *¿cuánto?* how much?

Mucho means *great in quantity, price, also long in duration*, and is equivalent to *much, very much, too much; a great deal; long, a long time*. It is used before *más (more)*, and *menos (less)*, *antes (before)*, and *después (after)*, with comparatives, and with active verbs, and substantives. Finally, it may stand by itself; *i.e.*:

mucho más (menos), much more (less).

mucho mejor (peor), much better (worse).

mucho antes (después), much before (after).

¿Come mucho? — *Mucho*. Does he eat much? — Very much.

Muy is an abbreviation of *mucho*, it means *high degree*, and is generally translated by *very, great*. It is used *before adjectives, participles, and adverbs*; as an exception before the comparatives *anterior (earlier)*, *posterior (later)*, *superior (superior)*, and *inferior (inferior)*; with *ser* and *estar* and their equivalents, and before almost all adverbial phrases. Finally, it never stands by itself:

muy grande (pequeño), very large (small).

muy amado (aborrecido), very much loved (hated).

muy temprano (tarde), very early (late).

muy anterior (posterior), much earlier (later).

es muy bueno, he is very good.

está muy contento, he is very pleased.

muy de tarde en tarde, very seldom.

¿Está enfermo? — y mucho (not *muy*). — Is he ill?

Very ill indeed.

Tan and *tanto* follow the same rules as *muy* and *mucho*, thus:

Le he estimado tanto, I have esteemed him so much!

Whereas:

Él es tan estimado como . . ., he is no less esteemed than . . . (*lit.* quite as much as . . .).

5. Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, and Doubt.

Sí, yes.

siempre, always.

cierto (ciertamente), certainly.

no, no.

nunca, never.

jamás, ever, never.

*nunca jamás** never.

quizá,

quizás,

tal vez,

acaso,

ya no,

no . . . ya,

} perhaps.

} no more.

N.B.—The negative terms *nunca*, *jamás*, *nada* (nothing), *ninguno*, and *nadie* (nobody) require *no*, if they follow the verb, but not if they precede it, as:

No hay ninguno, there is none; but: *Ninguno hay*.

No se dice nada, nothing is said; but: *Nada se dice*.

No lo creí jamás, I never believed it; but: *jamás lo creí*.

With *ni* — *ni* (neither — nor) the case is much the same:

No tengo ni amigos ni dinero.

I have neither friends nor money.

Ni amigos, ni dinero tengo.

Sometimes, however, the first *ni* may be omitted, as:

No es bueno ni malo.

He is neither good nor bad.

6. Adverbial Expressions.

Por fuerza, on compulsion.

por extenso, in detail, amply, fully.

por la mañana, in the morning.

por delante, in front.

sin falta, surely, assuredly.

por desgracia, unfortunately.

á pierna suelta, carelessly.

en voz alta, aloud.

* Most emphatic.

<i>en poco tiempo</i> , soon, in a short time.	<i>cuanto antes</i> , as soon as possible.
<i>sobremenera</i> , immensely, immoderately.	<i>de buena gana</i> , willingly.
<i>de repente</i> , suddenly.	<i>al pié de la letra</i> , literally, etc.
<i>de día</i> , in daytime.	<i>ahora mismo</i> , at once, this very moment.
<i>de día en día</i> , daily.	<i>á veces</i> , sometimes.
<i>de tarde en tarde</i> , now and then, seldom.	<i>á la derecha</i> , on (to) the right.
	<i>á menudo</i> , often.
	<i>á oscuras</i> , in the dark.

Words.

<i>La gloria</i> , the glory.	<i>abhorrecer</i> , to abhor, to detest.
<i>el súbdito</i> , the subject.	<i>atreverse</i> , to dare.
<i>el temor</i> , the fear.	<i>venir á las manos</i> , to come to blows.
<i>el correo</i> , the post.	<i>arriesgar</i> , to be at stake, to risk.
<i>el trabajo</i> , the labour, work.	<i>dudar de</i> , to doubt about.
<i>los víveres</i> , the victuals.	<i>vino</i> , he (she, it) came (Fr. <i>venir</i>).
<i>campestre</i> , rural.	<i>lograr</i> , to obtain, to earn, to gain, to win.
<i>agradecido</i> , -a, thankful, grateful.	<i>muestra</i> , shows, proves.
<i>coronar</i> , to crown. [ful.]	<i>demás</i> , other.
<i>agradar</i> , to please.	<i>voy</i> , I go.
<i>conceder</i> , to allow, to concede.	
<i>vivir</i> , to live.	

Reading Exercise. 52.

Vivo aquí cerca, allí en aquella casa. No voy allá porque está muy lejos. América está cerca de Asia, y lejos de Europa. De buena gana viviría en Madrid, porque allí tengo muchos amigos. Los enemigos se coronaron de gloria, donde pocos días antes habían sido derrotados. No me agrada la mucha libertad que V. concede á su hijo. Un escritor tan celebrado como Calderón. El discípulo se muestra agradecido á su maestro estudiando mucho. Un rey tiránico es muy aborrecido de todos sus súbditos. Siempre he amado mucho la vida campestre. Ni el uno ni el otro se atrevieron á venir á las manos por el temor de no arriesgarlo todo. ¿De dónde* viene V.? Aun no llegado el correo; ni ayer tampoco vino. Apenas hubo llegado mi amigo, cuando recibí las cartas. El fruto de su trabajo no pudo lograrlo (*or no lo* pudo lograr) jamás. La carne y demás víveres eran demasiado caros.

* *Donde*, where, sometimes prefixes the prepositions *á*, *en*, *de*, and *por*, and thus forms the adverbs: *adonde* (also written *á donde*), whither; *endonde* (*en donde*), wherein; *dedonde* (*de donde*), whence; *pordonde* (*por donde*), where through (French: *par où*). Occasionally another preposition may be added, as:

Si vuelves presto de á donde pienso enviarte (*Cerv.*).

If you soon come back from where I have a mind to send you (to).

Traducción. 53.

I am very fond of (*tr.* I love much) my parents. You speak too loud; speak lower! Cervantes is a very celebrated Spanish writer (*escritor*). He will never have seen so many towns as I have (seen). Why have you come so soon? I have written this letter in a hurry. Perhaps you have not received my letter. This man is so despised that nobody will speak to him. I have always esteemed you so much that I shall never doubt (*of*) your word. He has already sent me twelve dollars, and now he sends me twenty more. Your son studies too much; six hours a (*por*) day are more than enough. Unfortunately I have neither friends nor money; how can you expect me to be (*tr.* will you that I be) satisfied with (*contento con*) my situation? It is now almost two years that (*since*) I am in this town. Yesterday I came (*vine*, from *venir*) too late; to-day I come (*vengo*) sooner. Sometimes we are quite as unjust towards ourselves as towards (*the*) others. I have given you enough money; you have received the price of your work. A town where (*tr.* in which) the victuals (*provisions*) are too dear cannot please a foreigner. So a learned man must have studied much.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|--|
| ¿Por qué quiere V. vivir en Madrid? | Porque tengo allí muchos amigos. |
| ¿Quién es Calderón? | Un escritor español muy célebre. |
| ¿Cómo se muestra un discípulo agradecido á su maestro? | Se muestra agradecido estudiando mucho. |
| ¿Por qué es aborrecido este rey? | Porque es muy tiránico. |
| ¿No ha llegado hoy el correo? | No ha llegado hoy, ni tampoco llegó ayer. |
| ¿No te ha pagado aún? | Me ha prometido frecuentemente darme el dinero, pero hasta hoy no me ha cumplido (<i>kept</i>) la palabra (<i>word</i>). |
| ¿Vendrá V. (<i>Will you come</i>) mañana á mi casa á comer (<i>dine</i>) conmigo? | Gracias; lo siento (<i>I am very sorry</i>), pero tengo compromiso (<i>I am engaged</i>) con unos amigos para mañana. |
| ¿Es verdad que su amigo de V. ha muerto? | Por desgracia es cierto. |
| ¿Cómo, todavía está V. en cama (<i>bed</i>)? | Perdone V., me acosté (<i>went to bed</i>) ayer muy tarde. |
| ¿Qué se dice en la ciudad? | No se oye (<i>hears</i>) nada de nuevo. |

- ¿Ha recibido V. mi carta? He recibido su carta de V. á las ocho y luego la de su hermano.
- ¿Cuánto tiempo hay (or hace) que aprende V. el castellano? Aun no hace dos meses.

Reading Exercise.

La Opinión.

- ¡Pobre Carolina mía!
 ¡Nunca la podré olvidar!
 Ved lo que el mundo decía
 Viendo el féretro pasar:
- Un clérigo.* — Empiece el canto.
El doctor. — ¡Cesó el sufrir!
El padre. — ¡Me ahoga el llanto!
La madre. — ¡Quiero morir!
- Un muchacho.* — ¡Qué adornada!
Un joven. — ¡Era muy bella!
Una moza. — ¡Desgraciada!
Una vieja. — ¡Feliz ella!
- ¡Duerme en paz! dicen los buenos.
 — ¡Adios! dicen los demás.
Un filósofo. — ¡Uno menos!
Un poeta. — ¡Un ángel más!

[Campoamor, "Doloras."]

Thirty second Lesson. — Lección treinta y dos.

Prepositions. — Preposiciones.

In Lesson 4 we have enumerated the prepositions most in use. The Spanish prepositions are either simply placed before the noun (*see* page 19), as: *con el padre*; *para el hermano*; *en la ciudad*; or they require one of the prepositions *de* and *á* following, as:

- Junto á la casa*, near the house.
Encima de la cama, on (upon) the bed.
Está delante de mí, he stands before me.

They are either *adjectives*, like *junto*, or compounds of prepositions with other words like *encima* = *en cima* (on the top). Reserving all particulars for the Second

Part, we now give the prepositions and prepositional locutions which are most in use.

(a) Followed by *de*:

<i>Acerca de</i> , for, because of, by reason of.	<i>dentro de</i> , within.
<i>además de</i> , besides.	<i>fuera de</i> , except, outside.
<i>al lado de</i> , aside.	<i>después de</i> , after.
<i>al cabo de</i> , at the end.	<i>detrás de</i> , behind.
<i>antes de</i> , before.	<i>en casa de</i> , at the house, at —'s.
<i>á espaldas de</i> , behind.	<i>encima de</i> , on, upon.
<i>á pesar de</i> , notwithstanding.	<i>enfrente de</i> , opposite.
<i>debajo de</i> , under.	<i>por medio de</i> , through, across.
<i>delante de</i> , before, in front.	<i>respecto de</i> , concerning.

(b) Followed by *á*:

<i>En cuanto á</i> , } as for, con-	<i>conforme á</i> , conformably to,
<i>en orden á</i> , } cerning.	according to.
<i>tocante á</i> , concerning.	<i>respecto á</i> , with respect to.
<i>junto á</i> , near, next to . . .	<i>sin atención á</i> , without regard to.

Words.

<i>El pueblo</i> , the people.	<i>la seguridad</i> , the safety, security.
<i>la fuerza</i> , the force.	<i>la Casa Ayuntamiento</i> , the Town-hall.
<i>el temor</i> , the fear.	<i>la costa</i> , the coast.
<i>la hacienda</i> , the fortune.	<i>lindo</i> , lovely, sweet.
<i>el espacio</i> , the space.	<i>valiente</i> , brave, gallant.
<i>la potencia</i> , the power.	<i>desear</i> , to desire.
<i>la criatura</i> , the creature.	<i>enojarse</i> , to become angry.
<i>el conciudadano</i> , the citizen.	<i>premiar</i> , to reward.
<i>el cumplimiento</i> , the compliment(s).	<i>es excusado</i> , is superfluous.
<i>el vencedor</i> , the conqueror.	<i>hace</i> , does.

Reading Exercise. 54.

El pueblo deseaba que premiaran á los vencedores y á los sabios. Han llegado dos batallones que estaban de guarnición en Madrid. Los padres y las madres trabajan para sus hijos. El hombre valiente no hace nada por fuerza ó por temor. ¿Quién soy yo *para con* (*in comparison*) él? El vino (*came*) ántes de mí á la iglesia, y se puso (*sat down*) delante de mí. Además de sus libros tenían todo lo que es necesario para escribir. El capitán me llamó por mi nombre. Detrás de la casa hay un jardín muy ameno. Dentro de una hora estaremos en seguridad. Los malos se enojan siempre contra los buenos. ¿*Qué tal* (*What*) es este hombre para con

sus conciudadanos? Desde el día en que los demás (*the others*) se fueron (*went away*), se fué también él. La lámpara está encima de la mesa. El perro durmió debajo de la cama. *Para entre* amigos son excusados los cumplimientos.

Traducción. 55.

Near the town-hall there are some beautiful palaces. Shall you come (*Vendrá V.*) (still) before night? I shall come after sunset (*ponerse el sol*). The world was created (*hecho*) by God. What (*Quién* or *Qué*) is the creature in comparison with the Creator? We speak about the affairs (*las cosas*) of our nation. There *might be* (*Habrà*) above two hundred persons. Concerning this matter (*asunto*), I do not *know* (*sé*) anything certain. Opposite the church there were three very high trees. (The) man was (*ha*) not born (*nacido*) for himself alone. I am not ashamed to speak the truth always. I was occupied from (the) morning till (to the) evening. The father distributed (def. of *repartir*) all his fortune among his children. (The) war is (*está*) declared (use *declarar*) between the two Powers. The whole honour of the victory is for the general. The thief hid himself behind the door. The ship was wrecked (use *nafragar*) near (*cerca de*) the coast of Spain. (The) Mount Pico rises (use *levantarse*) above the other mountains. The king *did* not *wish* (*quiso*) that his sons *should reign* (Imperf. Subj. of *reinar*) after him.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|--|
| ¿Qué deseaba el pueblo? | Que premiaran á los vencedores. |
| ¿Ha partido su amigo de V.? | Sí, ha partido ayer sin despedirse (<i>saying good bye</i>). |
| ¿Qué no quiso el rey? | Que sus hijos reinasen después de él. |
| ¿Por quiénes trabajan los padres? | Trabajan por sus hijos. |
| ¿Qué ha publicado ese autor? | Ha publicado muchas novelas muy buenas; ha publicado mucho. |
| ¿Dónde se escondió el perro? | Debajo de la cama. |
| ¿Cuál virtud está sobre todas las virtudes? | La caridad. |
| ¿Cuántos años tendrá su amigo de V.? | Ahora tendrá sobre cuarenta años. |
| ¿Iremos por vapor (<i>steamer</i>) ó por ferro-carril (<i>train</i>)? | Creo que haremos mejor en tomar (<i>if we take</i>) el tren. |
| ¿Qué no hace el hombre valiente? | No hace nada por fuerza ó por temor. |

Reading Exercise.

*El traidor despreciado**.

Fué rogado un noble español por Carlos quinto para que cediese su palacio, el más hermoso de Toledo, al condestable de Borbón. Viendo el Emperador que resistía, le dijo que debía mirar como un honor el alojar en su casa á tan gran capitán. El español respondió que eran muy conocidas las altas prendas de aquel príncipe; pero que su traidora conducta para con Francia su patria las había borrado todas. «Le cederé mi palacio por obediencia», añadió, «mas suplico á Vuestra Majestad (que) me permita darle fuego en cuanto el duque haya salido de él. No podré yo resolverme á ocupar la misma casa en que ha vivido un traidor.»

Despreciar, to despise.
rogar, to request.
ceder, to cede.
el Condestable, the Constable.
viendo, seeing.
resistir, to resist.
debía, he must; he ought to.
mirar, to regard.
alojar, to lodge.
conocido, known.
las altas prendas, the eminent qualities.
traidor, traitor, treacherous.
la conducta, the conduct.

para con . . ., towards, against...
borrar, to efface, to expunge.
la obediencia, the obedience.
mas, but.
permitir, to permit.
el capitán, the general.
añadir, to add.
suplicar, to beg.
dar fuego á . . ., to set on fire.
en cuanto, as soon as.
salir de . . ., to leave.
resolverse, to resolve.
ocupar, to live in ..
vivir, to live.

Thirty-third Lesson. — Lección treinta y tres.

Conjunctions. — Conjunciones.

(a) Simple Conjunctions:

<i>Y (é)</i> , and.	<i>mas**</i> , but.
<i>ó (ú)</i> , or.	<i>pero</i> , but, yet.
<i>ni — ni</i> , neither — nor.	<i>cuando</i> , when, if.
<i>que</i> , that.	<i>si</i> , if.
<i>ya — ya</i> , now — now.	<i>pues</i> , as, because.
	<i>miéntras</i> , whilst.

* See the poetical treatment of the same subject in "*Un Castellano Leal*" por el Duque de Rivas, in the "Spanish Reader".

** *mas*, but, without accent; *más*, more, with accent.

(b) Compound Conjunctions.

<i>Aunque</i> , although, though.	<i>así que</i> , so that, as soon as.
<i>por qué</i> , why.	<i>con tal que</i> , provided, on condition that.
<i>porque</i> , because, as.	<i>por más que</i> , in spite of.
<i>bien que</i> , though, although.	<i>entretanto que</i> , whilst.
<i>supuesto que</i> , } provided that.	<i>á ménos que</i> , unless.
<i>puesto que</i> , }	<i>hasta que</i> , until.
<i>para que</i> , in order to, so that.	<i>pues que</i> , as, since.

Some of these conjunctions govern always the Subjunctive mood, such as *antes que*, before; *con tal que*, provided; *á ménos que*, unless; *para que*, in order to. Others govern the Subjunctive only when the idea expressed by the verb appears *uncertain*, *dubious*, or merely *possible*: such are *aunque*, though; *hasta que*, until; *así que*, so that, etc. For further particulars see Part II., Lesson 14: *Conjunctions*.

Notes.

1. For the sake of euphony, *y* (and) is replaced by *é* before words beginning with *i* or *hi* (but not *hie*), as:

Padre é hijo, father and son.

Acero y hierro, steel and iron.

2. In a similar way, *ó* is replaced by *ú* before words beginning with *o*, as:

Siete ú ocho, seven or eight.

3. *Porque* means both *why?* and *because*, as:

¿Por qué no habla V.? why do you not speak?

Porque no quiero, because I do not choose.

In order to mark the difference, *por qué*, why? is written in two words and with the accent, and *porque*, because, in one word and without the accent.

Words.

<i>El ministro</i> , the minister.	<i>sujeto</i> , subject.
<i>el embajador</i> , the ambassador.	<i>perseguir</i> , to persecute.
<i>el juez</i> , the judge.	<i>velar</i> , to watch.
<i>el amo</i> , the master.	<i>recompensar</i> , to reward.
<i>la ignorancia</i> , the ignorance.	<i>ganar</i> , to earn, to gain.
<i>la sabiduría</i> , wisdom.	<i>cansar</i> , to tire; <i>cansarse</i> , to get tired.
<i>el discípulo</i> , the pupil, scholar.	<i>descansar</i> , to repose.
<i>afable</i> , kind, friendly.	<i>no tener ningún inconveniente</i> , to have no objection.
<i>dichoso</i> , happy.	
<i>severo</i> , severe, strict.	
<i>dormir</i> , to sleep.	

Traducción. 56.

The ministers and the ambassadors thought that the proposal of (tr. what proposed [tr. *proponer*]) the emperor would please (*convenía*) neither the king nor the people. Peter or [an]other shall do (*hará*) it. I should be glad (*Quisiera*) to reward him, but* I cannot. I earn money enough, but I am not satisfied. I cannot walk so far, because I get tired. Provided they are (*se muestren*) kind, I have no objection to pay them a visit (*en ir á verles*). Money makes (*hace*) rich, but not happy. (The) virtue, although persecuted, is amiable. If I get (*Si me llegare* or *llega*) my money, I shall pay you. I waked (*Imperf.*), whilst he slept. If it brought (*importara*) me a kingdom, I would not commit (*haría*) an injustice. The judge, though severe, is just. (The) virtue renders men happy (*felices*) in this world and blessed (*bienaventurados*) in heaven. I say (*digo*) it now, that (*para que*) he may hear (*sienta*) it himself. Wait (*espere V.*) in this room, sir, until my master comes (*venga*)! (The) men often say (*dicen*) that they do not wish for (*apetecen*) riches. Science and ignorance are opposed things. The girl understands (*sabe*) sewing (*coser*) and spinning (*hilar*). He rests neither by (*de*) day nor by night. Men or women, we are all liable to passions. One should not (*No se ha de*) live in order to eat, but one should eat in order to live. The master takes pains (*se afana*) that he may bring forward (Subj. pres. of *adelantar*) his pupils.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Quién ha llegado hoy? | El conde de Aguilar y su señora (<i>lady</i>). |
| ¿Qué vende este comerciante (<i>merchant</i>)? | Vende plomo (<i>lead</i>) y hierro. |
| ¿Cuánto dinero le ha dado V. al criado? | Le he dado siete ú ocho duros (<i>dollar</i>). |
| ¿Por qué no ha escrito V. á su padre? | Porque no tengo tiempo. |
| ¿Cuándo recibió V. la respuesta (<i>answer</i>)? | Despues de haber escrito esta carta (<i>letter</i>). |
| ¿No ha querido (<i>did not like</i>) venir aquí su tío de V.? | Ni mi tío ni mi tía han querido venir. |
| ¿Qué dice un poeta de la imitación (<i>imitation</i>)? | Dice que la imitación es como el alma de la poesía. |
| ¿Por qué no pudo el capitán asistir (<i>assist</i>) á la función (<i>solemnity</i>)? | Porque estaba ausente. |

* But is *pero*, seldom *mas*. After a negative sentence but is *sino*.

- ¿Irá V. conmigo? Iré con usted pues lo quiere.
 ¿Ha visto V. en verdad (*really*) á mi hermano? Cuando le aseguro á V. que le he visto, puede creerme (*believe me*).
 ¿Quiere V. á ese hombre? Aunque no me ha hecho (*done*) nada, no le quiero.
 ¿Cuándo me pagará V.? Le pagaré á V. si me llega (*if I get*) el dinero.

Reading Exercise.

Canción de la Primavera.

Ya vuelve la primavera:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 tiende sobre la pradera
 el verde manto — de la esperanza.
 Sopla caliente la brisa:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 las nubes pasan aprisa,
 y el azur muestran — de la esperanza.
 La flor ríe en su capullo:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 canta el agua en su murmullo
 el poder santo — de la esperanza.
 ¿La oís que en los aires trina?
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 — «Abrid á la golondrina,
 que vuelve en alas — de la esperanza.» —
 Niña, la niña modesta:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 el mayo trae tu fiesta
 que el logro trae — de la esperanza.
 Cubre la tierra el amor:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 el perfume engendrador
 al seno sube — de la esperanza.
 Todo zumba y reverdece:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 cuanto el són y el verdor crece,
 tanto más crece — toda esperanza.
 Sonido, aroma y color
 (suene la gaita, — ruede la danza)
 únense en himnos de amor,
 que engendra el himno — de la esperanza.
 Morirá la primavera:
 suene la gaita, — ruede la danza:
 mas cada año en la pradera
 tornará el manto — de la esperanza.

La inocencia de la vida
 (calle la gaita, — pare la danza)
 no torna una vez perdida:
 ¡oh mi inocencia! — ¡ay mi esperanza!

Pablo Piferrer.

Thirty-fourth Lesson. — Lección treinta y cuatro.

Interjections. — Interjecciones.

Interjections are used to express some emotions of the speaker, as *joy*, *surprise*, *grief*, etc. Those most in use are:

¡Ah! ¡eh! ¡hala! to denote joy.
 ¡Ah! ¡ay! ¡ay de mí! ¡ó! to denote grief.
 ¡Oh! to denote surprise.
 ¡Eh! ¡hola! to attract attention.
 ¡Chito! ¡quedo! ¡silencio! to command silence.
 ¡Ea! ¡Sús! ¡Ánimo! to encourage.
 ¡Ta! ¡tate! to threaten.

Besides these there are many other expressions, as:

Ojalá, Would that . . .
 ¡Válgame Dios! Good gracious!
 ¡Caramba! Oh, dear me! etc.

which are also used as interjections. The Spanish language abounds in such interjectional locutions.

Reading Exercise. 57.

¡Ah, qué desgracia (*misfortune*)! ¡Ay, qué pena (*pain*); oh, desdichado de mí (*how unhappy I am*)! ¡Oh, cielos! ¡Eh, qué es lo que decías (*saidst*)! ¿Hola, muchacho, vendrás luego (*soon*)? ¡Hola, quién lo hubiera creído (*thought, believed*)! ¡Chito, ninguno hable, y todos oigan (*let all listen*)! ¡Ea, hijo-mío, buen ánimo! ¡Ta, ta; qué es lo que veo! ¡Vaya (*Up*), que ya es tiempo de levantarse! ¡Ay, qué gozo (*pleasure*)! ¡Ah, desventurada mujer! ¡Oh, dolor! ¡Mira (*look*), que infamia! ¡Gracias á Dios! ¡Bendito (*praised*) sea Dios!

Reading Exercise.

España. — Diversidad de lenguas.

Subsiste en España no sólo la diversidad de leyes, sino también la de lenguas. Se habla todavía en gallego, en bable, en vasco, en catalán, en mallorquín, en valenciano. Tienen

estas lenguas, á excepción de la vasca, el mismo origen que la de Castilla; y ninguna, sin embargo, ha caído en desuso. Lejos de borrarse, pasan hace años por una especie de renacimiento. Eran ayer vulgares, y hoy toman el carácter de literarias. Se escriben ahora en todas esas lenguas, principalmente en las latinas, poesías brillantes de especial índole y tendencia, donde predomina sobre todos los sentimientos el de la antigua patria. Se desentierran los cantos y aún los libros en prosa que en ellas compusieron hombres de otros siglos; y no bien se los publica, se los lee y devora. En catalán hasta se escriben y se ponen en escena comedias y dramas de no escaso mérito.

[Pí y Margall, "Las Nacionalidades," Cap. XII.]

Thirty-fifth Lesson. — Lección treinta y cinco.

The irregular Verbs. — De los verbos irregulares.

Irregular verbs are those which deviate in their conjugation from the regular verbs, unless this deviation be a *merely orthographical* one, as with the verbs enumerated in Lesson 22, where the anomaly is only *seeming*, as the alterations in the spelling are necessary in order to maintain the original pronunciation of the verb.

A very considerable number of Spanish verbs are only so far irregular as to undergo an alteration of the *radical vowel* in certain persons of the *present indicative* and *subjunctive*, and in the *imperative*, all the other persons and tenses being perfectly regular.

This alteration is originated by the stress being laid on the *radical vowel*, which is, as it were, not strong enough to support *alone* the full weight of the accent, and is, therefore, changed into a diphthong; whilst in the cases where the stress is *not* laid on the radical vowel, it remains unaltered. Thus, in the verb *alentar*, to breathe, the 1. sing. pres. indic. ought properly to be *alénto**. Now, this *e* (the radical vowel) cannot support by itself the weight of the accent, and is therefore changed into *ie*. Thus *aliénto**, instead

* The accent is only used here to indicate the vowel on which the stress is laid, and must not be written.

of *alento*. The 1st pers. plur. of the same tense, however, is *alentamos*, and not *alientamos*, because here the stress is laid on the *a* (*alentamos*), and not on the *e* of the root.

Observation.—Yet this transition of the radical vowel into the diphthongs *ie* and *ue* is not confined to the aforesaid forms, but also occurs in the infinitive mood of some verbs. Hence we have *double* forms, like *diezmar*, and *dezmar*, to decimate; *adiestrar*, and *adestrar*, to instruct; *amueblar*, and *amoblar*, to furnish (a room), etc. The conjugation of such verbs with diphthongs for their radical vowel is *regular*. The Spanish Academy recognises *both* forms, yet prefers the form with the diphthong.

As the aforesaid deviation is found equally with verbs of the *first*, *second*, and *third* conjugations, we may bring them all under the

First Class.

Character: The radical *e, i* is changed into *ie*.

Models.

I.

Alentar,
to breathe.

Alento, I breathe
alientas
alienta
alentamos
alentáis
alientan.

Alente
alientes
aliente
alentemos
alentéis
alienten.

Alienta (tú)
aliente (V.).

II.

Encender, to set
on fire, to light.

Present.
Indicative.
Enciendo, I light
enciendes
enciende
encendemos
encendéis
encienden.

Subjunctive.
Encienda
enciendas
encienda
encendamos
encendáis
enciendan.

Imperative.
Enciende (tú).
encienda (V.).

III.

Adquirir, to ac-
quire, to obtain.

Adquiro
adquieres
adquiere
adquirimos
adquirís
adquieren.

Adquiera
adquieras
adquiera
adquiramos
adquiráis
adquieran.

Adquiere (tú)
adquiera (V.).

Thus: *inquirir*, to inquire.

Alphabetical list of the verbs liable to the same deviations:

Remark.—In this and the following lists there are many verbs which are not so important for the beginner. It would therefore be better to learn first those marked with an asterisk.

Verbs in *-ar*.

Abnegar, to deny oneself.

**acertar*, to guess.

acrecentar, to increase.

adestrar, to instruct.

aferrar, to grapple.

alebrarse, to crouch.

**alentar*, to breathe.

aliquebrar, to break a wing.

aneblar, to get foggy.

apacentar, to graze, to pasture.

apernar, to seize by the leg.

**apretar*, to press together.

arrendar, to lease, to rent.

asentar, to set, to note down.

aserrar, to saw.

asestar, to point (a gun).

atentar, to grope, to fumble¹.

aterrar, to fling, to knock down².

atestar, to fill with . . .³.

**atravesar*, to perforate, to bar, to block, to cross.

aventar, to fan, to kindle; *-se*, to run away.

**Calentar*, to warm.

**cegar*, to blind, to dazzle.

**cerrar*, to shut.

cimentar, to cement, to lay the foundation.

**comenzar*, to begin, to commence. [concert.

concertar, to arrange; *-se*, to

**confesar*, to confess.

**confesarse con*, to confess to.

Decentar, to cut, to get bad sores.

denegar, to deny.

dentar, to indent, to teeth.

derrenegar, to abjure, to de-test.

derrengar, to lame.

desacertar, to mistake.

desaferrar, to unfurl, to unfasten.

desalentar, to discourage.

desapretar, to loosen.

desarrendar, to unbridle.

desasentar, to disagree with.

desasosegar, to trouble.

desatentar, to perplex the mind.

desaterrar, to deposit scoriae.

desatravesar, to cross back.

desconcertar, to confuse.

desdentar, to draw teeth.

desempedrar, to unpave (a street, etc.).

desencerrar, to free, to set at liberty.

**desenterrar*, to disinter, to dig out.

desgovernar, to disturb.

deshelar, to thaw [*helar*, to freeze].

desherrar, to unfetter, to take off a horse-shoe.

desmembrar, to dismember.

desnegar, to contradict, to unsay.

desnevar, to thaw.

despernar, to cut off a leg, to lame a leg.

**despertar* (*dispertar*), to awake.

¹ Regular in the signification "to attempt the life of somebody."

² » » » » "to terrify."

³ » » » » "to testify."

- **desplegar*¹, to unfold.
desterrar, to banish, to exile.
dezmar, to decimate.
Emparentar, to be related by marriage.
- **empedrar*, to pave.
 **empezar*, to begin.
encensar, to perfume.
encentar, to mutilate.
- **encerrar*, to imprison, to comprehend.
- **encomendar*, to recommend, to entrust.
encubertar, to cover with cloth (horses).
endentar, to join with a mortise.
enhambrentar, to starve.
enhestar, to raise, to put upright.
- **enmendar (emendar)*, to correct, to mend.
ensangrentar, to stain with blood.
- **enterrar*, to bury.
- **errar*, to be mistaken (*Pres. yerro*, etc.).
- **escarmentar*, to sharpen one's wits, to take warning.
estercar, to manure.
estregar, to rub.
- **Fregar*, to rub, to wash up.
- **Gobernar*, to govern.
- **Helar*, to freeze [French: *geler*].
herrar, to shoe a horse [*ferrer*].
- Incensar*, to incense, to perfume.
infernar, to vex, to make angry.
invernar, to pass the winter.
- **Manifestar*, to manifest.
*mentar*², to mention.
- **merendar*, to take one's afternoon collation.
- **Negar*³, to deny.
 **nevar*, to snow.
- **Pensar*⁴, to think. [legs. *perniquebrar*, to break (the)]
- **plegar*¹, to fold.
 **Quebrar*, to break.
Recalentar, to warm again.
 **recomendar*, to recommend.
refregar, to rub hard.
 **regar*, to water.
regimentar, to organize.
remendar, to mend, to patch.
remesar, to pull out the hair.
renegar, to abjure, to forswear.
replegar, to fold often, to fall back.
requebrar, to break into little pieces, to flirt, to woo, to court.
resegar, to reap again.
resembrar, to resow.
restregar, to rub, to scrub.
 **retemblar*, to tremble repeatedly.
retentar, to threaten with a fresh attack (of illness, etc.).

¹ *Desplegar* forms *desplego* and *despliego*; as well as *desplegarse*, to retire in good order (milit.). *Replegar*, to fold again, follows *plegar*.

² The compounds, like *comentar*, *dementar*, etc., are regular. *Paramentar*, to adorn, is not derived from *mentar*, but from *paramento*.

³ *Anegar*, to drown, is not derived from *negar*, and is regular, although in America spurious forms like *aniego*, *aniegas* may occur.

⁴ *Compensar*, *recompensar*, etc., are regular.

- **reventar*, to burst.
Salpimentar, to season with salt and pepper.
sarmentar, to gather (cut off) vine-wood.
 **segar*, to mow, to cut.
sembrar, to sow.
sementar, to sow.
 **sentar*, to seat, to fit; -*se*, to sit down¹.
 **serrar*, to saw.
sosegar, to tranquillize.
soterrar, to bury.
 **Temblar*, to tremble.
tentar, to touch, to try, to grope; to tempt.
trasegar, to pour over, to transfuse, to rack wine.
 **tropezar*, to stumble.

Verbs in *-er*.

- Ascender*, to ascend, to be promoted.
atender, to attend, to pay attention to.
Bienquerer, to esteem.
*Cerner*², to bolt (meal).
coextender, to coextend.

- contender*, to fight.
 **Defender*, to defend.
desatender, to disregard.
 **descender*, to descend, to come (down).
desentenderse, to feign ignorance.
distender, to distend. [fire.
 **Encender*, to light, to set on
 **entender*, to understand.
extender, to stretch out.
Heder, to stink.
heder, to split.
Malquerer, to hate.
 **Perder*, to lose.
 **Querer*, to like, to wish, to want, will.
Requerer, to love intensely.
*Tender*³, to tend, to stretch.
trascender, to mount over, to pass.
Verter, to shed, to spill.

Verbs in *-ir*.

- Adquirir*, to acquire, to obtain.
Diferir, to differ.
Inquirir, to inquire.
Perquirir, to search for.

Words.

- To be right, *tener razón*.
 to be wrong, *no tener razón*.
 the bet, wager, *la apuesta*.
 the cigar, *el cigarro*.
 the rampart, *la valla*.
 the sea, *el mar*.
 the family, *la familia*.
 the cow, *la vaca*.
 the fault, mistake, *la falta*.
 likewise, *también, igualmente*.
 to read, *leer*.
 I say, *digo*.
 not yet, *aun — no*.
 the wood, { *la leña*.
 { *la madera*.
 the blow, *el golpe* [Fr. *le coup*].
 the valley, *el valle*.
 the noise, *el ruido*.

Traducción. 58.

What do you think of this matter, sir? I think that you are wrong, and that your friend is right. Think what

¹ *Presentar* and *representar*, not being compounds of *sentar*, are regular.

² *Discernir*, to distinguish, formerly *discerner*, follows the conjug. of *cerner*. — *Concernir*, to concern, is a defective verb.

³ *Pretender* is regular. The other compounds, like *tender*.

you please! I know (*se*) that my friend will lose this wager. We lose our time, and you (*Vds.*), too, lose yours. I confess my faults; why do you not confess yours? We confess that you were right. I awake every morning at six o'clock. He eats his afternoon collation at 5 o'clock. The child is *teething* (*pres.*). When do we begin? I shall begin directly, and my brother also begins. The poor soldier still breathes. I am not mistaken when I say that he does not understand me. Light your cigar; there is a match (*fósforo, m.*). The ramparts defend the town against the enemies. We now (*ahora*) begin to read; dost thou also begin? I do not yet begin. I do not deny that you have given me the money. The sun dazzles me. The river falls (*desembocar*) into the sea. He descends from an old Castilian family. I lose too much money with [at] this game. We lose 10 dollars (*duro, m.*), and that gentleman loses 15 dollars. The sun warms the earth. I split this wood with one blow. The cows graze in the valley. Correct the mistakes in your translation! Thou dost not know what thou sayest (*dices*). I understand everything. This noise troubles (*disturbs*) me. A young man acquires friends if he is diligent and honest. We seldom acquire anything in this world without pains (*Sing.*).

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|--|
| ¿Piensa V. en su tarea (<i>task</i>)? | Pienso siempre en mis tareas. |
| ¿Pierde V. mucho dinero? | He perdido 5 duros, pero mi hermano pierde más. |
| ¿No quiebra V. el vaso (<i>glass</i>)? | No quiebro nada. |
| ¿Niegan Vds. que tengamos razón? | No negamos que Vds. tengan razón, pero negamos que hagan bien (<i>do well</i>) en este caso (<i>case</i>). |
| ¿Por qué no empieza V.? | No empiezo, porque no tengo gana de hacer lo que V. quiere. |
| ¿Á quién defiende V.? | Defiendo á la pobre viuda (<i>widow</i>) que no tiene protección (<i>protection</i>). |
| ¿Está enfermo el niño? | Un poco; dienta. |
| ¿Por qué no despierta V. á sus compañeros (<i>companion</i>)? | Porque aún no es tiempo. |
| ¡Siéntese V. Mi ama llegará en un instante! | No me siento, porque no tengo tiempo. |
| ¡Cierre V. la puerta del cuarto! | Ya está cerrada. |
| Mi primo niega lo que V. ha dicho. | Aunque lo niegue, es verdad lo que he dicho. |

Reading Exercise.

España. — Diversidad de costumbres.

No hablaré ahora de las costumbres. Su variedad es infinita. Cambian de provincia á provincia y aún de pueblo á pueblo. Las de la ciudad difieren generalmente de las del campo; las de la montaña de las del valle. Difieren sobre todo las que se observan en los tres grandes momentos de la vida: el nacimiento, el matrimonio y la muerte. Son en todas partes diversos los trajes, diversos los juegos y las fiestas, diversas las aficiones y las preocupaciones religiosas. Cada comarca tiene su Cristo y su Virgen, y en cada una se les presta distinto culto.

[Pí y Margall, "Las Nacionalidades," Cap. XII.]

Thirty-sixth Lesson. — Lección treinta y seis.

The Irregular Verbs continued.

A great many partly irregular verbs of the first and the second conjugations change the radical vowel *o* into *ue*. To these *jugar* (Latin *jocare*) may be added. They form the

Second Class.

Character: *o, u*, is changed into *ue*.

Models.

I.	II.	III.
<i>Acordar</i> , to agree.	<i>Morder</i> , to bite.	<i>Jugar</i> , to play.

Present.

Indicative.

<i>Acuerdo</i> , I agree	<i>Muerdo</i> , I bite	<i>Juego</i> , I play
<i>acuerdas</i>	<i>muerdes</i>	<i>juegas</i>
<i>acuerda</i>	<i>muerde</i>	<i>juega</i>
<i>acordamos</i>	<i>mordemos</i>	<i>jugamos</i>
<i>acordáis</i>	<i>mordéis</i>	<i>jugáis</i>
<i>acuerdan.</i>	<i>muerden.</i>	<i>juegan.</i>

Subjunctive.

<i>Acuerde</i>	<i>Muerda</i>	<i>Juegue</i>
<i>acuerdes</i>	<i>muerdas</i>	<i>juegues</i>
<i>acuerde</i>	<i>muerda</i>	<i>juegue</i>

acordamos
acordéis
acuerden.

mordamos
mordáis
muerdan.

juguemos
juguéis
jueguen.¹

Imperative.

Acuerda (tú), agree
(thou).

Muerde (tú), bite
(thou).

Juega (tu), play
(thou).

acordad, agree
(you).

morded, bite
(you).

jugad, play (you).

Acuerde V., do
agree.

Muerda V., do bite.

Juegue V., do play.

All the other tenses are regular.

Alphabetical list of the verbs that follow this irregularity:

Verbs in *-ar*.

Abuñolar, to puff out.
aclocar, to brood.
acollar, to earth up.
**acordar*, to agree; *-se*, to
recollect¹.
acornar, to gore.
**acostar*, to convey to bed;
-se, to go to bed.
afollar, to blow against, to
breathe at . . .
aforar, to enfeoff, to rent,
to farm². [phesy.
agorar, to foretell, to pro-
**almorzar*, to breakfast.
**amoblar*, to furnish, see: *Mo-
blar*.
amolar, to grind, to sharpen.
aporcar, to cover with earth.
**aportar*, to go ashore, to land.
**apostar*³, to bet.
**aprobar*, to approve.
asolar, to waste, to desolate.

asoldar, to hire.
asonar, to accord, to chime in.
atronar, to make a great noise.
avergonzar, to shame (*aver-
güenzo*).
azolar, to work with the axe.
Clocar, to cluck.
*colar*⁴, to filter, to wash; *co-
larse*, to slip in (coll.).
**colgar*, to hang, to suspend.
comprobar, to prove.
concordar, to accord, to agree.
**consolar*, to console, to com-
fort.
consonar, to accord (see *sonar*).
**contar*, to count, to tell.
**costar*, to cost.
Degollar, to behead.
demostrar, to prove.
**denostar*, to offend, to injure.
*derrocar*⁵, to fling down, to
render downcast.
desacordar, to disagree, to
put out of tune.

¹ *Acordar*, to tune (instruments), is regular.

² *Aforar*, to gauge, is regular; also in all the other signi-
fications (to adjust [weights, etc.]).

³ *Apostar*, to place, to station, is regular.

⁴ Verbs not derived from *colar*, but from *cola*, tail, glue,
like *descolar*, to cut the tail off; *encolar*, to glue together, are
regular.

⁵ *Derrocar* forms *derroco* and *derrueco*.

- desaforar*, to deprive of a right, etc.¹
desamoblar, to unfurnish.
 **desaprobar*, to disapprove.
descolgar, to take down (from a hook, etc.).
descollar, to overtop, to tower over.
desconsolar, to afflict deeply, to render disconsolate.
 **descontar*, to discount.
descordar, to uncord.
descornar, to break off the horns.
desencordar, to unstring.
desengrosar, to thin.
desflocar, to unravel.
desmajolar, to pull up vines by the roots.
 **desolar*, to desolate, to waste.
desoldar, to unsolder.
desollar, to flay, to excoriate.
desosar, to take the bone out (of the meat).
desovar, to lay eggs, to spawn.
 **despoblar*, to depopulate.
destrucar, to break off a barter, a bargain.
 **desvergonzarse*, to behave in a shameless manner.
discordar, to be discordant.
disonar, to be dissonant.
Emporcar, to soil.
enclocar, to fish with a hook, to cluck (like a hen).
encoclar (better *cloquear*), see: *enclocar*.
 **encontrar*, to encounter, to meet, to find.
- encorar*, to cover with leather; -*se*, to heal, to cicatrize.
encordar, to string, to chord.
encornar, to grow horns.
encovar, to put in the cellar.
engorar, to addle.
 **engrosar*, to become stout.
enrodar, to break upon the wheel.
ensalmar, to brine (pickle).
ensoñar, to dream.
entortar, to render tortuous.
escolar, to strain.
 **esforzar*, to encourage.
 **esforzarse*, to take pains.
*Follar*², to blow with the bellows.
 **forzar*, to force, to compel, to oblige.
 **Holgar*, to repose.
hollar, to tread upon, to trample on.
Improbar, to disapprove.
 **Jugar*³, to play.
Malsonar, to offend one's ears.
mancornar, to tie by the horns.
*moblar*⁴, to furnish.
 **mostrar*, to show.
 **Poblar*, to populate.
 **probar*, to prove, to try.
Recolar, to strain a second time.
recontar, to count again.
 **recordar*, to remind, to awake, -*se*, to recollect.
recostarse, to lie down on one side, to recline.
 **reforzar*, to reinforce.

¹ Meaning to redeem a mortgage is regular.

² *Follar* (*afollar*), when meaning "to put in sheets," is regular.

³ *Conjugar*, to conjugate, and *enjudar*, to dry up, are not derived from *jugar*, and are regular.

⁴ Besides *moblar*, and *amoblar*, there are also the regular forms *mueblar*, and *amueblar* (see Lesson 35, *Observation*).

regoldar, to eruct.
rehollar, to tread upon.
remolar, to load dice.
 **renovar*, to renew.
repoblar, to repeople.
 **reprobar*, to reprobate, to scold.
rescontrar, to balance (an account), to compare.
resollar, to breathe, to fan.
resonar, to resound.
retostar, to toast again, to toast brown.
retronar, to thunder again.
revolar, to flee, to flee again.
 **revolcarse*, to welter, to roll, to wallow.
 **rodar*, to roll.
 **rogar*, to beg, to pray¹.
Sobresolar, to pave anew.
*solar*², to sole.
soldar, to solder.
 **soltar*, to loosen.
sollar, to blow with bellows.
 **sonar*³, to sound; *-se*, to blow one's nose.
sonrodarse, to stick in the mud (a carriage).
 **soñar*, to dream.
 **Tostar*, to roast.
trascolar, to bolt, to strain.
trascordarse, to forget.
trasoñar, to see a vision, to dream.
trastrocar, to invert the order of things.
trasvolar, to fly across.
trocar, to exchange [Fr. *troquer*].
 **tronar*, to thunder⁴.
 **Volar*, to fly.

**volcar*, to upset (a carriage, etc.); *-se*, to welter.

Verbs in *-er*.

**Absolver*, to absolve.
amover, to remove.
 **Cocer*, to cook (*cuezo*).
condoler, to condole, to pity.
conmover, to touch, to stir.
contorcer, to distort.
 **Demoler*, to demolish, to destroy.
desenvolver, to develop.
destorcer, to untwist.
desvolver, to unfold.
 **devolver*, to give back.
 **disolver*, to dissolve.
 **doler*, to ache, to give pain.
Entrevolver, to pack between.
 **envolver*, to envelop, to wrap up, to involve.
escocer, to smart.
 **Llover*, to rain.
 **Moler*, to grind, to bother.
 **morder*, to bite.
 **mover*, to move.
 **Oler*, to smell (pres. *huele*, etc., *olemos*, etc.).
 **Poder*, to be able, can.
promover, to promote.
Recocer, to boil again.
redoler, to cause great pain.
remoler, to regrind.
remorder, to cause remorse.
remover, to remove.
 **resolver*, to resolve.
retorcer, to re-wrap, to crook, to curse, to render tortuous (pres. *retuerzo*).

¹ The compounds of *rogar* are *regular*.

² Like *solar* the verb *consolar*, to console, though not derived from *solar*.

³ *Sonar* and its compounds are *irregular*. Verbs derived from *persona*, like *apersonarse*, to behave with dignity, are *regular*.

⁴ Verbs derived from *trono*, throne, like *entronizar*, *destronar*, etc., are *regular*.

<i>revolver</i> , to stir, to disarrange.	* <i>Torcer</i> , to come, to wring, to wrest (pres. <i>tuerso</i>).
* <i>Soler</i> , to use (be wont).	* <i>Volver</i> , to turn back.
<i>solver</i> ¹ , to loosen, to untie.	* <i>volver á</i> (with the Inf.), to do a thing once more.
<i>somover</i> , to remove (earth).	

Words.

The intention, <i>la intención</i> .	to dine, <i>comer</i> .
the place, <i>el lugar</i> .	to doubt, <i>dudar</i> .
the bill of exchange, <i>la letra de cambio</i> .	blunt, <i>embotado</i> , - <i>da</i> , or <i>boto</i> , - <i>a</i> .
the behaviour, <i>la conducta</i> .	furious, <i>enfurecido</i> .
the farrier, <i>el herrador</i> ² .	the pipe, <i>la pipa</i> .
the movement, <i>el ejercicio</i> .	the tobacco, <i>el tabaco</i> .
the promise, <i>la promesa</i> .	to smoke, <i>fumar</i> .

Traducción. 59.

I bet (that) I guess (*adivinar*) what (*lo que*) you are thinking, and that you do not guess what I think. This man shows good intentions. I breakfast at eight o'clock, I dine at one, and go to bed at eleven. (The) war depopulates the countries, and stains with blood the places which are its theatre. Do discount me this bill of exchange! I fear that you will not approve of my conduct. I do not think that these gentlemen will agree to it. I doubt whether (*si*) you remember me (*Gen.*). He wishes me to (*que yo*) exchange my watch for his. I doubt whether it (will) also rain(s) in the afternoon. I do not think (that) this farrier shoes my horse well. Take (*Haga usted*) more exercise, lest you (*transl.* that you do not) become too stout. I approve of all (*cuanto*) he has done. Do not forget (*tr.* recollect) your promises, my friend! Go to bed; you are very tired. We breakfast at the same (*mismo*, -*a*) hour as (*que*) my father breakfasts. Do grind this knife, it is too blunt. How much does this book cost? My book costs seven pesetas. The furious soldiers destroyed the whole house. Do not be afraid, sir, the dog does not bite. We disapprove of your sister's conduct; why do not you disapprove of it? Why do you not play with us? Pray, sir, tell me whether (*tr. que me diga*) we return at eight o'clock or at half past eight? Come back (return) at half past eight o'clock. This flower smells (*fr. oler*) very nice (*tr. agreeably*). In the morning I (use to) smoke a pipe of tobacco, and in the evening a couple of (*un par de*) cigars.

¹ Obsolete.² From *ferrum* (Latin), French: *le fer*; *maréchal-ferrant*.

Conversación.

- ¿Acuéstate, amigo mio? ¡Gracias! No tengo gana de acostarme.
- ¿Cuánto cuesta ese chaleco? Cuesta dos duros.
- ¿No desaprueba V. la conducta de ese hombre? Verdad es que (*certainly*) la desapruebo; pero ¿qué puedo hacer?
- ¿Cuál es el efecto de la guerra? La guerra demuele las ciudades y despuebla los estados (*states*).
- ¿Qué espera V.? Espero que encuentre él á mi deudor (*debtor*).
- ¡Yo no tengo la culpa! ¿Por qué me reprueba V.? No te repruebo á tí, sino á tu primo que ha cometido (*committed*) la bobería (*stupidity*)*.
- ¿Muerde ese perro? ¡Cuidado! (*Take care!*) El perro es muy furioso (*savage*).
- ¿Truena? No he oído (*heard*) tronar.
- ¿No se acuerda V. de mi criado Juan? Me acuerdo muy bien de él; está ahora en casa del general Nuñez.
- ¿Á qué hora se acuesta V.? Ordinariamente me acuesto á las once y media.
- ¿Qué le ha contado á V. el criado? Nada. Jamás me cuenta cosa alguna.
- ¿Cuánto cuestan esos guantes? Me cuestan dos pesetas y algunos céntimos.
- ¿Ruégole á V., me diga que hora es? Han dado las cinco.
- ¿Á qué hora almuerza V.? Yo almuerzo á las once, y mi padre almuerza á las once y media.

Reading Exercise.

Al caer de la tarde.

Cuán plácido el río brilla!
 En ondas de azul y plata
 Luengamente se dilata
 Con murmurante rumor:
 Y los sauces de la orilla
 Se miran en la corriente
 Y mezclan confusamente
 Su verde y albo color.

* Who has made a fool of himself.

El caminante cansado
 Reposo al dulce sombrío,
 Y el bochorno del estio
 Templó en el fresco raudal:

Por el herboso collado
 Pastando van las ovejas,
 Y tañe cántigas viejas
 El descuidado zagal.

Ni en los nidos cantan aves,
 Ni en las granjas las palomas;
 El valle destila aromas,
 Bulle céfiro sutil;

Voces lánguidas, suaves
 En redor vuelan perdidas
 Como tiernas despedidas
 De las flores del pensil.

El sol, hiriendo á soslayo
 Por la frondosa enramada,
 La selva deja bañada
 De rojo y áureo esplendor:

Y amortecido su rayo
 Desciende tranquilo y puro,
 Y en el cielo azul, oscuro
 Perdido vaga un fulgor.

[José M^a de Arteaga, "Rimas Libres."]

Thirty-seventh Lesson. — Lección treinta y siete.

The Irregular Verbs continued.

The *Third Class* is composed of verbs ending in *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, and *ucir*. With this class* *c* is changed into *zc*, whenever *a* or *o* follows.

Models.

I.	II.	III.	IV.
<i>Nacer</i> ,	<i>Crecer</i> ,	<i>Conocer</i> ,	<i>Lucir</i> ,
to be born.	to grow.	to know.	to shine.

* Exceptions are *hacer*, to make, to do (see page 177), and *cozer*, to cook (see page 156). Again *mecer*, to rock, and *empecer*, to damage, to hurt, which form *mezo* and *empezo*.

Present.

Indicative.

<i>Nazco</i>	<i>Crezco</i>	<i>Conozco</i>	<i>Luzco</i>
<i>naces</i>	<i>creces</i>	<i>conoces</i>	<i>luces</i>
<i>nace</i>	<i>crece</i>	<i>conoce</i>	<i>luce</i>
<i>nacemos</i>	<i>crecemos</i>	<i>conocemos</i>	<i>lucimos</i>
<i>nacéis</i>	<i>crecéis</i>	<i>conocéis</i>	<i>lucís</i>
<i>nacen.</i>	<i>crecen.</i>	<i>conocen.</i>	<i>lucen.</i>

Subjunctive.

<i>Nazca</i>	<i>Crezca</i>	<i>Conozca</i>	<i>Luzca</i>
<i>nazcas</i>	<i>crezcas</i>	<i>conozcas</i>	<i>luzcas</i>
<i>nazca</i>	<i>crezca</i>	<i>conozca</i>	<i>luzca</i>
<i>nazcamos</i>	<i>crezcamos</i>	<i>conozcamos</i>	<i>luzcamos</i>
<i>nazcáis</i>	<i>crezcáis</i>	<i>conozcáis</i>	<i>luzcáis</i>
<i>nazcan.</i>	<i>crezcan.</i>	<i>conozcan.</i>	<i>luzcan.</i>

Imperative.

<i>Nace</i>	<i>Crece (tú)</i>	<i>Conoce</i>	<i>Luce</i>
<i>naced</i>	<i>creced</i>	<i>conoced</i>	<i>lucid</i>
<i>nazca.</i>	<i>crezca V.</i>	<i>conozca V.</i>	<i>luzca V.</i>

N.B.—A further peculiar anomaly is presented by the *definite*, and its derived forms, of verbs in *ducir*, which change the *c* of their stem into *j*. Here *e* is added for the *first* pers. sing. instead of *i*, *o* instead of *í* for the *third* pers. sing., and *eron* in lieu of *ieron* for the *third* pers. plur. of the *definite*, whilst the *i* of the forms in *iese*, *iere*, *iera* is dropped.

Conducir, to lead.

Present.

<i>Indicative.</i>	<i>Subjunctive.</i>
<i>Conduzco</i> , I lead	<i>Conduzca</i> , I lead.
<i>conduces</i>	<i>conduzcas</i>
<i>conduce</i>	<i>conduzca</i>
<i>conducimos</i>	<i>conduzcamos</i>
<i>conducís</i>	<i>conduzcáis</i>
<i>conducen.</i>	<i>conduzcan.</i>

Imperative.

Conduce (tú), lead (thou). *conducid*, lead (you).
Conduzca V., do lead.

Definite.

Conduje (and not *i*) I led. *condujimos*
condujiste *condujisteis*
condujo (and not *í*) *condujeron* (and not *ieron*).

Subjunctive.

<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Future.</i>	<i>Conditional.</i>
<i>condujese</i> , that I led	<i>condujere</i> , that I shall lead	<i>condujera</i> , that I should lead
<i>condujeses</i> , etc.	<i>condujeres</i> , etc.	<i>condujeras</i> , etc.

Verbs conjugated like those in *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, *ucir**:

<i>Abastecer</i> , to supply with provisions, to victual (a ship).	<i>desconocer</i> , not to know, to know badly.
* <i>aborreecer</i> , to abhor.	<i>desembravecer</i> , to tame.
<i>acaecer</i> , to happen.	<i>desembruteecer</i> , to lose one's roughness.
<i>acontecer</i> , to happen.	* <i>desencarecer</i> , to get cheaper.
<i>acrecer</i> , to increase.	* <i>desensfurecer</i> , to soften anger.
<i>adolecer</i> , to fall ill.	<i>desenmohecer</i> , to free from rust.
<i>adormecer</i> , to lull to sleep; -se, to fall asleep. [ful.	<i>desenmudecer</i> , to break silence.
* <i>agradecer</i> , to owe, to be grateful.	<i>desentorpecer</i> , to recover from numbness.
<i>alborecer</i> , to dawn.	<i>desentumecer</i> , to recover from numbness.
<i>amanecer</i> , to dawn, to be or to arrive somewhere in the morning.	<i>desentristecer</i> , to free from sadness.
<i>amarillecer</i> , to get yellow.	<i>desfallecer</i> , to faint.
<i>amortecer</i> , to benumb.	<i>deshumedecer</i> , to desiccate.
<i>anohecer</i> , to grow dark.	* <i>desobedecer</i> , to disobey.
* <i>aparecer</i> , to appear.	<i>desplacer</i> , to displease.
* <i>apetecer</i> , to wish, to desire.	<i>desvanecer</i> , to vanish.
<i>aterecerse</i> , to grow stiff with cold.	<i>displacer</i> , to displease.
<i>Blanquecer</i> , to blanch coin.	<i>Embebecer</i> , to astonish.
<i>Canecer</i> , to grow grey.	<i>embellecer</i> , to embellish.
* <i>carecer de</i> , to want, to be in want of.	<i>embravecer</i> , to become furious.
* <i>compadecer</i> , to pity.	<i>embrutecer</i> , to become brutal.
* <i>comparecer</i> , to appear.	<i>empequeñecer</i> , to lessen.
* <i>complacer</i> , to please.	<i>empobrecer</i> , to become poor.
<i>conocer</i> , to know.	<i>empoltronecerse</i> , to grow lazy.
<i>convalecer</i> , to be convalescent.	<i>enaltecer</i> , to elevate, to praise.
<i>Decrecer</i> , to diminish.	<i>enardecer</i> , to inflame.
<i>denegrecer</i> , to blacken.	<i>encalvecer</i> , to grow bald.
<i>desadormecer</i> , to wake.	<i>encallecer</i> , to grow corns (on the hands, feet).
<i>desaperecer</i> , to disappear.	<i>encandecer</i> , to heat to a white heat.
<i>desbastecer</i> , to plane.	
<i>desbravecer</i> , to tame.	

* Of *pacer*, to pasture, and *repacer*, to pasture again, the 1st pers. sing. Ind. Present is not in use.

- encanecer*, to become grey.
encarecer, to render dear; to rise in price.
encorecer, to heal the skin.
encrudecer, to make raw.
encruelecer, to make cruel.
enedecer, to cut the teeth.
endurecer, to harden.
enflaquecer, to get thin.
**enfurecerse*, to get enraged.
engrandecer, to enlarge.
ennudecer, to become dumb.
ennegrecer, to blacken.
ennoblecer, to make noble.
**enorgullecerse*, to be proud.
enrarecer, to rarify.
enriquecer, to enrich.
enrojecer, to redden.
enronquecer, to become hoarse.
ensoberbecer, to make proud.
ensordecer, to deafen, to become deaf.
enternecer, to soften.
entorpecer, to benumb, to hinder.
entristecer, to sadden.
envanecer, to make vain.
envejecer, to get old.
envilecer, to degrade.
escarnecer, to scoff.
**establecer*, to establish.
**extremecer*, to tremble.
- Fallecer*, to die.
**favorecer*, to favour.
florecer, to blossom, bloom.
fortalecer, to fortify.
Guarecerse, to take shelter.
guarnecer, to adorn.
Humedecer, to moisten.
Langüedecer, to languish.
**Merecer*, to merit.
Nacer, to be born.
**Obedecer*, to obey.
**ofrecer*, to offer.
oscurecer, to become dark.
Pacer, to graze.
**padecer*, to suffer.
palidecer, to become pale.
parecer, to seem.
perecer, to perish.
**permanecer*, to remain.
**pertenercer*, to belong.
Reblandecer, to soften.
**reconocer*, to recognize.
recrudecer, to increase.
rejuvenecer, to grow young again.
renacer, to be born, to regenerate.
resplandecer, to shine.
restablecer, to re-establish.
reverdecer, to grow green again.

Like *conducir* are conjugated: *aducir*, to adduce; *traducir*, to translate; *producir*, to produce; *deducir*, to deduct; *educir*, to elicit; *inducir*, to induce; *introducir*, to introduce; *reducir*, to reduce; *reproducir*, to reproduce; *seducir*, to seduce.

Formerly the *pres. Ind.* and *Subj.* of the verbs in *ucir* terminated in *uzgo* and *uzga* (*traduzgo*, *traduzga*) instead of *uzco* and *uzca*.

The **Fourth Class** of irregular verbs consists entirely of verbs belonging to the *third* conjugation. They change the *e* of the stem into *í*, as will be seen by the following Model. All the forms not mentioned below, or not marked by bolder type are regular.

Pedir, to ask.Gerund. *Pidiendo*, asking.

Indicative.	Definite.	Imperative.
	<i>Present.</i>	
<i>Pido</i> , I ask	<i>Pedí</i> , I asked	<i>Pide</i> (<i>tú</i>), ask (thou).
<i>pides</i>	<i>pediste</i>	<i>pedid</i> , ask (you).
<i>pide</i>	<i>pidió</i>	<i>pida</i> <i>V.</i> , do ask.
<i>pedimos</i>	<i>pedimos</i>	
<i>pedís</i>	<i>pedisteis</i>	
<i>piden.</i>	<i>pidieron.</i>	

Subjunctive.

<i>Present.</i>	<i>Imperfect.</i>	<i>Future.</i>	<i>Conditional.</i>
<i>Pida</i> , I ask	<i>Pidiese</i> , that I asked	<i>Pidiere</i> , that I shall ask	<i>Pidiera</i> , that I should ask
<i>pidas</i>	<i>pidieses</i>	<i>pidieres</i>	<i>pidieras</i>
<i>pida</i>	<i>pidiese</i>	<i>pidiere</i>	<i>pidiera</i>
<i>pidamos</i>	<i>pidiésemos</i>	<i>pidiéremos</i>	<i>pidiéramos</i>
<i>pidáis</i>	<i>pidieseis</i>	<i>pidiereis</i>	<i>pidierais</i>
<i>pidan.</i>	<i>pidiesen.</i>	<i>pidieren.</i>	<i>pidieran.</i>

The following verbs are conjugated like *pedir*:

N.B.—Verbs in *-gir* change *g* into *j* before *a* and *o*, as from *colegir*, to gather, *colijo*, *colija*, etc.

- | | |
|---|--|
| * <i>Ceñir</i> , to gird. | * <i>despedir</i> , to discharge (a servant, etc.). |
| <i>colegir</i> , to gather. | * <i>despedirse</i> , to bid farewell. |
| <i>comedirse</i> , to moderate oneself. | <i>desteñir</i> , to lose colour, to stain. |
| * <i>competir</i> , to emulate, to compete. | * <i>Elegir</i> , to select. |
| * <i>concebir</i> , to conceive. | * <i>embestir</i> , to attack. |
| <i>conseguir</i> , to succeed. | <i>engreir</i> , to make proud; <i>-se</i> , to bloat, to swell. |
| <i>constreñir</i> , to constrain, to oblige. | <i>envestir</i> , to invest (obsolete). |
| * <i>corregir</i> , to correct. | <i>estreñir</i> , to obstruct, to con- |
| <i>Derretir</i> , to melt. | stipate. |
| <i>desceñir</i> , to ungird. | * <i>expedir</i> , to despatch. |
| * <i>descomedirse</i> , to act or speak unmannerly. | <i>Freir</i> , to fry. |
| <i>deservir</i> , to be disobliging. | * <i>Gemir</i> , to lament, to groan. |
| <i>desleir</i> , to dissolve. | <i>Henchir</i> , to fill. |
| <i>desmedirse</i> , to act or speak recklessly. | <i>heñir</i> , to knead, to mould. |
| | <i>Impedir</i> , to prevent. |
| | <i>inseguir</i> , to follow. |

- investir*, to invest.
 * *Medir*, to measure.
 * *Pedir*, to ask for (things), to require, to order.
 * *perseguir*, to persecute.
proseguir, to continue.
receñir, to gird tight.
recolegir, to gather (deduct).
reelegir, so re-elect.
refreir, to fry well.
 * *Regir*, to govern (Pr. *rijo*).
rehenchir, to fill up again.
 * *reir*, to laugh*. [der.
 * *rendir*, to render, to surren-
- * *reñir*, to fight (cocks, etc.), to scold.
 * *repetir*, to repeat.
reteñir, to dye again, to sound, to tinkle**.
 * *revestir*, to clothe anew.
 * *Seguir*, to follow.
 * *servir*, to serve.
 * *sonreir*, to smile.
subseguir, to immediately follow.
 * *Teñir*, to dye.
 * *Vestir*, to clothe.

Note.—For the sake of euphony, all the verbs in which the termination of the infinitive *-ir* is preceded by *ñ*, *ll*, or *ch*, drop the *i*, whenever one of the aforesaid consonants would otherwise be followed by *te* or *to*. Thus:

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Gerund.</i>
<i>Reñir</i>	<i>riñendo</i> (and not <i>riñiendo</i>).
<i>Henchir</i>	<i>hinchendo</i> (> > <i>hinchiendo</i>).

<i>Definite.</i>	
<i>riñó</i>	(and not <i>riñió</i>).
<i>hinchó</i>	(> > <i>hinchió</i>).

<i>Future Subj.</i>	
<i>riñere.</i>	
<i>hinchere.</i>	

Words.

The chase, } <i>la caza.</i>	the sword, <i>la espada.</i>
hunting, }	the workman, <i>el obrero.</i>
the way, <i>el camino.</i>	the power, <i>el poder.</i>
the opportunity, <i>la ocasión.</i>	the cloak, <i>la capa, el abrigo.</i>
the position, <i>la posición.</i>	the glass, <i>el vaso.</i>
the expense, <i>el gasto, el desembolso.</i>	the lie, <i>la mentira.</i>
the neighbourhood, <i>las cercanías, la vecindad.</i>	southern, <i>meridional.</i>
the payment, <i>el pago, salario.</i>	noxious, <i>dañoso, nocivo.</i>
	it is cold, <i>hace frío.</i>

* Verbs in *eir* drop one *i* whenever two *i*'s should meet, thus: *riendo*, laughing (instead of *riendo*); *riese*, that he laughed (instead of *riese*).

** *Reteñir*, in the signif. "to sound, to tinkle," is also written *retiñir* (fr. *tañer*). The conjugation is the same.

Traducción. 60.

Where are you taking (use the Pres. of *to lead*) that dog? I am taking (*lead*) it hunting. Where do you think (that) this way leads (*subj.*), if it does not lead to Barcelona? Where do you think (that) this plant grows (*subj.*)? I do not believe it (*n. creo que*) grows but (*más que*) in South America. I obey my parents: obey yours! Do obey me! I offer you the best opportunity to remain in your situation. Where did you lead (*Def.*) me yesterday? The master did not wish (*no quiso*) me to translate (*tr.* that I translated) the story. I limit (*tr.* reduce) all my expenses. My brothers also limited (*Def.*) theirs. I recognize the country where I was born (*Def.*). What do you want of me? We often want things which would be very dangerous to us. I asked (*Def.*) (for) my payment, and the other workmen asked (for) theirs likewise. Ask what (*lo que*) you please (*tr.* wish), I shall give it you. I bade farewell (*Def.*) to (*de*) my friends, who followed (*Def.*) me sighing to the (street-door) door of the house. (It is God's will) God wishes that we serve all men as much as [it] is in our power. Take (*tr.* clothe yourself with) your cloak, it is cold. The foreigner filled (*Def.*) his glass and promised (*prometió*), laughing, that he would correct himself. I detest (the) lies! Do not laugh! Why do you not wish me to laugh (*tr.* that I laugh) if all the others laugh? I serve my king; serve (2nd pl.) yours also! If I did not fear that you would laugh (*fr. reirse*), I should beg you to tell me this story once more. I wish (*deseo*) you to (that you) (*tú*) repeat (*subj.*) your lesson. The general girt on (*Def.*) his sword. Obliging his friends to remain (*quedarse*) in the room, he found the opportunity to say a few words to me.

Conversación.

- | | |
|---|---|
| ¿Qué me pidió V.? | Le pedí á V. un favor que puede muy fácilmente hacerme. |
| ¿Quién (hinchó) llenó mi vaso? | No sé, pero me parece que el criado lo ha llenado. |
| ¿Por qué se rie V.? | Me río, porque V. no entiende lo que digo. |
| ¿Á quién sigue este perro? | Signe al cazador. |
| ¿Es preciso (<i>is it necessary, must I</i>) que yo siga lo que su hermano de V. me ha aconsejado (<i>advised</i>)? | Hará V. bien en seguirlo. |
| ¿Qué corrigió el maestro? | Corrigió las faltas que sus discípulos habían hecho (<i>made</i>) en la traducción. |

¡Repita V. la lección que dió V. esta mañana!	Ya la he repetido.
¿Á quién expide V. estos géneros (<i>goods</i>)?	Los expido al comerciante francés.
¿Se vistieron las señoras (<i>ladies</i>)?	No, Señora, aun no se han vestido.
¿De qué se rió el oficial (<i>officer</i>)?	Serió de la ineptitud (<i>awkwardness</i>) del recluta (<i>recruit</i>).
¿Quién tiñó este paño?	El tintorero (<i>dyer</i>) es quien lo ha teñido.
¿Ya (<i>already</i>) es tiempo de irse (<i>to go</i>)?	Si, es preciso que se vista V. al instante (<i>directly</i>).

Reading Exercise.

Diversidad de las Provincias de España.

Los Cántabros, entendiendo por este nombre todos los que hablan el idioma vizcaíno, son unos pueblos sencillos y de notoria probidad. Fueron los primeros marineros de Europa, y han mantenido siempre la fama de excelentes hombres de mar. Su país, aunque sumamente áspero, tiene una población numerosísima, que no parece disminuirse con las continuas Colonias que envía á la América. Aunque un vizcaíno se ausente de su patria, siempre se halla en ella como se encuentre un paisano suyo. Tienen entre sí tal unión, que la mayor recomendación que puede uno tener para con otro, es el mero hecho de ser vizcaíno; sin más diferencia entre varios de ellos para alcanzar el favor del poderoso, que la mayor ó menor inmediación de los lugares respectivos. El Señorío de Vizcaya, Guipúzcoa, Álava y el Reino de Navarra tienen tal pacto entre sí que algunos llaman á estos países las Provincias unidas de España.

Thirty-eighth Lesson. — Lección treinta y ocho.

The Irregular Verbs continued.

The *Fifth Class* of the partly irregular verbs consists entirely of verbs belonging to the third conjugation. Like those of the fourth class, they have *e* before the final consonant of the root, and change this *e* in some tenses into *ie*, in other tenses into *i*, as will be seen by the following example:

Sentir, to feel, to hear, etc.Gerund. *Sintiendo*, feeling.

Indicative.

Present.

Siento, I feel
sientes
siente
sentimos
sentís
sienten.

Definite.

Senti, I felt

sentiste
sintió

sentimos
sentisteis
sintieron.

Subjunctive.

Present.

Sienta, I feel
sientas
sienta
sintamos
sintáis
sientan.

Future.

Sintiere, (that) I
shall feel
sintieres
sintiere

sintiéremos
sintiereis
sintieren.

Imperfect.

Sintiese, (that) I felt
sintieses
sintiese
sintiésemos
sintieseis
sintiesen.

Conditional.

Sintiera, that I
should feel
sintieras
sintiera

sintiéramos
sintierais
sintieran.

Imperative.

Stente (*tú*), feel (thou). *Sentid*, feel (you).
Stenta V.,
Stentan VV., } do feel.

The same is the case with the following verbs:

<i>Adherir</i> , to adhere.	<i>disentir</i> , to be of another opinion.
* <i>advertir</i> , to inform, to advise.	* <i>divertir</i> , to divert, to amuse.
* <i>arrepentirse</i> , to repent.	<i>Entreggerir</i> , to intermix.
<i>asentir</i> , to consent.	<i>erguir</i> , to raise up.
<i>Concernir</i> , to concern.	* <i>Herir</i> , to wound.
* <i>conferir</i> , to confer.	* <i>hervir</i> , to glow, to seethe*.
<i>consentir</i> , consent.	* <i>Inferir</i> , to follow, to infer.
<i>controvertir</i> , to controvert.	<i>ingerir</i> , to intrude, to inject.
* <i>convertir</i> , to convert, to turn into.	<i>invertir</i> , to turn round, to invert. [hood.
* <i>Deferir</i> , to confer, to yield.	* <i>Mentir</i> , to lie, to tell a false-
* <i>desmentir</i> , to give the lie, to deny.	<i>Pervertir</i> , to pervert.
* <i>diferir</i> , to differ, to postpone.	* <i>preferir</i> , to prefer.
* <i>digerir</i> , to digest.	* <i>presentir</i> , to forebode.
<i>discernir</i> , to distinguish.	<i>proferir</i> , to proffer.

* French: *fervent*, glowing.

**Referir*, to refer.

**requerir*, to request.

resentirse, to resent, to be
angry. [regret.

**Sentir*, to feel, to hear, to

subvertir, to subvert.

sugerir, to suggest.

**Trasferir* or *transferir*, to
transfer.

**Zaherir*, to scold, to mortify.

The *Sixth* and *last Class* of the partly irregular verbs comprises the verbs in *uir* and *üir*, in which *u* is *not* mute before *i*, as in the verb *erguir*, but where this vowel is *pronounced*. They add a *y* in the following cases:

Huir, to flee*.

Gerund. *Huyendo*, fleeing.

Present.

Indic.	Subj.
<i>Huyo</i> , I flee	<i>Huya</i> , I flee
<i>huyes</i>	<i>huyas</i>
<i>huye</i>	<i>huya</i>
<i>huimos</i>	<i>huyamos</i>
<i>huís</i>	<i>huyáis</i>
<i>huyen</i> .	<i>huyan</i> .

Definite.

Huí, I fled
huiste
huyó

huimos
huisteis
huyeron.

Subjunctive.

Imperfect.	Future.
<i>Huyese</i> , (that) I fled	<i>Huyere</i> , (that) I shall flee
<i>huyeses</i>	<i>huyeres</i>
<i>huyese</i>	<i>huyere</i>
<i>huyésemos</i>	<i>huyéremos</i>
<i>huyeseis</i>	<i>huyereis</i>
<i>huyesen</i> .	<i>huyeren</i> .

Argüir, to argue.

Ger. *Arguyendo*** , arguing.

Present.

Indic.	Subj.
<i>Arguyo</i> , I ar- gue	<i>Arguya</i> , I ar- gue
<i>arguyes</i>	<i>arguyas</i>
<i>arguye</i>	<i>arguya</i>
<i>argüimos</i>	<i>arguyamos</i>
<i>argüís</i>	<i>arguyáis</i>
<i>arguyen</i> .	<i>arguyan</i> .

Definite.

Argüí, I argued
argüiste
arguyó

argüimos
argüisteis
arguyeron.

Subjunctive.

Imperfect.	Future.
<i>Arguyese</i> , (that) I ar- gued	<i>Arguyere</i> , (that) I shall argue
<i>arguyeses</i>	<i>arguyeres</i>
<i>arguyese</i>	<i>arguyere</i>
<i>arguyésemos</i>	<i>arguyéremos</i>
<i>arguyeseis</i>	<i>arguyereis</i>
<i>arguyesen</i> .	<i>arguyeren</i> .

* French: *fuir*.

** In all the forms where *ü* is *not* followed by *i*, the *diæresis* (*crema*), being superfluous, is dropped.

Conditional.

Huyera, (that) I should flee
huyeras
huyera

huyéramos
huyerais
huyeran.

Conditional.

Arguyera, (that) I should argue
arguyeras
arguyera

arguyéramos
arguyerais
arguyeran.

Imperative.

Huye (*tú*), flee (thou).
Huid, flee (you).
huya *V.*, do flee.

Imperative.

Arguye (*tú*), argue (thou).
Argüid, argue (you).
arguya *V.*, do argue.

N.B.—In comparing *y* and *y* in the above table, it must be born in mind that *y* shows simply a euphonic change, whilst *y* implies irregularity.

The same rules apply to:

**Atribuir*, to attribute.
Circuir, to surround.
 **concluir*, to finish, to conclude.
confluir, to meet (of rivers).
constituir, to constitute.
 **construir*, to build.
 **contribuir*, to contribute.
Derruir, to demolish.
desobstruir, to clear away.
destituir, to deprive, to dismiss.
destruir, to destroy.
diluir, to dissolve.
 **disminuir*, to diminish.
 **distribuir*, to distribute.
Estatuir, to enact.
excluir, to exclude.
Fluir, to flow.
Gruir, to crank.
Imbuir, to imbue.

imbuirse, to appropriate.
 **incluir*, to include.
 **influir*, to influence.
instituir, to institute.
 **instruir*, to instruct.
Luir, to free from taxes.
Obstruir, to obstruct.
Prostituir, to prostitute.
Recluir, to seclude.
reconstituir, to re-establish.
reconstruir, to rebuild.
redargüir, to retort.
refluir, to flow back.
rehuir, to withdraw (from doing a thing).
 **restituir*, to restore.
 **retribuir*, to reward, to pay back.
 **Sustituir* or *substituir*, to substitute.

Words.

The picture, *el cuadro*.
 the engraving } *la estampa*,
 (copperplate), } *la lámina*.
 the superior, *el jefe*.
 the absence, *la ausencia*.
 the stomach, *el estómago*.
 the projectile, *el proyectil*.

the vice, *el vicio*.
 the punishment, *el castigo*.
 the knowledge, *el conocimiento*.
 the diligence, *la diligencia*.
 the condition, *la condición*.
 the levity, frivolity, *la ligereza*.

the attention, <i>la atención</i> .	contemptible, } <i>despreciable</i> .
just, <i>justo</i> .	despicable, }
sage, wise, <i>sabio</i> .	to accept, <i>aceptar</i> .
lively, <i>vivo</i> .	to escape, <i>escapar</i> .
feeble, <i>débil</i> .	

Traducción. 61.

I prefer these pictures to those engravings. We prefer (the) virtue to (the) beauty. Did (*Def.*) you prefer wine or beer? I should prefer beer if it were good. I inform my superior by letter that I cannot (*podré*) depart to-morrow. These gentlemen felt very well that they were wrong (to be wrong, *no tener razón*). I did not think that he would feel so much (from *vivo*, lively) the absence of his best friend. God distributes all his gifts justly and wisely. To whom do you attribute your misfortune (*desgracia*), to yourself or to others? Many people never feel the rudeness (*lo inconveniente*) of their behaviour. My stomach is very weak; it digests (*no —*) scarcely (*casi*) anything. A man who lies is always contemptible. We never lie; why will you not believe us? Good children always cling (*tr.* adhere) to their parents (*padres*). The new projectiles wounded (*Def.*) a great many soldiers. Restore me what you have taken (me)! We (avoid) flee bad company (*pl.*). Flee (from, *tr.* the) vice, for it makes thee unhappy. I conclude from your letter that you will not accept my conditions. I fled (*Def.*) when I saw the hostile (*enemigo*) rider come. The culprit (*el reo*) was well aware (*tr.* felt [*Def.*] well) that, although he denied, he could (*podía*) not escape (the) punishment. We all feel that we want (*haber menester*) one another (*pl.*). I repent (of) my levity and I beg you to pardon me this time. Misfortune converts better than the best sermons (*sermon*, *m.*). We amused ourselves much to-day; do you also enjoy yourself? Thou liest, child! Do not lie, because (the) lies offend (*ofender*) God. We attain knowledge only by great diligence and great attention.

Conversación.

¿Qué arguye V. de lo que he dicho?	Arguyo de sus palabras de V. que no tiene razón.
¿Qué hará V. con ese dinero?	Lo distribuiré entre (<i>among</i>) los pobres.
¿Por qué huye V.?	Huyo, porque tengo miedo de que el perro me muerda.
¿En qué instruye V. á los niños?	En la historia y en la geografía.
¿Ha restituido V. el dinero que le ha prestado (<i>lent</i>) mi primo?	Se lo restituí ayer.

- | | |
|--|--|
| ¿Por qué destruye V. ese hermoso cuadro? | No lo destruyo; quiero sólo limpiarlo (<i>to clean</i>). |
| ¿Se divierte V. en esta compañía? | Me divierto mucho, pero el año ántes me divertí más. |
| ¿Siente V. mucho dolor? | Ahora no siento nada. |
| ¿Se divirtió su hermana de V. ayer en el concierto? | Se divirtió muchísimo. |
| ¿Prefiere V. partir hoy ó mañana? | Prefiero partir mañana, porque hoy no estoy bueno. |
| ¿Hierve el agua? | Todavía no hierve, pero hervirá luego. |
| ¿Se quejó (<i>complained</i>) el militar (<i>soldier</i>)? | Sintiéndose herido, se quejó. |

Reading Exercise.

Diversidad de las Provincias de España. (Continuación.)

Los de Asturias y las Montañas hacen sumo aprecio de su genealogía y de la memoria de haber sido aquel país el que produjo la reconquista de España con la expulsión de nuestros abuelos. Su población demasiado para la miseria y estrechez de la tierra, hace que un número considerable de ellos se emplee continuamente en Madrid en la librea, que es la clase inferior de criados; de modo que, si yo fuese natural de este país y me hallara con coche en la Corte, examinaría con mucha madurez los papeles de mis cocheros y lacayos, por no tener algún día la mortificación de ver á un primo mío echar cebada á mis mulas, ó á uno de mis tíos limpiarme los zapatos. Sin embargo de todo esto varias familias respetables de esta Provincia se mantienen con el debido lustre, son acreedoras á la mayor consideración, y producen continuamente Oficiales del más alto mérito en el Ejército y Marina.

Los Gallegos en medio de la pobreza de su tierra son robustos; se esparcen por toda España á emprender los trabajos más duros, para llevar á sus casas algún dinero á costa de tan penosa industria. Sus soldados, aunque carecen de aquel lucido exterior de otras naciones, son excelentes para la infantería por su subordinación, dureza de cuerpo y hábito de sufrir incomodidades de hambre, sed y cansancio.

Thirty-ninth Lesson. — Lección treinta y nueve.

Verbs entirely irregular or with irregularities otherwise not classified.

Besides the verbs hitherto enumerated, there are others in Spanish, which must be considered almost *entirely irregular*, as their deviations from the regular verbs are as a rule too manifold and too considerable to be comprised in classes. We therefore give them in their alphabetical order, as is usual in most Spanish grammars; still, some of these quite irregular verbs show a certain similarity in their conjugation, and it will be rather advantageous for the pupil to learn those together which are similarly conjugated. The order in which they ought to be learnt is indicated by the number in brackets after the English word. The forms not indicated or not distinguished by bolder type are regular.

1. **Andar**, to walk. (1.)

Pres. Indic.	Ando, etc.
Imperf. »	Andaba, etc.
Defin. »	<i>Anduve, anduviste, anduvo, anduvimos, anduvisteis, anduvieron.</i>
Imperf. Subj.	<i>Anduviese, anduvieses, anduviese, anduviésemos, etc.</i>
Future »	<i>Anduviere, anduvieres, etc.</i>
Condit. »	<i>Anduviera, anduvieras, etc.</i>

N.B.—In the same way is conjugated *desandar*, to go back the same road.

2. **Asir**, to seize. (20.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Asgo, ases, ase, asimos, asís, asen.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Asga, asgas, asga, asgamos, asgáis, asgan.</i>
Imperative.	¡Ase (tú)! ¡asga V.! ¡asid!

N.B.—Like *asir*, *desasir*, to let go.

3. **Caber**, to give way, to contain. (4.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Quepo, cabes, cabe, cabemos, cabéis, caben.</i>
Defin. »	<i>Cupe, cupiste, cupo, cupimos, cupisteis, cupieron.</i>
Future »	<i>Cabré, etc.</i>
Condit. »	<i>Cabría, etc.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Quepa, quepas, quepa, quepamos, quepáis, quepan.</i>

Imperf. Subj.	<i>Cupiese, cupieses, cupiese, cupiésemos, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Cupiere, cupieres, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Cupiera, cupieras, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Cabe (tú)! ¡ <i>quepa</i> V.! ¡cabad!

4. **Caer**, to fall. (6.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Caigo, caes, cae, caemos, caéis, caen.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Caiga, caigas, caiga, caigamos, caigáis, caigan.</i>
Gerund.	<i>Cayendo.</i> Past part. <i>Caído.</i>

N.B.—Like *caer*,

decaer, to decay,

recaer, to have a relapse, fall upon.

5. **Oir**, to hear. (8.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Oigo, oyes, oye, oimos, oís, oyen.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Oí, oíste, oyó, oimos, oísteis, oyeron.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Oiga, oigas, oiga, oigamos, oigáis, oigan.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Oyese, oyeses, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Oyere, oyeres, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Oyera, oyeras, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡ <i>Oye</i> (tú)! ¡ <i>oiga</i> V.! ¡oid!*
Gerund.	<i>Oyendo.</i> Past part. <i>Oído.</i>

N.B.—Like *oir*,

desoir, not to listen to (disobey),

entreoir, to hear indistinctly,

trasoir, to misunderstand.

N.B.—*y* shows a euphonic change: *y* an irregularity.

6. **Dar**, to give. (2.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Doy, das, da, damos, dáis, dan.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Daba, dabas, daba, dábamos, dabais, daban.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Dí, díste, dió, dimos, dísteis, dieron.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Dé, des, dé, demos, déis, den.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Diese, diese, diese, diésemos, dieseis, diesen.</i>
Future >	<i>Diere, dieres, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Diera, dieras, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡ <i>Dá</i> (tú)! ¡ <i>dé</i> V.! ¡dad!

The same *desdar*, to untwist a rope.

7. **Decir**, to say, to tell. (9.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Digo, dices, dice, decimos, decís, dicen.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Decía, decías, decía, decíamos, decíais, decían.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dijeron.</i>
Future >	<i>Diré, dirás, dirá, diremos, diréis, dirán.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Diría, dirías, diría, diríamos, diríais, dirían.</i>

* Compare the old French word *Oyez*, hear you, from the verb *Ouir*.

Pres. Subj.	<i>Diga, digas, diga, digamos, digáis, digan.</i>
Imperf. »	<i>Dijese, dijeses, dijese, etc.</i>
Future »	<i>Dijere, dijeres, etc.</i>
Condit. »	<i>Dijera, dijeras, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡ <i>Dí</i> (tú)! ¡ <i>diga</i> V.! ¡decid!
Gerund.	<i>Diciendo.</i> Past part. <i>Dicho.</i>

Like *decir* are conjugated its compounds as *contradecir*, to contradict; *desdecir*, to countermand; *predecir*, to predict; only in the 2nd Sing. Imperat. they do not form *-dí* but *-dice*, thus: *desdice* (tú). The two verbs *bendecir*, to bless, and *maldecir*, to curse, form the *Future*, *Conditional*, and *Imperative* regularly, as: Fut. *bendeciré* and *maldeciré*; Cond. *bendeciría* and *maldeciría*; Imperat. *bendice* (tú) and *maldice* (tú). They have a *double* form for the *past participle*—*viz.*, *bendecido* and *maldecido*, which, being a *real* participle, is used in the compound tenses of the verb (with *haber*); whereas the second past participle *maldito* and *bendito* is a verbal *adjective*, and therefore used with *ser* and *estar*. (See Less. 41.)

Words.

The youth (young man), <i>el joven.</i>	the arrival, { <i>(el arribo)</i> <i>la llegada.</i>
the army, <i>el ejército.</i>	the mutton, <i>el carnero.</i>
the purse, <i>el bolsillo.</i>	the beef, <i>la vaca.</i>
the policeman, <i>el municipal.</i>	the beggar, <i>el mendigo.</i>
the word, <i>la palabra.</i>	the pains, <i>el trabajo.</i>
the thunderbolt, <i>el trueno.</i>	pitiful, charitable, <i>piadoso, -a.</i>
the wedding, { <i>la boda,</i> <i>las nupcias.</i>	respectable, honest, <i>honrado.</i>
the cask, <i>la bota.</i>	to keep, to fulfil, <i>cumplir con.</i>
the ewer, gallon, <i>el cubo.</i>	to take care, } <i>andar con</i>
the ear, <i>la oreja.</i>	to march carefully, } <i>cuidado.</i>
the cook (f.), <i>la cocinera.</i>	to descend, <i>bajar.</i>
	to order, command, <i>mandar.</i>

Traducción. 62.

Napoleon passed (*tr.* went) (over) the Alps (*los Alpes*) with his army. Where did (*Imperf.*) you go last night? My friend told me that he was going (*Imperf.*) to Paris. It is not yet (*aun no . . .*) sure (*seguro*) whether I shall go (*Fut.*) to my cousin's (*f.*) wedding. How much did this cask hold? It held (*Def.*) six gallons of wine. I do not think (that) this theatre will hold 3,000 persons. How much do you think (that) this purse will hold? I fall from the tree. Do not fall; there lies (*hay*) a stone! The child will fall, if you do not (take) care. Do you hear the noise? I do not hear anything (*tr.* I hear nothing); we also hear nothing. Do you

hear (*Def.*) what this man says? Many people have ears, yet they do not hear. Yesterday I heard (*Def.*) the news of the queen's arrival. Listen, my friend! Was not this (a) thunder? I heard nothing. The policeman seizes the thief (*al ladrón*) in (*en*) the street. If I heard that you did not keep your word, I should be very sorry. *When I heard* (*Gerund.*) the thunder, I went down the mountain. What does the cook (*f.*) boil? I boil beef and mutton. What do you give me to (*para*) eat? I give you ham (*jamón*), bread, and wine. He gave (*Imperf.*) me thirty dollars. Last week I gave (*Def.*) you a hundred dollars. The charitable girl gave (*Def.*) the beggar some money. Do give me a cigar and some matches! I have given you nothing. What dost thou say, child? I say that my father sent (*Def.*) you the money yesterday. Tell me, sir, will you give me my salary, or not? We always speak (the) truth, but you have not spoken it. Tell me, shall you obey your master if he orders you [to do] something? Do not say that you are right, for the whole world knows (*sabe*) that you are wrong (*tr.* that you are [have] not right).

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|---|
| ¿Por dónde anduvo ayer su amigo de V.? | Fué á ver (<i>to see, to pay a visit</i>) á la marquesa de M., que llegó ayer, y nosotros fuimos tambien. |
| ¿Ha andado V. mucho hoy? | Hoy no; pero ayer anduve mucho. |
| ¿Qué me da V.? | Le doy á V. lo que V. me dió ayer. |
| ¡Dé V. algo á la desdichada madre! | Ya le dí ayer algún dinero. |
| ¿Qué le dieron á V. mis hermanas? | Me dieron algunos libros que mi hermano les dió el otro día. |
| ¿Qué quiere V.? | Le ruego á V. que me dé lo que me ha prometido. |
| ¿Qué dice V.? | No digo nada. |
| V. dijo que yo no había cumplido mi deber; ¿es verdad? | ¡No es verdad! ¡No he dicho tal cosa! |
| ¿Qué dice V. de este tiempo? | ¿Qué quiere V. que diga, sino que hace mal tiempo (<i>it is bad weather</i>)? |
| ¿Qué hace V. en la cocina (<i>kitchen</i>)? | Cuezo la carne (<i>meat</i>) para la comida de mediodía (<i>dinner</i>). |

¡Oiga V.! ¿No ha oído V. el trueno? No, señor, no oigo nada.

¿Á quién ha bendecido Jesucristo? Á todos los pueblos del mundo.

Reading Exercise.

Diversidad de las Provincias de España. (Continuación.)

Los Castellanos son de todos los pueblos del mundo los que merecen la primacia en línea de lealtad. Cuando el ejército del primer Rey de España de la casa de Francia quedó arruinado en la batalla de Zaragoza, la sola provincia de Soria dió á su Soberano un ejército nuevo y numeroso con que salir á campaña, y fué el que ganó las victorias, de que resultó la destrucción del ejército y bando austriaco. El ilustre historiador que refiere las revoluciones del principio de este siglo con todo el rigor y verdad que pide la historia para distinguirse de la fábula, pondera tanto la fidelidad de estos pueblos que dice será eterna en la memoria de los Reyes. Esta provincia aún conserva cierto orgullo nacido de su antigua grandeza, que hoy no se conserva sino en las ruínas de las ciudades y en la honradez de sus habitantes.

Extremadura produjo los conquistadores del nuevo mundo, y ha continuado siendo madre de insignes guerreros. Sus pueblos son poco afectos á las letras; pero los que entre ellos las han cultivado no han tenido menos éxito que sus compatriotas en las armas.

Fortieth Lesson. — Lección cuarenta.

The Entirely Irregular Verbs continued.

8. Dormir, to sleep. (11.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Duermo, duermes, duerme, dormimos, dormís, duermen.</i>
Defin. >	Dormí, dormiste, <i>durmió</i> , dormimos, dormisteis, <i>durmieron.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Duerma, duermas, duerma, durmamos, durmáis, duerman.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Durmiese, durmieses, durmiese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Durmiera, durmieres, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Durmiera, durmieras, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡ <i>Duerme</i> (tú)! ¡ <i>duerma</i> V.! ¡dormid!
Gerund.	<i>Durmiendo.</i> Past part. Dormido.

N.B.—The same, *adormir*, to lull.

9. **Hacer**, to do, to make, to let. (10.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Hago, haces, hace, hacemos, hacéis, hacen.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Hice, hiciste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron.</i>
Future >	<i>Haré, harás, hará, haremos, haréis, harán.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Haría, harías, haría, haríamos, haríais, harían.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Haga, hagas, haga, hagamos, hagáis, hagan.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Hiciese, hicieras, hiciese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Hiciere, hicieras, hiciere, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Hiciera, hicieras, hiciera, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Haz (tú)! ¡haga V.! ¡haced!
Gerund.	Haciendo. Past part. <i>Hecho.</i>

All the compounds follow *hacer*, such as:

contrahacer, to counterfeit,

deshacer, to undo,

rehacer, to do anew.

Satisfacer (to satisfy) is also conjugated like *hacer*, except in the Imperat., which forms *satisface*. The Condit. Subj. is *satisfaciera* rather than *satisficiera*, and the Imperf. Subj. *satisfaciese* rather than *satisficiese*. — *Liquefacer*, to liquefy, and *rarefacer*, to rarify, form *liquefaré, rarefaré*, etc.

10. **Ir**, to go; **irse**, to go away. (3.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Voy, vas, va, vamos, váis, van.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, ibais, iban.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Fuí, fuiste, fué, fuimos, fuistets, fueron.</i>
Future >	<i>Iré, irás, irá, iremos, iréis, irán.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Iría, irías, iría, iríamos, iríais, irían.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Vaya, vayas, vaya, vayamos, vayáis, vayan.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Fuese, fueses, fuese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Fuere, fueres, fuere, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Fuera, fueras, fuera, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Vé (tú)! ¡vaya V.! ¡id!
Gerund.	<i>Yendo.</i> Past part. <i>Ido.</i>

11. **Morir**, to die, like *Dormir*. (12.)

Pres. Indic. *muero*; Pres. Subj. *muera*; Defin. *morí*, etc.; *él murió*; Futur. Subj. *muriere*; Condit. Subj. *muriera*; Imperf. Subj. *muriese*, etc.; except the Past part., which is *muerto*.

The same *premorir*, to die before another.

12. **Poder**, to be able. (13.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Puedo, puedes, puede, podemos, podéis, pueden.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Pude, pudiste, pudo, pudimos, pudisteis, pudieron.</i>

Future Indic.	<i>Podré</i> , etc.
Condit. >	<i>Podría</i> , etc.
Pres. Subj.	<i>Pueda, puedas, pueda, podamos, podáis, puedan.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Pudiese</i> , etc.
Future >	<i>Pudiere</i> , etc.
Condit. >	<i>Pudiera</i> , etc.
Gerund.	<i>Pudiendo.</i> Past part. <i>Podido.</i>

13. Poner, to put, to place. (16.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Pongo, pones, pone, ponemos, ponéis, ponen.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Puse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusieron.</i>
Future >	<i>Pondré, pondrás, pondrá</i> , etc.
Condit. >	<i>Pondría, pondrías</i> , etc.
Pres. Subj.	<i>Ponga, pongas, ponga</i> , etc.
Imperf. >	<i>Pusiese, pusieses, pusiese</i> , etc.
Future >	<i>Pusiere, pusieras</i> , etc.
Condit. >	<i>Pusiera, pusieras</i> , etc.
Imperative.	¡ <i>Pon</i> (tú)! ¡ <i>ponga</i> V.! ¡ <i>poned</i> !
Past part.	<i>Puesto.</i>

Likewise the compounds, as: *componer*, to compose; *deponer*, to depose, etc.

14. Podrir, to rot (obsolete). (14.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Podro, pudres, pudre, podrimos, podris, pudren.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Podrí, podriste, pudrió, podrimos, podristeis, pudrieron.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Pudra, pudras</i> , etc.
Imperf. >	<i>Pudriese</i> , etc.
Future >	<i>Pudriere</i> , etc.
Condit. >	<i>Pudriera</i> , etc.
Gerund.	<i>Pudriendo.</i> Past part. <i>Podrido.</i>

N.B.—Some grammarians prefer the *Condicional Indic. podría* (inst. of *podría*), to distinguish it from the corresponding form of *podér*. In fact, *podrir* is only used with the stem in *o* in the Infinitive, and in the Past Part., *podrido*, otherwise being replaced by *pudrir*, which in its turn adopts the *o* for its Past Participle. The derivative *repudrirse*, to long, to wish ardently, is *regular*.

15. Querer, to be willing, to wish, to love. (15.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Quiero, quieres, quiere, queremos, queréis, quieren.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Quise, quisiste, quiso, quisimos, quisisteis, quisieron.</i>
Future >	<i>Querré, querrás, querrá</i> , etc.

Condit. Indic.	<i>Querria, querrias, etc.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Quiera, quieras, quiera, etc.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Quisiese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Quisiera, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Quisiera, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Quiere (tú)! ¡quiera V.! ¡quered!
Gerund.	Queriendo. Past part. Querido.

16. **Saber**, to know, to be able. (5.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Sé, sabes, sabe, sabemos, sabéis, saben.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Supé, supiste, supo, supimos, supisteis, supieron.</i>
Future >	<i>Sabré, sabrás, sabrá, sabremos, sabréis, sabrán.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Sabría, sabrías, etc.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Sepa, sepas, etc.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Supiese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Supiere, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Supiera, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Sabe (tú)! ¡sepa V.! ¡sabad!
Gerund.	Sabiendo. Past part. Sabido.

17. **Salir**, to go out; to arise. (18.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Salgo, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Salí, saliste, salió, salimos, salisteis, salieron.</i>
Future >	<i>Saldré, saldrás, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Saldría, saldrías, etc.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Salga, salgas, etc.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Saliese, etc.</i>
Future >	<i>Saliere, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Saliera, etc.</i>
Imperative.	¡Sal (tú)! ¡salga V.! ¡salid!

18. **Valer**, to be worth (17), is conjugated like *salir*, as are also all the compounds of *salir* and *valer*, as: *sobresalir*, to surpass, to be prominent; *equivaler*, to be equivalent.

The Imperative of *valer*, however, is more rarely *val* than *vale*. The compounds of *salir* and *valer* form a regular Imperative mood. Thus: *Sobresale tú; preválete!* (avail thyself!)

19. **Traer**, to bring, to fetch. (7.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Traigo, traes, trae, traemos, traéis, traen.</i>
Imperf. >	<i>Traía, traías, traía, traíamos, traíais, traían.</i>
Defin. >	<i>Traje, trajiste, traje, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron.</i>
Future >	<i>Traeré, etc.</i>
Condit. >	<i>Traería, etc.</i>
Pres. Subj.	<i>Traiga, traigas, etc.</i>

Imperf. Subj.	<i>Trajese</i> , etc.
Future »	<i>Trajere</i> , etc.
Condit. »	<i>Trajera</i> , etc.
Imperative.	¡Trae (tú)! ¡traiga V.! ¡traed!
Gerund.	<i>Trayendo</i> . Past part. <i>Traído</i> .

N.B.—The same *retraer*, to retract.

20. Venir, to come. (18.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Vengo, vienes, viene, venimos, venís, vienen.</i>
Defin. »	<i>Vine, viniste, vino, vinimos*, vinisteis, vinieron.</i>
Future »	<i>Vendré, vendrás, vendrá</i> , etc.
Condit. »	<i>Vendría</i> , etc.
Pres. Subj.	<i>Venga, vengas</i> , etc.
Imperf. »	<i>Viniere, vinieses</i> , etc.
Future »	<i>Viniere</i> , etc.
Condit. »	<i>Viniera</i> , etc.
Imperative.	¡Ven (tú)! ¡venga V.! ¡venid!
Gerund.	<i>Viniendo</i> . Past part. <i>Venido</i> .

Likewise all the compounds of *venir*, as: *convenir*, to agree, to be convenient; *revenir*, to come back, etc. The Imperative mood of these verbs occurs but seldom.

21. Ver, to see. (21.)

Pres. Indic.	<i>Veo, ves, ve, vemos, veís, ven.</i>
Imperf. »	<i>Veía**</i> , <i>veías, veía, veíamos, veíais, veían.</i>
Defin. »	<i>Vi, viste, vió, vimos, visteis, vieron.</i>
Future »	<i>Veré, verás</i> , etc.
Condit. »	<i>Vería, verías</i> , etc.
Pres. Subj.	<i>Vea, veas</i> , etc.
Imperf. »	<i>Viese, vieses</i> , etc.
Future »	<i>Viere</i> , etc.
Condit. »	<i>Viera</i> , etc.
Imperative.	¡Ve (tú)! ¡vea V.! ¡ved!
Gerund.	<i>Viendo</i> . Past part. <i>Visto</i> .

Likewise the compounds, as *prever*, to foresee; *rever*, to see again, etc.; whereas *proveer*, to provide, is regular.

Words.

The straw, <i>la paja</i> .	the ass, donkey, { <i>el asno</i> ,
the camp, <i>el campo</i> .	{ <i>el burro</i> .
the fortune, { <i>la hacienda</i> ,	the flower-pot, <i>el florero</i> .
{ <i>los bienes</i> .	the window, <i>la ventana</i> .
the cage, <i>la jaula</i> .	the chair, <i>la silla</i> .
the favour, <i>el favor</i> .	the coat, <i>el abrigo</i> .

* Old and rare forms: *veniste, venimos, venisteis*.

** Old form: *via*, etc.

infamous, <i>infame</i> .	to distribute, <i>distribuir</i> .
sick, ill, <i>enfermo</i> .	to order, to command, <i>mandar</i> .
slowly, <i>lentamente, despacio</i> .	to afflict, <i>afligir</i> .
quickly, <i>ligero, de prisa</i> .	to quarrel, to scold, <i>reñir</i> ,
willingly, with pleasure, <i>con</i>	<i>regañar</i> .
<i>mucho gusto</i> .	to comply with (a wish), <i>llenar</i> .
too, too much, <i>demasiado</i> .	to accept, <i>aceptar</i> .

Traducción. 63.

1. Do the children sleep? They do not yet sleep, but I thought (that) they slept. Do you think that I sleep? Do not sleep the whole day! The dog slept on the straw before the house. How am I to (*quiere V. que*) sleep if you make (fr. *hacer*) so much noise? The soldiers slept (*Imperf.*), when the general came into the camp. I die of hunger if you do not give me something to eat. Napoleon died (*Def.*) on (*en*) the island of St. Helena the 5th of May, 1821. Leonidas and his gallant companions died (*Def.*) at Thermopylae. Die, infamous (man)! — He is dying. — He is dead. At his death the father distributed his fortune among (*entre*) his sons. What *are* you doing (*Pres. Ind.*) here? I am making a cage for the bird of my little sister. I did (*Def.*) all (that) I could (*Imperf.*) do for a friend. Wilt thou do what I have ordered thee? No, I will not do it, because I cannot do it. I should [like to] do it, if you would also do me a favour. Always do (thou) thy duty, and thou wilt be contented and happy.

2. My friend did (*Def.*) what his father wished. Where are you going, my friend? — I am going, to see my brother, who is ill. It is (already) time; *let us go away* (1st pers. plur. Imperative from *irse*)! You go too slowly; go more quickly. Sancho Panza rode (*Imperf.* of *ir*) on his donkey like a Patriarch. I went (*Def.*) to tell him that I could not come. Do go home! There is nothing more to (*que*) (be done) do! I cannot tell you *how much* (*cuanto*) the behaviour of this man afflicted me. We cannot do all (that) we like. I could (*Def.*) not come. Could not the merchant give you back the money which you had lent him? I put (*Pres.*) these books on the table; put yours on it, too! I put (*Def.*) the flower-pots in (*tr. en*) the window. Where do you want me to put (say *will you that I put*) my hat? Put it on the chair! If you put (*Imperf.*) it on the table, (papa) father would scold (you). God did not wish (*Def.*) that the desire of the poor man should be accomplished (*reflective*: that the d. etc. accomplished itself, *tr. cumplirse*). I wish you not to go out to-day. If he wished us to go out, he would tell (us so) it us.

3. The enemy will not accept our conditions. I know that you have done what you could (do). Do you know that the countess arrived yesterday? I did not know it, but the footman told me so (*me lo*). If I knew that you would go out to-night, I should not come. How much is this coat worth? It may be worth (*valdrá*) about 20 dollars. Bring (in) the flowers which I (have) bought this morning! I shall bring them directly. Do you come at last, my friend? As you see, I come; but I should not have come if the tailor (*el sastre*) had not brought my coat. He did not come (*Def.*), because you had not invited him. Do come! I shall introduce you to my cousin (*f.*) Yesterday I saw a Turk or a Persian on the promenade. Did you see what I had written? I could not see it, because I was too busy (*ocupado*). I shall see what I shall be able to do for you.

Conversación.

- | | |
|--|---|
| ¿Duerme V.? | No duermo. ¿Qué tiene V. que decirme? |
| ¿Por qué está V. triste? | Porque mi mejor amigo <i>ha</i> muerto. |
| ¿Á que edad (<i>at what age</i>) murió su tía de V.? | Murió á los treinta y seis años. |
| ¿Qué hace V. en mi cuarto? | No hago nada. ¿Cómo haría cosa alguna en un cuarto que no es mío? |
| ¿Por qué no hace V. lo que le he dicho? | No lo hago, porque no es justo. |
| ¿Qué haremos mañana? | Haced lo que queráis. |
| ¿Hizo frío (<i>cold</i>) ayer en su cuarto de V.? | Sí, hizo mucho frío, pero hoy hace calor (<i>it is warm</i>). |
| ¿Por qué no se levanta V. (<i>do you rise</i>)? | No puedo levantarme, porque estoy enfermo. |
| ¿Podrá V. comenzar sus lecciones mañana? | Me parece que todavía no puedo comenzarlas, porque no tengo tiempo. |
| ¿Quién puso aquí el florero? | El criado lo puso en la mesa. |
| ¿Le gusta (<i>pleases</i>) á V. la comida (<i>meal</i>)? | Me gusta muchísimo. |
| ¿Quieres mucho á tu hermana? | Sí, la quiero mucho, porque es muy afable (<i>amiable</i>). |

Reading Exercise.

Diversidad de las Provincias de España. (Continuación.)

Las Andaluces, nacidos y criados en un país abundante, delicioso y ardiente, tienen fama de ser algo arrogantes; pero si este defecto es verdadero, debe atribuirse á su clima, siendo

tan notorio el influjo de lo físico sobre lo moral. Las ventajas con que naturaleza dotó aquellas Provincias hacen que miren con dispregio la pobreza de Galicia, la aspereza de Vizcaya y la sencillez de Castilla; pero como quiera que toda esto sea, entre ellos ha habido hombres insignes que han dado mucho honor á toda España, y en tiempos antiguos los Trajanos, Sénecas y otros semejantes, que pueden envanecer al país en que nacieron. La viveza, astucia y atractivo de las andaluzas las hace incomparables. Te aseguro, que una de ellas sería bastante para llenar de confusión el Imperio de Marruecos, de modo que todos nos matásemos unos á otros.

Los Murcianos participan del carácter de los Andaluces y Valencianos. Estos últimos están tenidos por hombres de sobrada ligereza, atribuyéndose este defecto al clima y suelo; pretendiendo algunos que hasta en los alimentos mismos falta aquel jugo que se halla en los de otros países. Mi imparcialidad no me permite someterme á esta preocupación por general que sea; antes debo observar que los valencianos de este siglo son los españoles que más progresos han hecho en las ciencias positivas y lenguas muertas.

Forty-first Lesson. — Lección cuarenta y una.

Present Participle. — Del participio de presente.

Verbs in *-ar* form their Present Participle by changing *ar* into *ante*; those in *-er*, *-ir* change these endings into *-iente*.

<i>amar,</i>	<i>amante,</i>	loving.
<i>pretender,</i>	<i>pretendiente,</i>	pretender.
<i>vivir,</i>	<i>viviente,</i>	(living) alive.

(a) The following forms are in *-ente*, not *-iente*:

From verbs in <i>-er</i> :	<i>expelente,</i> ejecting.
<i>El cedente,</i> the assigner.	<i>impelente,</i> impelling.
<i>antecedente,</i> previous, antecedent.	<i>repelente,</i> repelling.
<i>excedente,</i> exceeding.	<i>ponente,</i> reporter (of a committee).
<i>precedente,</i> preceding, example.	<i>componente,</i> component.
<i>procedente,</i> proceeding from, coming from.	<i>el exponente,</i> the applicant.
<i>sobreexcedente,</i> surpassing.	<i>el imponente,</i> the depositor.
	<i>el proponente,</i> the proposer.
	<i>absolvente,</i> absolving.

disolvente, dissolving.
envolvente, involving.
abstergente, detergent.
convergente, converging.
equivalente, equivalent.
incandescente, incandescent.
transcendente, transcendent.

From verbs in *-ir*:

Coincidente, concurrent.
reincidente, relapsed, old offender.
concurrente, concurrent, spectator, one of the audience.
ocurrente, witty.
conducente, leading.
preferente, preferent.
referente, referring.
adherente, adherent, follower.
fluente, flowing, fluent.

afuente, affluent.
confluente, confluent.
diluente, diluent.
dimitente, resigning.
remitente, the sender.
presidente, president, chairman.
residente, resident.
asistente, one of the audience, an orderly.
consistente, consisting, consistent.
existente, existing.
persistente, persistent.
resistente, resistant.
subsistente, subsistent.
astringente, astringent.
restringente, restraining.
regente, regent.
urgente, urgent, immediate.
suplente, substitute.

(b) The following are altogether irregular:

<i>Decir</i> ,	<i>el dicente</i> ,	witness.
<i>maldecir</i> ,	<i>maldiciente</i> ,	cursing, the curser.
<i>convencer</i> ,	<i>convincente</i> ,	convincing.
<i>abstenerse</i> ,	<i>abstinente</i> ,	abstaining.
<i>contener</i> ,	<i>continente</i> ,	the continent.
<i>reir</i> ,	<i>riente</i> ,	laughing.
<i>sonreir</i> ,	<i>sonriente</i> ,	smiling.
<i>seguir</i> ,	<i>siguiente</i> ,	following, next.
<i>padecer</i> ,	<i>paciente</i> ,	patient.
<i>servir</i> ,	<i>sirviente</i> ,	servant.
<i>delinquir</i> ,	<i>delincuente</i> ,	culprit.
<i>dormir</i> ,	<i>durmiente</i> ,	sleeper.
<i>morir</i> ,	<i>muriente</i> ,	dying.
<i>poder</i> ,	<i>pudiviente</i> ,	well-to-do.
<i>decaer</i> ,	<i>decadente</i> ,	decaying.
<i>entender</i> ,	<i>inteligente</i> ,	intelligent.
<i>obedecer</i> ,	<i>obediente</i> ,	obedient.
<i>permanecer</i> ,	<i>permanente</i> ,	permanent.

(c) A few have two distinct Participles with two significations:

<i>Asceder</i> , to accede	<i>accedente</i> , the one who accedes	<i>accidente</i> , accident, fit.
<i>ascender</i> , to ascend	<i>ascendente</i> , up (train, etc.)	<i>ascendiente</i> , ancestor.

<i>descender</i> , to descend	<i>descendente</i> , down (train, etc.)	<i>descendiente</i> , descendant.
<i>pertenecer</i> , to belong	<i>perteneciente</i> , belonging to	<i>pertinente</i> , pertinent.
<i>poder</i> , can, to be able	<i>potente</i> , powerful	<i>pudiviente</i> , well-to-do.
<i>poner</i> , to put, set	<i>ponente</i> , reporter (of a committee)	<i>poniente</i> , west, setting (sun).
<i>conseguir</i> , to obtain	<i>consequiente</i> , consequent, natural	<i>consecuente</i> , consequent, consistent.

(d) The following have no verb:

<i>Contraproducente</i> , producing contrary results.	<i>insolvente</i> , insolvent.
<i>diligente</i> , diligent.	<i>transeunte</i> , a passer-by.
<i>incesante</i> , continual.	<i>insignificante</i> , insignificant.
<i>solvente</i> , solvent.	<i>intransigente</i> , unyielding.
	<i>vigente</i> , existing.

Remark.

Present Participles as such—*i.e.*, with an active signification, and preserving the ruling power of the verb, exist no longer in the Spanish language; thus—Present Participles in Spanish are used:

(a) as Adjectives—*i.e.*:

- Una comida abundante*, a plentiful dinner.
- Una circunstancia agravante*.
- An aggravating circumstance.
- Un clima ardiente*, a hot climate.

(b) as Nouns—*i.e.*:

- | | |
|--|--|
| <i>Los creyentes</i> , the believers. | <i>el declarante</i> , witness. |
| <i>los protestantes</i> , the protestants. | <i>el delincuente</i> , the culprit, |
| <i>un asistente</i> , an orderly. | offender. |
| <i>un contribuyente</i> , a taxpayer. | <i>un reincidente</i> , an old offender. |
| <i>los gobernantes</i> , the rulers. | <i>el demandante</i> , the plaintiff. |

(c) or otherwise in certain phrases—*i.e.*:

- En dinero contante*, ready money.
- Corriente*, all right.
- Le conozco bastante*.
- I know him very well, or well enough.
- Tengo bastante*, I have plenty.
- Eso es suficiente*, that will do.
- No obstante*, notwithstanding.
- Tocante á eso . . .*, as to that . . .
- Mediante una cantidad*.
- For the consideration of a sum.
- Dios mediante*, if it please God.

El 5 del corriente, on the 5th instant.
Por la presente, by this letter.
Por consiguiente, therefore.

Remark.

As most Spanish verbs have no Present Participle, it is replaced by an equivalent word or phrase—i.e.:

(a) by a Past Participle with an active signification (see further Past Participle):

<i>Atrevido</i> , daring.	<i>considerado</i> , considerate.
<i>bienvenido</i> , welcome.	<i>divertido</i> , amusing.
<i>caído</i> , fallen.	<i>los fallecidos</i> , the deaths.

N.B.—

<i>Nacer</i> , to be born	<i>naciente</i> , rising	<i>nacido</i> , born.
<i>entender</i> , to understand	<i>inteligente</i> , intelligent	<i>entendido</i> , experienced.

(b) by a Verbal Adjective:

<i>Charlatán</i> , chatter-box.	<i>ladrador</i> , barking.
<i>llorón</i> , weeper.	<i>merecedor</i> , deserving.
<i>saltarín</i> , jumper.	<i>mordedor</i> , biting.
<i>aflictivo</i> , afflicting.	<i>conservador</i> , conservative.

(c) by a Verbal Noun:

<i>Un comprador</i> , a buyer.	<i>un lector</i> , a reader.
<i>un fumador</i> , a smoker.	<i>el contraventor</i> , the defaulter.
<i>el testador</i> , the testator.	<i>el sucesor</i> , the successor.
<i>el examinador</i> , the examiner.	<i>un copista</i> , a copyist.
<i>un procurador</i> , a solicitor.	<i>los fugitivos</i> , the fugitives.

Note how the English Present Participle is rendered in Spanish:

By a relative clause, to specify a noun or pronoun:

It is a child laughing, *es un niño que ríe*.
 That man carrying the stick, *ese que lleva el bastón*.
 Those passing know him, *esos que pasan le conocen*.

By the Gerund, in progressive actions:

He was crying, *estaba llorando*.
 He came running, *vino corriendo*.

N.B.—To be going, to be coming, to be leaving, *ir*, *venir*, *salir*:

We are going to the theatre, *vamos al teatro*.
 He is coming as well, *él viene también*.
 We are leaving to-morrow, *mañana nos vamos*.

By the Infinitive depending on verbs of "seeing," "hearing."

We saw them starting, *les vimos marchar*.

They heard us calling them, *nos oyeron llamarles*.

Past Participle.

Remark.—Spanish Past Participles, either regular or irregular, are treated like adjectives in *-o* as to inflection.

1. **Regular Past Participle.** Verbs in *-ar* form their regular Past Participle by changing *-ar* into *-ado*; those in *-er, ir* change those endings into *-ido*.

<i>amar,</i>	<i>amado,</i>	loved.
<i>beber,</i>	<i>bebido,</i>	drunk.
<i>vivir,</i>	<i>vivido,</i>	lived.

2. **Irregular Past Participles.** They assume various endings more or less closely connected with their Latin origin, but ending always in *-o*.

(a) Verbs having an irregular Past Participle:

<i>Abrir,</i> to open;	<i>abierto,</i> opened, open.
<i>cubrir,</i> to cover;	<i>cubierto,</i> covered.
<i>decir,</i> to say;	<i>dicho,</i> said.
<i>escribir,</i> to write;	<i>escrito,</i> written.
<i>hacer,</i> to do, make;	<i>hecho,</i> done, made.
<i>imprimir,</i> to print;	<i>impreso,</i> printed.
<i>morir,</i> to die;	<i>muerto,</i> dead.
<i>poner,</i> to put;	<i>puesto,</i> put.
<i>romper,</i> to break;	<i>roto,</i> broken.
<i>ver,</i> to see;	<i>visto,</i> seen.
<i>volver,</i> to turn, return;	<i>vuelto,</i> turned, returned.

Their compounds are formed in the same way, with the following exceptions:

<i>Liquefacer,</i>	<i>liquefacto,</i>	liquefied.
<i>rarefacer,</i>	<i>rarefacto,</i>	rarefied.
<i>tumefacer,</i>	<i>tumefacto,</i>	swollen.
	<i>putrefacto,</i>	putrified.

N.B.—From the obsolete *solver,* to solve, Past Part. *suelto,* loose:

<i>absolver,</i>	<i>absuelto,</i>	absolved.
<i>disolver,</i>	<i>disuelto,</i>	dissolved.
<i>resolver,</i>	<i>resuelto,</i>	resolved.

(b) Verbs having an irregular Past Participle besides the regular one.

Concerning these verbs having a so-called double Participle, the pupil must bear in mind that the regular forms in *-ado* and *-ido* are *proper* Participles—*i.e.*, they form (with *haber*) the *compound* tenses of the verb, as:

He omitido, I have omitted,

whereas the contracted *irregular* forms are *Adjectives*, which generally may only be used with *ser* and *estar*, as:

Una cosa está completa, a thing is complete.

Alphabetical list of the verbs with double participles.*

	Participle.	Verbal Adjective.
<i>Absorber</i> , to absorb	<i>Absorbido</i> .	<i>Absorto</i> (amazed).
<i>abstraer</i> , to abstract	<i>abstraído</i> .	<i>abstracto</i> .
<i>aceptar</i> , to accept	<i>aceptado</i> .	<i>acepto</i> .
<i>aclarar</i> , to make clear	<i>aclarado</i> .	<i>claro</i> .
<i>aficionarse</i> , to be fond of	<i>aficionado</i> .	<i>afecto</i> .
<i>afijar</i> , to fix, to nail	<i>afijado</i> O.*	<i>afijo</i> .
<i>aguzar</i> , to sharpen, to grind	<i>aguzado</i> .	<i>agudo</i> .
<i>ahitarse</i> , to overload one's stomach	<i>ahitado</i> .	<i>ahito</i> .
<i>anexar</i> , to annex	<i>anexado</i> .	<i>anexo</i> .
<i>angostar</i> , to narrow	<i>angostado</i> .	<i>angosto</i> .
<i>asegurar</i> , to assure, to insure	<i>asegurado</i> .	<i>seguro</i> .
<i>astrinjer</i> O., to astringe	<i>astrinjido</i> O.	<i>astricto</i> .
<i>atender</i> , to observe, to expect	<i>atendido</i> .	<i>atento</i> .
<i>Bendecir</i> , to bless	<i>Bendecido</i> .	<i>Bendito</i> .
<i>bienquerer</i> , to like, to love	<i>bienquerido</i> .	<i>bienquisto</i> .
<i>Cansarse</i> , to grow tired	<i>Cansado</i> .	<i>Canso</i> O.
<i>ceñir</i> , to gird, to surround	<i>ceñido</i> .	<i>cinto</i> O.
<i>combarse</i> , to bend, to bow	<i>combado</i> .	<i>combo</i> .
<i>campaginar</i> , to manage to do	<i>compaginado</i> .	<i>compacto</i> .
<i>completar</i> , to complete	<i>completado</i> .	<i>completo</i> .
<i>comprimir</i> , to compress	<i>comprimido</i> .	<i>compreso</i> .
<i>concluir</i> , to conclude	<i>concluido</i> .	<i>concluso</i> .
<i>concretar</i> , to join, to unite	<i>concretado</i> .	<i>concreto</i> .
<i>confesar</i> , to confess	<i>confesado</i> .	<i>confeso</i> .
<i>confundir</i> , to confound	<i>confundido</i> .	<i>confuso</i> .
<i>consumirse</i> , to consume	<i>consumido</i> .	<i>consunto</i> O.
<i>contentarse</i> , to be contented with	<i>contentado</i> .	<i>contento</i> .
<i>contraer</i> , to contract, to conclude	<i>contraído</i> .	<i>contracto</i> .
<i>contundir</i> , to bruise	<i>contundido</i> .	<i>contuso</i> .
<i>convelerse</i> , to contract (of nerves)	<i>convelido</i> .	<i>convulso</i> .
<i>convencer</i> , to convince	<i>convencido</i> .	<i>convicto</i> .

* O. means *obsolete*.

	Participle.	Verbal Adjective.
<i>convertir</i> , to convert, to change	<i>convertido.</i>	<i>converso.</i>
<i>convulsarse</i> , to convulse	<i>convulsado.</i>	<i>convulso.</i>
<i>corregir</i> , to correct	<i>corregido.</i>	<i>correcto.</i>
<i>corromper</i> , to corrupt	<i>corrompido.</i>	<i>corrupto.</i>
<i>corvar</i> , to crooken, to bend	<i>corvado.</i>	<i>corvo.</i>
<i>crispar</i> O., to curl, to crisp	<i>crispado</i> O.	<i>crispo.</i>
<i>cultivar</i> , to cultivate	<i>cultivado.</i>	<i>culto.</i>
<i>Densar</i> , to condense	<i>Densado.</i>	<i>Denso.</i>
<i>descalzar</i> , to take off the shoes	<i>descalzado.</i>	<i>descalzo.</i>
<i>descontentar</i> , to disappoint	<i>descontentado.</i>	<i>descontento.</i>
<i>desertar</i> , to desert	<i>desertado.</i>	<i>desierto.</i>
<i>desnudar</i> , to denude	<i>desnudado.</i>	<i>desnudo.</i>
<i>despertar</i> , to awake	<i>despertado.</i>	<i>despierto.</i>
<i>desproveer</i> , to deprive	<i>desproveido.</i>	<i>desprovisto.</i>
<i>desquitarse</i> , to make up for one's loss (at play), to repair	<i>desquitado.</i>	<i>desquito</i> O.
<i>difundir</i> , to pour out, to shed	<i>difundido.</i>	<i>difuso.</i>
<i>dirigir</i> , to direct	<i>dirigido.</i>	<i>directo.</i>
<i>dispersar</i> , to disperse	<i>dispersado.</i>	<i>disperso.</i>
<i>distinguir</i> , to distinguish	<i>distinguido.</i>	<i>distinto.</i>
<i>divergir</i> , to differ	<i>divergido.</i>	<i>diverso.</i>
<i>Efundir</i> , to pour out	<i>Efundido.</i>	<i>Efuso.</i>
<i>elegir</i> , to elect	<i>elegido.</i>	<i>electo.</i>
<i>enhestar</i> , to set up	<i>enhestado.</i>	<i>enhiesto.</i>
<i>enjugar</i> , to dry	<i>enjugado.</i>	<i>enjuto.</i>
<i>entecar</i> , to be feeble	<i>entecado.</i>	<i>enteco.</i>
<i>erijir</i> , to erect	<i>erijido.</i>	<i>erecto.</i>
<i>espesar</i> , to thicken	<i>espesado.</i>	<i>espeso.</i>
<i>estrechar</i> , to narrow	<i>estrechado.</i>	<i>estrecho.</i>
<i>estreñir</i> , to strain	<i>estreñado.</i>	<i>estrecto.</i>
<i>exceptuar</i> , to except	<i>exceptuado.</i>	<i>excepto.</i>
<i>excluir</i> , to exclude	<i>excluido.</i>	<i>excluso.</i>
<i>exentar</i> O., to free	<i>exentado.</i>	<i>exento.</i>
<i>eximir</i> , to exempt	<i>eximido.</i>	<i>exento.</i>
<i>expedir</i> , to send	<i>expedido.</i>	<i>expedito.</i>
<i>expeler</i> , to expel	<i>expelido.</i>	<i>expulso.</i>
<i>experimentar</i> , to try	<i>experimentado.</i>	<i>experto.</i>
<i>expresar</i> , to express	<i>expresado.</i>	<i>expreso.</i>
<i>extender</i> , to extend	<i>extendido.</i>	<i>extenso.</i>
<i>extinguir</i> , to extinguish	<i>extinguido.</i>	<i>extinto.</i>
<i>extraer</i> , to draw out	<i>extraido.</i>	<i>extracto.</i>
<i>Falsear</i> , to falsify	<i>Falseado.</i>	<i>Falso.</i>
<i>falsificar</i> , to falsify	<i>falsificado.</i>	<i>falso.</i>
<i>faltar</i> , to want	<i>faltado.</i>	<i>falto.</i>
<i>favorecer</i> , to favour	<i>favorecido.</i>	<i>favorito.</i>
<i>fijar</i> , to fix	<i>fijado.</i>	<i>fijo.</i>
<i>freir</i> , to fry	<i>freido.</i>	<i>frito.</i>
<i>Hartar</i> , to satiate	<i>Hartado.</i>	<i>Harto.</i>
<i>Incluir</i> , to include	<i>Incluido.</i>	<i>Incluso.</i>
<i>incurrir</i> , to incur	<i>incurrido.</i>	<i>incurso.</i>
<i>infartar</i> , to obstruct	<i>infartado.</i>	<i>infarto.</i>

	Participle.	Verbal Adjective.
<i>infectar</i> , to infect	<i>infectado.</i>	<i>infecto.</i>
<i>infestar</i> , to infest	<i>infestado.</i>	<i>infesto.</i>
<i>inficionar</i> , to infect	<i>inficionado.</i>	<i>infecto.</i>
<i>infligir</i> , to inflict	<i>infligido</i> O.	<i>inflicto</i> O.
<i>infundir</i> , to pour in	<i>infundido.</i>	<i>infuso.</i>
<i>ingerir</i> , to meddle with	<i>ingerido.</i>	<i>ingerto.</i>
<i>injertar</i> , to graft	<i>injertado.</i>	<i>injerto.</i>
<i>insertar</i> , to insert	<i>insertado.</i>	<i>inserto.</i>
<i>intrusarse</i> , to intrude	<i>intrusado.</i>	<i>intruso.</i>
<i>invertir</i> , to invert	<i>invertido.</i>	<i>inverso.</i>
<i>juntar</i> , to join	<i>juntado.</i>	<i>junto.</i>
<i>Leudar</i> , to rise, to swell (of dough)	<i>Leudado.</i>	<i>Leudo.</i>
<i>limpiar</i> , to clean	<i>limpiado.</i>	<i>limpio.</i>
<i>llenar</i> , to fill	<i>llenado.</i>	<i>lleno.</i>
<i>Maldecir</i> , to curse	<i>Maldecido.</i>	<i>Maldito.</i>
<i>malquistar</i> , to disunite; to become odious	<i>malquistado.</i>	<i>malquisto.</i>
<i>mancar</i> , to be wanting	<i>mancado.</i>	<i>manco.</i>
<i>manifestar</i> , to manifest	<i>manifestado.</i>	<i>manifesto.</i>
<i>manumitir</i> , to manumit, to set free	<i>manumitado.</i>	<i>manumiso.</i>
<i>marchitar</i> , to wither	<i>marchitado.</i>	<i>marchito.</i>
<i>matar</i> , to kill	<i>matado.</i>	<i>muerto.</i>
<i>mondar</i> , to shear	<i>mondado.</i>	<i>mondo.</i>
<i>mutilar</i> , to mutilate	<i>mutilado.</i>	<i>mútilo.</i>
<i>Nacer</i> , to be born	<i>Nacido.</i>	<i>Nato.</i>
<i>Ocultar</i> , to hide	<i>Ocultado.</i>	<i>Oculto.</i>
<i>omitir</i> , to omit	<i>omitido.</i>	<i>oniso.</i>
<i>oprimir</i> , to oppress	<i>oprimido.</i>	<i>opreso.</i>
<i>Pagar</i> , to pay	<i>Pagado.</i>	<i>Pago</i> (fami- <i>paso.</i> [liar].)
<i>pasar</i> , to pass	<i>pasado.</i>	
<i>perfeccionar</i> , to perfect	<i>perfeccionado.</i>	<i>perfecto.</i>
<i>pervertir</i> , to pervert	<i>pervertido.</i>	<i>perverso.</i>
<i>prender</i> , to take, to seize	<i>prendido.</i>	<i>preso.</i>
<i>presumir</i> , to presume	<i>presumido.</i>	<i>presunto.</i>
<i>producir</i> , to produce	<i>producido.</i>	<i>producto.</i>
<i>profesar</i> , to profess	<i>profesado.</i>	<i>profeso.</i>
<i>propender</i> , to be inclined	<i>propendido.</i>	<i>propenso.</i>
<i>proveer</i> , to fill (a vacancy)	<i>proveido.</i>	<i>provisto.</i>
<i>Quitar</i> , to take; to impeach	<i>Quitado.</i>	<i>Quito.</i>
<i>Raer</i> , and <i>rasar</i> , to raze	<i>Raido</i> and <i>rasado.</i>	<i>Raso.</i>
<i>ranciarse</i> , to become rancid	<i>ranciado.</i>	<i>rancio.</i>
<i>rarefacerse</i> , to become rarefied	<i>rarefacido.</i>	<i>rarefacto.</i>
<i>recluir</i> , to seclude	<i>recluido.</i>	<i>recluso.</i>
<i>recocer</i> , to boil too much, to boil once more	<i>recocado.</i>	<i>recocho.</i>
<i>reflejar</i> , to reverberate	<i>reflejado.</i>	<i>reflejo.</i>
<i>refringir</i> , to refract (of light)	<i>refringido.</i>	<i>refracto.</i>
<i>remitir</i> , to remit	<i>remitido.</i>	<i>remiso.</i>

	Participle.	Verbal Adjective.
<i>repeler</i> , to push back	<i>repelido.</i>	<i>repulso</i> O.
<i>repletar</i> , to fill	<i>repletado.</i>	<i>repleto.</i>
<i>restringir</i> , to restrain	<i>restringido.</i>	<i>restricto.</i>
<i>romper</i> , to break	<i>rompido</i> (poet.).	<i>roto.</i>
<i>Salvar</i> , to save	<i>Salvado.</i>	<i>Salvo.</i>
<i>secar</i> , to dry	<i>secado.</i>	<i>seco.</i>
<i>sepultar</i> , to bury	<i>sepultado.</i>	<i>sepulto.</i>
<i>situar</i> , to situate, to place . . .	<i>situado.</i>	<i>sito.</i>
<i>soltar</i> , to let loose, to let go .	<i>soltado.</i>	<i>suelto.</i>
<i>subtender</i> , to submit (to one's inspection)	<i>subtendido.</i>	<i>subtenso.</i>
<i>sujetar</i> , to subdue	<i>sujetado.</i>	<i>sujeto.</i>
<i>surgir</i> , to come forth, to rise .	<i>surgido.</i>	<i>surto.</i>
<i>suspender</i> , to suspend	<i>suspendido.</i>	<i>suspensio.</i>
<i>sustituir</i> , to substitute	<i>sustituído.</i>	<i>sustituto.</i>
<i>Tender</i> , to extend	<i>Tendido.</i>	<i>Tenso.</i>
<i>teñir</i> , to dye	<i>teñido.</i>	<i>tinto.</i>
<i>torcer</i> , to wring, to wrest, to turn	<i>torcido.</i>	<i>tuerto.</i>
<i>Vaciar</i> , to empty, to evacuate .	<i>Vaciado.</i>	<i>Vacto.</i>
<i>Yuntar</i> , to put oxen into harness	<i>Yuntado.</i>	<i>Yunto.</i>
<i>Zafarse</i> , to avoid doing some- thing	<i>Zafado.</i>	<i>Zafo.</i>

N.B.—Of these verbal adjectives, the following admit of the auxiliary *haber*:

<i>Frito.</i>	<i>preso.</i>
<i>injerto.</i>	<i>provisto.</i>
<i>opreso.</i>	<i>roto.</i>

Besides their passive signification, some Past Participles have an *active* one, as:

<i>Agradecido</i> ,	thanked,	also	grateful person.
<i>arreglado</i> ,	arranged,	»	methodical man.
<i>confiado</i> ,	confided,	»	a confident person.
<i>cumplido</i> ,	fulfilled,	»	a polished or civil man.
<i>desocupado</i> ,	unoccupied,	»	an idler.
<i>desordenado</i> ,	disarranged,	»	a disorderly person.
<i>disimulado</i> ,	disguised,	»	a sly person.
<i>entendido</i> ,	understood,	»	a clever man.
<i>honrado</i> ,	honoured,	»	an honest man.
<i>leído</i> ,	read,	»	a well-read man.
<i>pesado</i> ,	weighed,	»	a bore.
<i>porfiado</i> ,	insisted,	»	an obstinate man.
<i>reconocido</i> ,	recognised,	»	a grateful person.
<i>sentido</i> ,	felt,	»	a very sensitive person.
<i>sufrido</i> ,	suffered,	»	a hardy or forbearing man.

N.B.—For the uses of the Participle, see *Part II.*

Traducción. 64.

He is a very grateful person. I have arranged my books. You are a methodical man. I am tired; she is a very tiresome woman. He has fulfilled his duty. Spaniards are very civil. I have not understood anything. He is a very clever person. To be honoured, one must be honest. I have read his book; he is a well-read person. Do not be a bore. I have insisted, but he is very obstinate. She is a very sensitive woman, because she has suffered a great deal, but she is very forbearing.

Alphabetical List of the Defective Verbs.

Abolir, to abolish, is only used in those forms in which the *i* of the Infinitive ending is retained.*

Acostumbrar, to use to, to be in the habit of; used in all forms except the Compound Perfect and the Imperative.

Antojarse, to covet, to long for, has only the 3rd persons of the sing. and plur., the *Gerund*, and the *Past Part.*

Atañer, to appertain, is only used in the 3rd persons singular and plural and the Past Participle.**

Colorir, to colour, is only used in the Infinitive, the other forms being supplemented by *colorar* or *colorear****

Incoar, to begin, and

* The following verbs of the 3rd Conj. offer the same anomaly: *aguerrir*, to train for war, *arrecirse* and *aterirse*, to grow stiff (by cold); *balbucir*, to stutter; *empedernir*, to petrify; *entumir*, to numb; *manir*, to render mellow (of meat), to wear out (clothes, etc.), and a few others of less importance. — Formerly *blandir*, to brandish, showed the same anomaly; but at present the forms *blande* and *blanden* are sometimes met with. Some of the above verbs have a second regular form to supplement the defective ones—i.e.: *aterecerse*, *balbupear*, *empedernecerse*, *entumecerse*.

** Likewise *usucapir*, to acquire a right of property by lapse of time, and *garantir*, to guarantee, which is replaced by *garantizar*.

*** The same is the case with the following verbs:

<i>acaecer</i> ,	} to happen.	<i>provenir</i> ,	} to derive (as a consequence).
<i>acontecer</i> ,		<i>ocurrir</i> ,	
<i>consistir</i> ,	to be the reason.	<i>pasar</i> ,	} to happen.
<i>concernir</i> ,	to concern.	<i>suceder</i> ,	
<i>cumplir</i> ,	to suit, to be due.		
<i>incumbir</i> ,	to concern.		

Concernir, to concern, is, conformably to the Academy, only used in the 3rd persons: *concieme*, *conciernen*; *concernía*, *concernían*, and the *Gerund*, *concerniendo*. However, the forms *concernió* and *concernieron*; *concierna*, *conciernan*; *concerniese*; *concerniera*, *concernieran*; *concerniere* and *concernieren* are also met with.

- Loar*, to praise, are scarcely used in the 1st sing. Pres. Indic.
- Obstar*, to be an obstacle, used only in the 3rd persons sing. and pl. of the Indic. and the Subj. *No obstante*, nevertheless.
- Pacer*, to pasture, has no 1st pers. sing. of the Pres. Indic. and Fut. Subj.
- Pesar*, when meaning to repent and to regret, has only the 3rd pers. sing. The verb is complete when meaning to weigh and to consider.
- Placer*, to please, has of the Pres. and Imperf. Ind. only the 3rd persons (*place, placen, placia*, etc.). The irregular forms *plugo* (Def.), *plegue*, and *plega* (also *plazca*) of the Pres. Subj., *pluguiera* (Fut. Subj.), *pluguiese* (Imperf. Subj.), and *pluguiera* (Cond. Subj.) are met with, as well as the regular forms of the Fut. and Cond. (*placeré* and *placerta*). Of the compounds, *aplacer*, to please, is obsolete, *complacer* and *deplacer* are in use.
- Raer*, to shave, is seldom used in the first person sing. of the Pres. Ind., or in any of the forms of the Pres. Subj.
- Reponer*, to answer, has only the Def. *repuse*, etc. When meaning to set back, etc., it is regular.
- Roer*, to nibble, offers the same anomalies as *Raer*. The Pres. is either *roa*, etc., or *roya*, but the Comp. *corroer* forms only *corroa*.
- Salve*, God bless you, is a form used only in prayer.*
- Soler*, to use, to be in the habit, has only the Pres. and Imperf. Indic.: *suelo, sueles*, etc., *solemos*, etc., *suelen*; Imperf. *solía*, etc., and Past Part. *solido*. The Def. *solí* is rare.
- Tañer*, to play on a stringed instrument, is almost obsolete.
- Yacer*, to lie, to rest, has only *yace* (Pres.) and *yacia* (Imperf.), the former mostly in the expression *aquí yace*, here lies (on epitaphs).** Rare forms of this verb are the Gerund. *yaciendo*, the Pres. *yazgo* (*yago* is quite obsolete), *yaces*, etc., Imperf. *yacia*, Fut. *yaceré*, and a few others.

Reading Exercise.

Diversidad de las Provincias de España (Conclusión).

Los Catalanes son los pueblos más industriosos de España. Manufacturas, pescas, navegación, comercio, asientos, son apenas conocidos en otras provincias de la península, respecto de los Catalanes. No sólo son útiles en la paz, sino

* Like *vale*, keep in good health, which is only used in familiar correspondence.

** In French: *ci-gît*.

del mayor servicio en la guerra. Fundición de cañones, fábricas de armas, vestuario y monturas para ejércitos, conducción de artillería, municiones, víveres, formación de tropas ligeras de excelente calidad, todo esto sale de Cataluña. Los campos se cultivan, la población se aumenta, los caudales crecen, y en suma parece estar aquella nación mil leguas de la gallega, andaluza, y castellana. Pero sus genios son poco tratables, únicamente dedicados á su propio interés y ganancia, y así los llaman algunos los holandeses de España.

Los Aragonese son hombres de valor y espíritu honrados, tenaces en su dictámen, amantes de su provincia, y notablemente preocupados á favor de sus paisanos. En otros tiempos cultivaron con éxito las ciencias, y manejaron con mucha gloria las armas contra los franceses en Nápoles, y contra nuestros abuelos en España.

Cadahalso, «Cartas Marruecas».



SECOND PART.

Orthography, Accentuation, Punctuation.

1. Orthography.

The following letters in certain cases are misleading:

b and *v*, *b* and *p*; *c* and *z*; *c* and *g*; *d* and *t*; *g* and *j*; *h*; *m* and *n*; *r* (*rr*); *x*; *y*.

b and *v*:

b is used—

1. In the syllables *bla*, *ble*, *bli*, *blo*, *blu*; *bra*, *bre*, *bri*, *bro*, *bru*; *bu*, *bur*, *bus*; *biblo*—i.e.:

hablar, *cable*, *república*, *pueblo*, *blusa*,
brazo, *breve*, *abrir*, *libro*, *bruto*,
buril, *burla*, *búscar*,
biblioteca.

2. In the ending *bilidad*, as derived from adjectives in *-able*:

amabilidad, *afabilidad*.

3. In the Latin particles *ab*, *ob*, *sub*, which enter into the formation of many Spanish words:

absolver, *obtener*, *subvencionar*.

4. In the whole conjugation of *caber*, *haber*, *saber*; *beber*, *deber*; also in the verbs with final sound *bir*, with the exception of *hervir*, *servir*, *vivir*:

sabe, *sabía*, *hubimos*; *beben*, *debemos*; *recibirán*.

5. In the sounds in *ba*, being endings of the Imperfect of the Indicative of the 1st Conjugation, also of the verb *-ir*:

hablaba, jugaban; íbamos, iban.

6. After *m*:

ambos, cambiar.

v is used—

1. After any combination *ad, ale, cla, le, jo, ob, sub*:

alevoso, clave, advenedizo; leve, joven, obvio, subvencionar.

2. After *n*:

inveterado, invierno, invicto.

3. In the verbs *ver, hervir, venir, servir*; the Presents of the Indicative, Imperative, and Subjunctive of *-ir*, and the Perfect of the Indicative of *andar* and *estar*, as well as the forms derived from them:

veo; hierva; sirven; vengo; vivimos;

voy, vaya, vayamos;

anduvimos, anduviera; estuvieron, estuviese.

4. In the labial sounds *ava* (not belonging to the Imperfect of a verb), *ave, avo; eva, eve, evo; iva, ivo* (this not being a verb):

esclava, avecilla, clavo; mueva, leve, llevo; aflictiva, positivo.

5. In any combination with *vice, villa, villar*:

vicealmirante, villano, Villarcaya.

p is used before *t* (except in combinations with *ob, sub*):

aptitud, optar; but obtener, subteniente.

c and *z*:

The following are written with *z*:

zend, zendavesta, zeta; zeugma; zigzag, zipizape, zizaña, zirigaña, zís, zás; also all endings in the soft sound of c, as in paz, juez, matz, voz, luz.

c is used in other cases, even in the plurals of words in *az, ez, iz, oz, uz*:

paces, jueces, voces, luces.

d and **t**:

d is used in the particle *ad* entering into the formation of some Spanish words; also in endings *dad*, *tud*, of Latin stems in *tad*, *tut*:

admirar; *caridad*, *virtud*.

t in all other cases.**g** and **j**:

g is used—

1. In all beginnings *geo*, as well as in endings, *gético*, *genario*, *géneo*, etc.; *gésimal*, etc.; *génico*, *gen*, *gio*, *gía*, *gión*; *ígeno*, *ígero*, derived either from Greek or Latin words:

geografía, *higiénico*, *religión*, *analogía*.

2. In all verbs in *ger*, *gir*, except *tejer*, *brujir*, *crujir*;

j is used—

1. In the verbs *tejer*, *brujir*, *crujir*, also those in *jear*.

2. In verbal endings in the sound *je*, *ji* of verbs not having either *g* or *j* in the Infinitive; also in most words not having originally either *g* or *j*:

mujer (from *multer*);

dije, *dijiste* (from *decir*);

traje, *trajiste* (from *traer*).

3. In the endings *je*, *jería* of nouns:

carruaje, *relojería*.

h is used—

1. In words which in Latin had either *h* or *f*:

haber (*habere*), *harina* (*farina*), *hijo* (*filius*), *honor* (*honor*).

2. In any initial combinations *hidr*, *hiper*, *hipo*, from the Greek:

hidrografía, *hipertrofia*, *hipocampo*.

3. In *ie* initial, from Latin *ge*, *fe*; also in *ue*, either initial, or in the middle of a word if forming a syllable by itself:

hielo (*gelu*); *hierro* (*ferrum*); *huelo*, *huevo*, *ahuecar* (but *muevo*).

Exceptions are *yergo*, *yerro*, *yeso*.

4. Before initial sounds *abi*, *abl*, *ebr*, *ibr*, *ema*, *emi*, *omo*, *orr*:

habitar,
hablar,
hebreo,
híbrido,
hematosis,
hemisferio,
homólogo,
horror.

m and *n*:

m is used before *b*, *p*, *n*:

cambiar, *campo*, *amnistía*.

n is used before *m*, sometimes before *n*:

inmortal, *innato*.

r and *rr* are only misleading in the harsh sound of the *r*:

r is used at the beginning of a word; also after *l*, *n*, *s*:

reloj, *razón*; *malrotar*, *honra*, *Israel*.

rr is used in all other cases:

carro, *perro*, *prorroga*, *virrey*.

x is used in all words having the same letter in Latin:

Felix, *examen*, *lexicología*.

N.B.—Use has caused many people to write *s* instead of *x* in a few cases, such as *estraordinario*, *estraño* (as ordinarily pronounced) for *extraordinario*, *extraño*; but in no case must such licence be permitted whenever confusion is likely to arise, such as in *expiar*, *expiate*, whereas *espíar* means to spy; nor must *cs* be written instead of *x*; *axioma*, never *acsioma*.

y (not *i*) is used—

1. As a conjunction and as a letter:

la *y*, *y*; él *y* yo, he and I.

2. In *yo* (I), *ya* (already), and at the beginning of words if followed by a vowel (provided it is not preceded by *h*):

yacer, *yugo*, *yeso*, but *hielo*.

3. At the end of words, provided the last syllable is not accented:

hay, doy, soy, voy, ley, muy, buey, but benjut, fut, hui.

N.B.—Hierba, hiedra, may also be yerba, yedra.

General Remark. It may be taken as a general rule, that Spanish words from the Latin preserve the original spelling; also that the rules given above hold good as to such derived words. But there are, however, exceptions which must be learned by practice, such as:

abogado (advocatus, *solicitor*).

maravilla (mirabilia, *wonder*).

2. Accentuation.

The written accent, marked—

1. On words of more than one syllable ending in a vowel, with the stress on the same vowel:

<i>Papá,</i>	<i>amará,</i>	<i>Alá,</i>
<i>café,</i>	<i>tendré,</i>	<i>José,</i>
<i>alelí,</i>	<i>partí,</i>	<i>Martí,</i>
<i>dominó,</i>	<i>cantó,</i>	<i>Jericó,</i>
<i>alajú,</i>		<i>Perú.</i>

2. On words of more than one syllable ending in *n, s*, with the stress on the last vowel:

<i>Alacrán,</i>	<i>amarán,</i>	<i>Almazán,</i>	<i>compás,</i>	<i>quizás,</i>
<i>almacén,</i>		<i>Tremecén,</i>	<i>revés,</i>	
<i>espadín,</i>		<i>Albarracín,</i>	<i>anís,</i>	
<i>corazón,</i>		<i>Torrejón,</i>	<i>adiós,</i>	
<i>betún,</i>	<i>según,</i>	<i>Sahagún,</i>	<i>patatús,</i>	
	<i>verás,</i>	<i>Caifás,</i>		
	<i>prevés,</i>	<i>Moisés,</i>		
	<i>decís,</i>	<i>París,</i>		
		<i>Alós,</i>		
		<i>Jesús.</i>		

3. On words of more than one syllable ending in *l, r, z*, with the stress on the last syllable but one:

<i>Cárcel,</i>	<i>Setúbal,</i>	<i>alcázar,</i>	<i>César,</i>	<i>alférez,</i>	<i>Fernández.</i>
<i>dátil,</i>		<i>carácter,</i>	<i>Alcácer,</i>		
<i>mármol,</i>		<i>mártir,</i>	<i>Válor,</i>		
		<i>crémor,</i>			
		<i>fémur,</i>			

4. On any word of more than two syllables having the stress on the antepenultimate syllable:

<i>Música,</i>	<i>tómala,</i>	<i>Málaga,</i>
<i>héroe,</i>	<i>háblale,</i>	<i>Féroe,</i>
<i>sábado,</i>	<i>díselo,</i>	<i>Piramo.</i>
<i>malísimo,</i>	<i>viéramos,</i>	
	<i>quisiéramos,</i>	

5. On words ending in *-ai*, *-au* (whether followed or not by a consonant), if having the stress on the *i*, *ú*:

<i>Cai,</i>	<i>ataúd,</i>
<i>país,</i>	<i>Esai.</i>
<i>raíz,</i>	<i>laúd.</i>
<i>Baís,</i>	

6. On words ending in *-ia*, *-iais*, *-ie*, *-io*; *ua*, *uo* (whether followed or not by *n*, *s*), if having the stress on the *i*, *ú*:

<i>Poesía,</i>	<i>sería,</i>	<i>falúa,</i>	<i>continúa,</i>	<i>decaís,</i>
<i>tío,</i>	<i>rie,</i>	<i>dúo,</i>	<i>continúo,</i>	<i>comprendíais.</i>
	<i>río,</i>			

7. On final diphthongs with the stress on the last vowel, as well as on *a*, *e* of triphthongs *-uáis*, *-iéis*:

<i>Veréis,</i>	<i>Sebastián,</i>	<i>buscapié,</i>	<i>dió,</i>
		<i>parabién,</i>	<i>rió,</i>
		<i>acaricié,</i>	<i>adiós,</i>
		<i>piélogo,</i>	

<i>después,</i>	<i>benjui,</i>	<i>averiguó,</i>
<i>Navascués,</i>	<i>fui,</i>	<i>averiguáis,</i>
<i>fué,</i>		<i>amortiguéis.</i>

8. On the preposition *á*, and the conjunctions *é*, *ó*, *ú*.

Remark. — Compound words (verbal forms included) follow the rules applied to their factors:

Fuése, cortésmente, fácilmente.

9. Foreign words, in the matter of accentuation, are treated as Spanish words:

Déficit, ultimátum, Leicéster, Amiéns.

10. Finally, the Spanish language makes use of the written accent in order to distinguish certain words, which are written alike, but differ in their signification, the written accent being marked upon the most emphatic one, as:

Unaccented.

Como, as, like.
cual, which (relat.).
cuando, when, as.
cuanto, -a, so much as . . .
da, he (she) gives.
de, of.
di, I gave.
donde, whereof, wherefrom
 (relat.).
el, the (article).
ha, has.
mas, but.
mi, my.
porque, because, as, etc.
que, that, which (relat.).
quien, who (relat.).
se, himself, herself, itself, etc.
si, if.
solo (adj.), alone.
sus, his, her, etc.
tal, such a one.
te, thee.
tu, thy.
ve, he (she) sees.

Accented.

¿*Cómo*? how?
 ¿*cuál*? which? (interrog.).
cuál — *cuál*, the one — the
 ¿*cuándo*? when? [other.
 ¿*cuánto*? how much?
¡dá! give (there)!
dé, pres. subj. of *dar*, to give.
¡dí! tell (thou)!
 ¿*dónde*? where?
él, he (pron.).
há, ago.
más, more.
mí, me.
 ¿*por qué*? why?
 ¿*qué*? what? which? (interr.).
¡qué . . ! what (a) . . !
 ¿*quién*? which?
quién — *quién*, the one — the
 other.
sé, I know.
sí, yes; him- (her-, it-) self.
sólo (adv.), only.
¡sús! well! go on!
tál, so.
té, tea.
tú, thou.
¡vé! go (thou)!

Further, the demonstrative **pronouns** *este*, *esta*, *ese*, *esa*, *aquel*, *aquella*, are accented when used emphatically — e.g.:

¿*Cuál es el príncipe Don Fernando?* — *Ése, ése, ése, dijo Gutierre de Cárdenas á la princesa Doña Isabel.*
 Which is Prince Ferdinand? — The one there, said Gutierre de Cardenas to Princess Isabella.

The stress only is laid, not the written accent marked, upon:

1. Words of more than one syllable ending in a consonant, *not n, s*, with the stress on the last syllable:

<i>Querub,</i>		
<i>vivac,</i>	<i>amad,</i>	<i>cesar,</i>
<i>merced,</i>	<i>temed,</i>	<i>romper,</i>
<i>reloj,</i>		

<i>laurel,</i>			
<i>azahar,</i>			
<i>cenit,</i>	<i>partid,</i>	<i>venir,</i>	<i>Guadix,</i>
<i>carcaj,</i>			<i>Ormuz,</i>
<i>verdegay,</i>			
<i>arroz,</i>			<i>Godoy.</i>

2. Words of more than one syllable ending in a vowel, with the stress on the last syllable but one:

<i>Ala,</i>	<i>ama,</i>	<i>España,</i>
<i>caballete,</i>	<i>teme,</i>	<i>Oñate,</i>
<i>casi,</i>	<i>entiendo,</i>	<i>Amalfi,</i>
<i>oscuro,</i>		<i>Jacobo,</i>
		<i>Aramburu.</i>

3. Words of more than one syllable ending in *n*, *s*, with the stress on the last syllable but one:

<i>Volumen,</i>	<i>aman,</i>	<i>martes,</i>	<i>amaras,</i>	<i>Lucas,</i>
<i>canten,</i>	<i>crisis,</i>	<i>leyeres,</i>	<i>Carlos.</i>	
<i>amaron,</i>				

4. Words of more than one syllable ending in a vowel or a diphthong (*whether followed or not by n, s*), with the stress on the last syllable but one:

<i>Patria,</i>	<i>sitio,</i>	<i>deseo,</i>	<i>canoa,</i>	<i>agua,</i>
<i>seriu,</i>		<i>trataseis,</i>		<i>fatuo,</i>
<i>lidian,</i>				<i>amortiguan.</i>

3. The Signs of Punctuation.

The most striking difference between the Spanish and other languages is the use of the note of interrogation and the note of exclamation. To the preliminary remarks contained in Part I. we now add the following observations:

1. If another part of the sentence precedes the actual question or exclamation, the respective signs are placed immediately before that part of the sentence to which they refer, as:

Y bien mirado, ¿valgo yo lo que ella? (Hartzenbusch.)

And well considered, — am I as worthy as she?

Con que, ¿bajará V. al patio? (Id.)

Well then, will you come down to the courtyard?

2. If short questions or exclamations succeed each other *immediately*, the inverted signs are used but *once*, as:

¡Señor! mi Señor! Don Diego! (de Castro.)

3. A *comma* is put—

(a) Between the several subjects, verbs, or objects of a compound sentence, with the exception of the last two:

El castellano, el portugués, el francés y el italiano son lenguas románicas.

Castilian, Portuguese, French, and Italian are Romance languages.

Escribe, dibuja, toca y canta.

He writes, draw, plays and sings.

(b) Between the principal and the accessory sentence, if the latter begins with a *preposition*, or if the subordinate clause is an *apposition*, as:

Don Fernando salió de Sevilla con un lucido ejército, en que se contaban diez mil caballos. (Id.)

Don F. went forth from (left) Sevilla with a brilliant army in which there were ten thousand horse.

Podréis convencer á aquellos hombres tímidos que, deslumbrados por una supersticiosa ignorancia, condenan el estudio de la naturaleza.

You may persuade those timid people who, blinded by a superstitious ignorance, condemn the study of Nature.

4. The *colon* (:) is used if a sentence of general import is followed by various other clauses developing its meaning, as:

Eran en aquella santa edad todas las cosas comunes: á nadie le era necesario para alcanzar su ordinario sustento tomar otro trabajo que alzar la mano, y alcanzarle de las robustas encinas que liberalmente les estaban convidando con su dulce y sazonado fruto. (Cervantes.)

The colon is also used instead of a *conjunction*, by which the following sentence, containing a reason, a consequence, or a contradiction, ought properly to be joined to the preceding phrase, as:

Por eso yo me hago á veces el remolón para pagar: claro es, que el que no paga es porque no puede ó no quiere. (Hartzenbusch.)

This is the reason why I sometimes delay paying, for it is evident that he who does not pay either cannot or will not pay.

Finally, the colon is employed after the initiatory *address* in a letter, unless the writer prefers writing this

address in a separate line, which however, is only due to a person of higher rank. Ex.:

Muy Señor mio: Por fin soy tan dichoso, etc.

Dear Sir, — At length I am so happy, etc.

First Lesson.

The Gender of Substantives.

(See Part I., Lesson 1.)

§ 1. *Feminine* substantives beginning with *a* or *ha* and having the stress on the first syllable, which for the sake of euphony take the article *el* in the singular, as: *el alma*, the soul, have in the plural the article *las*, as:

Las almas, the souls; *las habas*, the beans.

If the word beginning with *a* — is not a substantive, the article *la* should be used, thus:

La alta sierra.

Note.—The article *la* is but an abbreviation of the ancient demonstrative pronoun *ela*, as:

De las buenas costumbres nasce ela paz et ela concordia.

(Translation of *Fuero Juzgo*.)

In the century of *Cervantes*, *el* was used before feminine nouns *not* accented on the first syllable, as: *el alegría*, the joy; *el arena*, the sand; *el acémila*, the beast of burden; *el alta sierra*, the high ridge of mountains. Formerly *el* also occurred before words beginning with *other* vowels, as *el espada*, etc.

With words beginning with *al*—, some authors, for euphony's sake, substitute *á el* for *al* in the dative, thus *á el alma* (for *al alma*); *á el alcance* (for *al alcance*), attainability.

§ 2. *Masculine* by either their sex or signification are:

(a) All nouns denoting male beings, or their names, kindred, degree, rank, or profession, as usually ascribed to male persons, as: *el hombre*, man; *Carlos*, Charles; *el padre*, the father; *el rey*, the king; *el poeta*, the poet; *el león*, the lion.

Except.: *la haca* (or *jaca*), the nag, pony.

(b) Names of rivers, lakes, mountains, volcanoes, trees, winds, and cardinal points, as: *el Tajo, el Guadiana, el Ladoga, el Cáucaso, el Vesuvio, el naranjo, el levante*, the east wind; *el Sud* [S.], *el Norte* [N.].

Except.: *la Esgueva* and *la Huerva*, two Spanish rivers, which, however, are also sometimes masculine. Again, *la tramontana*, the north wind, and *la brisa*, the north-east wind.

(c) The names of countries, towns, and villages not ending in *-a*, as:

El Brasil, Brazil; *el Perú, el gran Madrid, el Toboso*.

Whereas: *la España meridional; la baja Andalucía*, because these names of countries terminate in *a*. Names of towns not ending in *-a* may be used with the feminine gender if the word *ciudad* (town)* or *villa* is understood.

(d) Names of seconds, minutes, days, months, and years; also of numbers, musical and orthographic signs, colours and languages:

Un segundo, un minuto, el día, el lunes, Monday, *el mes, diciembre es frío*, December is cold, *el año*.

El dos, No. 2, *el do*, C, *el punto*, full stop, *el blanco*, white, *el castellano*, Spanish.

§ 3. Feminine by their signification are:

(a) All names of female beings, or their names, kindred, degree, rank, or profession, as usually ascribed to female persons and animals, as:

La mujer, la madre, María, Mary; *la reina*, the queen; *la hermana*, the sister; *la leona*, the lioness; *la yegua*, the mare, etc.

(b) Names of marshes (*lagunas*), ranges, chains, fruits (*frutas*), as:

Las lagunas de Ruidera, *Sierra Nevada,*
Sierra Morena, *la cordillera Pirenaica; la manzana.*

Except.: *El melón, el higo*, etc.

(c) Names of countries, provinces, towns, and villages ending in *-a*, as:

La Mancha; (la encantadora) Francia, France, etc.

* From *civitas* (Latin); *cittá* (Ital.), *cité* (French), *city* (Engl.).

(d) Names of hours and seasons, also names of the letters of the alphabet (because here the word *letra*, letter, is understood), as:

Las dos, 2 o'clock. *la jota*, the letter J.
la primavera, Spring. *la équis*, the letter X.

Except.: *El verano*, Summer; *el otoño*, Autumn; *el invierno*, Winter.

Note.— If the sex of animals is not distinguished by different words or terminations, *macho* (male) and *hembra* (female) are prefixed, as in English. Thus, *milano*, hawk, has no form for the feminine, which is therefore expressed: *un milano hembra*, a female hawk. *Paloma*, pigeon, on the other hand, has no masculine form, and thus a male pigeon is called *una paloma macho*.

(e) The names of arts, sciences, and professions almost all terminating in *-a* or *-ción*, as:

La jurisprudencia, jurisprudence; *la lectura*, reading, etc.

Except those ending in *-o*, as: *el derecho*, law; *el dibujo*, drawing, etc.

Gender by Termination.

General Rule.— Nouns ending in *-a*, *-d*, *-z*, and *-ión* are feminine, all others are masculine:

Casa, house. *voz*, voice.
ciudad, town, *acción*, action.
luz, light.

Exceptions to the feminine in *-a*, *-d*, *z*.

1. Those that are masculine either by sex or meaning:

Albacea, executor. *sud*, south.
 día, day. *juez*, judge.
 abad, abbot.

2. (a) Among those in *-a*:

Mapa, map. *tranvía*, tramway.

(b) Those in *-ma* (from Greek, Arab.):

Anagrama, anagram. *enigma*, riddle.
clima, climate. *poema*, poem.
dilema, dilemma. *sistema*, system.
dogma, dogma. *telegrama*, telegram.
drama, drama.

(c) Those in *-á* (accented):

sofá, sofa. *maná*, manna.

3. Among those in *d*, *z*:

<i>Césped</i> , turf.	<i>barniz</i> , varnish.
<i>ardid</i> , trick.	<i>cariz</i> , aspect.
<i>áspid</i> , asp.	<i>lápiz</i> , pencil.
<i>alud</i> , avalanche.	<i>maíz</i> , maize.
<i>ataúd</i> , coffin.	<i>tapiz</i> , tapestry.
<i>agraz</i> , verjuice.	<i>arroz</i> , rice.
<i>antifaz</i> , mask.	<i>tornavoz</i> , sounding-board.
<i>disfraz</i> , disguise.	<i>alcuzcuz</i> , a kind of Moorish.
<i>ajedrez</i> , chess.	<i>tragaluz</i> , skylight. [bread..
<i>fez</i> , fez.	<i>trasluz</i> , transverse light.

Note.

Some among those in *-a*, *-z* admit also of a masculine-article—*i.e.*:

(a) Having a personal signification:

in *-a*:

<i>La alhaja</i> , jewel.	<i>el (la) alhaja</i> , "jewel" (iron)..
<i>la atalaya</i> , watch-tower.	<i>el atalaya</i> , warder of a tower..
<i>la ayuda</i> , help.	<i>el ayuda</i> , assistant.
<i>la barba</i> , beard.	<i>el barba</i> , the old man (in the play).
<i>la cabeza</i> , head.	<i>el cabeza</i> , chief, the head.
<i>la calavera</i> , skull.	<i>un calavera</i> , a harum-scarum fellow.
<i>un canalla</i> , a rogue.	<i>la canalla</i> , the rabble.
<i>la corneta</i> , trumpet.	<i>el corneta</i> , trumpeter.
<i>la cura</i> , cure.	<i>el cura</i> , curate.
<i>la gallina</i> , hen.	<i>un gallina</i> , a chicken-hearted person.
<i>la guía</i> , guidance.	<i>el guía</i> , guide (man).
<i>la máscara</i> , mask.	<i>el máscara</i> , the masker.
<i>la ordenanza</i> , regulation.	<i>el ordenanza</i> , orderly.
<i>el papa</i> , the pope.	<i>una papa</i> , a lie.
<i>la guardia</i> , guard (body-guard).	<i>el guardia</i> , the guard (man)..
<i>la vista</i> , sight.	<i>el vista</i> , custom-house officer..

(b) Not having a personal signification:

in *-a*:

<i>La cólera</i> , anger.	<i>el cólera</i> , cholera.
<i>la cometa</i> , kite.	<i>el cometa</i> , comet.
<i>la planeta</i> , horoscope.	<i>el planeta</i> , planet.
<i>la tema</i> , hobby.	<i>el tema</i> , theme, exercise..

in -z:

<i>La doblez</i> , duplicity.	<i>el doblez</i> , hem.
<i>la haz (de la tierra)</i> , surface.	<i>el haz</i> , bundle.
<i>la pez</i> , pitch.	<i>el pez</i> , fish (in the water).

Exceptions to the masculine:

To those in -e:

<i>Ave</i> , bird.	<i>indole</i> , character.
<i>base</i> , basis.	<i>intemperie</i> , weather, exposure.
<i>calle</i> , street.	<i>leche</i> , milk.
<i>carne</i> , meat, flesh.	<i>llave</i> , key.
<i>catástrofe</i> , catastrophe.	<i>muerte</i> , death.
<i>clase</i> , class.	<i>nieve</i> , snow.
<i>costumbre</i> , habit.	<i>noche</i> , night.
<i>efigie</i> , effigy.	<i>nube</i> , cloud.
<i>especie</i> , kind, sort.	<i>peste</i> , pestilence, plague.
<i>fase</i> , phase.	<i>plebe</i> , populace.
<i>fe</i> , faith.	<i>sangre</i> , blood.
<i>fiebre</i> , fever.	<i>serpiente</i> , serpent.
<i>frase</i> , phrase.	<i>simiente</i> , seed.
<i>fuelle</i> , fountain, dish.	<i>suerte</i> , fortune, luck.
<i>gente</i> , people.	<i>tarde</i> , afternoon.
<i>hambre</i> , hunger.	<i>torre</i> , tower.
<i>hélice</i> , screw.	<i>vacante</i> , vacancy.

Also nouns in *-icie*, *-oide*, *-umbre*, derived from the Latin and Greek—*i.e.*:

<i>Esferoide</i> , spheroid,	<i>pesadumbre</i> , sorrow.
<i>superficie</i> , surface,	

N.B.:

<i>El breve</i> , apostolic brief.	<i>la breve</i> , breve (music).
<i>el consonante</i> , rhyme.	<i>la consonante</i> , letter.
<i>el corriente (mes)</i> , current month (inst.).	<i>la corriente</i> , stream.
<i>el corte</i> , cut, edge.	<i>la corte</i> , court.
<i>el (la) dote</i> , dowry.	<i>las dotes</i> , good qualities.
<i>el frente</i> , front (of a building, army).	<i>la frente</i> , forehead.
<i>el parte</i> , telegram, report.	<i>la parte</i> , part.
<i>el pendiente</i> , earring.	<i>la pendiente</i> , slope.
<i>el secante</i> , seccative (chem.).	<i>la secante</i> , secant.
<i>el (la) tilde</i> , the dash.	<i>la tilde</i> , spot (stain).

To those in -l:

<i>Cal</i> , chalk.	<i>col</i> , cabbage.
<i>cárcel</i> , jail.	<i>credencial</i> , credential.

miel, honey.
piel, leather, skin.
hiel, gall.

sal, salt.
señal, sign, mark.

El canal, canal,
el capital, capital (money).
el moral, mulberry tree.
el vocal, voter (on a com-
 mittee).

la canal, gutter.
la capital, capital (chief town).
la moral, moral.
la vocal, vowel.

To those in *-n*:

Imagen, image.
sartén, frying-pan.
sién, temple (of the head).
clin (crin), mane.

comezón, itching.
desazón, affliction.
razón, reason.

El orden, order (regularity,
archit. order).
el margen, margin.

la orden, order (command,
 religious order).
la margen, bank of a river.

To those in *-r*:

Flor, flower.
labor, labour, needlework.
El mar, the sea (element).
el mar Rojo, the Red Sea.

segur, axe.
la mar, the sea (in speaking
 of states).
en alta mar, on the high seas.

To those in *-s*:

Bilis, bile.
crisis, crisis.
miés, harvest.

res, head of cattle.
tos, cough.

And, in general, all nouns of scientific use ending in *-is*, *-sis*, derived from the Greek, such as:

Hipótesis, hypothesis,
paráfrasis, paraphrase,

tésis, thesis, conclusion.

N.B.—Exceptions to those in *-i*, *-j*, *-o*, *-u*, *-x*, *-y*, are:

La diócesi, the diocese.
la metrópoli, the metropolis.
la troj, the granary.
la mano, the hand.
la seo, the cathedral.

la tribu, the tribe.
la onix, the onyx.
la ley, the law.
la grey, the flock.

Gender of Compound Nouns.

If the last member is an Infinitive or an invariable part of speech, they are masculine:

<i>Un correveidile</i> , a go-between.	<i>el hazmerreir</i> , the laughing-stock.
<i>un asotacalles</i> , idler.	
<i>el besamanos</i> , levee.	<i>el quehacer</i> , work, business.
<i>el cumpleaños</i> , birthday.	<i>un matasiete</i> , a bully.

If a noun, or adjective in the singular, they come under the rule of gender by termination:

Una bocacalle, a turning, street corner.
el portaestandarte, standard-bearer.
una marisabidilla, blue-stocking.

Except.:

<i>El tranvía</i> , the tramway.	<i>La aguachirle</i> , the last after-wine.
› <i>contrapeste</i> , a remedy against the plague.	› <i>aguapié</i> , the after-wine.
› <i>cortaplumas</i> , penknife.	› <i>bajamar</i> , the lowest-ebb.
› <i>guardamano</i> , the sword-hilt, guard.	› <i>pleamar</i> , the highest flood.
› <i>guardavela</i> , the sail-rope.	› <i>altamar</i> , the high sea.
› <i>pasacalle</i> , the street-march (played on the guitar).	› <i>estrellamar</i> , the lily of the valley.
› <i>pasamano</i> , the bannister.	
› <i>sacabotas</i> , bootjack.	
› <i>tapaboca</i> , the muffler.	
› <i>trasmano</i> , the after-hand (at cards).	
› <i>trastuz</i> , the semi-darkness.	
› <i>verdeesmeralda</i> , emerald-green.	
› <i>verdemontaña</i> , mountain-green, chrysocolla	} (both also feminine).
› <i>verdevejiga</i> , sap-green.	

Gender of Words used as Substantives.

1. If an adjective is used substantively, we must distinguish whether it denotes a *person*, *abstract idea*, or a *concrete thing*. In the first case the article is, of course, employed conformably with the sex of the persons, as: *el viejo*, the old man; *la vieja*, the old woman. If an abstract idea is intended, the article *lo* is used, as stated Lesson 1. Part I. Thus: *lo bueno*, the good, *lo ajeno*, other people's property, etc. If, however, the adjective denotes a concrete thing, we employ the *masculine* article *el*. Thus *el español*, Spanish (i.e., the Spanish language); *el azul*, the azure or sky-blue.

2. All words that are *not* adjectives, if substantively employed, require the *masculine* article, as: *el porqué*, the Why; *el no*, the No; *el estudiar*, the studying.

Formation of the Feminine.

§ 1. Masculine substantives and adjectives in *-o* form their feminine in *-a*, as:

El vecino, the neighbour, — *la vecina*.
bueno, good, — *buena*.

Except.: *el testigo*, the witness, *el reo*, the culprit, *el modelo*, the model, which only change the article: *la testigo*, *la reo*, *la modelo*.

Irregular are:

El canónigo, the dean (of a cathedral), — *la canonesa*.
el diácono, the deacon, — *la diaconisa*.
el gallo, the cock, — *la gallina*.

§ 2. Substantives and adjectives ending in *d*, *n*, and *r* form the feminine by adding *-a*, as:

Señor, Sir, Mr., — *Señora*, lady, Mrs.,
el huésped, the guest (*m.*), — *la huésped*, the guest (*f.*),
el bailarín, the dancer, — *la bailarina*, the (*fem.*) dancer.

Exceptions: *Emperador*, emperor, — *emperatriz*.
cantador, singer, — *cantatriz*.^{*}
abad, abbot, — *abadesa*.
don, Mr., Sir, — *doña*.
elector, elector, — *electriz*.

§ 3. Masculine substantives in *-e* form their feminine in *-esa*, those in *-a* form *-isa*, as:

El duque, the duke, — *la duquesa*.
el príncipe, the prince, — *la princesa*.
el poeta, the poet, — *la poetisa*.
el profeta, the prophet, — *la profetisa*.
el sacerdote, the priest, — *la sacerdotisa*.

Exceptions: *El monje*, the monk, — *la monja*.
el pariente, the relation, — *la parienta*.
el héroe, the hero, — *la heroína*.
el elefante, the elephant, — *la elefanta*.
regordete, corpulent, fat, — *regordeta*.
altote, very high, huge, — *altota*.

§ 4. *Invariable* are the comparatives in *-or*, as:

Mayor, larger, *fem. mayor*.
peor, worse, » *peor*.

Likewise the adjectives of *one* termination, like *alegre*, *feliz*, etc. (See Part I., Less. 19.)

* *Cantante* is most commonly used for both genders.

§ 5. *Irregular* are the following:

<i>Dios</i> , god,	<i>fem. diosa.</i>
<i>coronel</i> , colonel,	» <i>coronela.</i>
<i>rey</i> , king,	» <i>reina.</i>
<i>jabalí</i> , wild boar,	» <i>jabalina.</i>

N.B.—A few nouns of *pairs* have a feminine derived from a separate root, such are:

<i>Varón</i> (of persons),	<i>hembra</i> , male, female.
<i>hombre</i> , <i>mujer</i> ,	man, woman, wife.
<i>padre</i> , <i>madre</i> ,	father, mother.
<i>marido</i> , <i>mujer</i> ,	husband, wife.
<i>fray</i> , <i>sor</i> ,	brother (friar), sister.
<i>fraile</i> , <i>monja</i> ,	friar, nun.
<i>yerno</i> , <i>nuera</i> ,	son-in-law, daughter-in-law.
<i>caballero</i> , <i>señora</i> ,	gentleman, lady, madam.
<i>galán</i> , <i>dama</i> ,	gallant, lady.
<i>lord</i> , <i>milady</i> ,	Lord, Lady.
<i>macho</i> (of creatures),	<i>hembra</i> , male, female.
<i>caballo</i> , <i>yegua</i> ,	horse, mare.
<i>carnero</i> , <i>oveja</i> ,	ram, ewe.

§ 6. The following have a *double gender*:

<i>El compatriota</i> ,	the countryman,	<i>fem. la compatriota.</i>
<i>el cómplice</i> ,	the accomplice,	» <i>la cómplice.</i>
<i>el indígena</i> ,	the native,	» <i>la indígena.</i>
<i>el persa</i> ,	the Persian,	» <i>la persa.</i>

Likewise *el testigo*, the witness, mentioned § 1.

§ 7. The following are either masculine or feminine:

<i>Centinela</i> ,	sentinel.	<i>crisma</i> ,	holy oil.
<i>cisma</i> ,	schism (in ecclesiastical matters).	<i>espía</i> ,	spy.
		<i>guía</i> ,	guide, leader;

and a few words of rarer occurrence, such as: *hermafrodita*, hermaphrodite; *híbrida*, hybrid, mongrel; *nema*, seal (of a letter); *neuma*, gesture; and *anatema*, anathema.

§ 8. *Arte* (art) is in the singular commonly *feminine*, although for euphony's sake requiring the article *el*, thus *el arte*. In the plural it is always feminine: *las artes mecánicas*, etc.

With *mar* (sea) the masculine gender predominates. In poetry, however, the singular is commonly *feminine*, as: *Mi única patria la mar* (Espronceda), especially if the adjective used with *mar* has only *one* termination, as: *la mar espumante*, the foaming brine.

Nada, nothing, used substantively, is *masculine* if no article precedes, *nada nuevo*, nothing new. Employed with the article, it is *feminine*, as: *una nada*, a mere nothing.

Pro, behalf, benefit, is *feminine* in the expression *buena pro!* much good may it do you! In other significations it is *masculine*, as: *el pro y el contra*, *pro* and *con*.

§ 9. Defectives:

(a) Some have no feminine, others have no masculine:

<i>Eremita</i> , hermit.	<i>azafata</i> , lady of honour.
<i>espadachín</i> , bully.	<i>bacante</i> , bacchante.
<i>evangelista</i> , Evangelist.	<i>matrona</i> , matron.
<i>ganapán</i> , drudge.	<i>náyade</i> , naïad.
<i>gañán</i> , day labourer.	<i>nereida</i> , nereid.
<i>jesuita</i> , Jesuit.	<i>nodriza</i> , wet-nurse.
<i>negociante</i> , business-man.	<i>niñera</i> , nurse.
<i>nigromante</i> , wizard, necromancer.	<i>sirena</i> , mermaid.

(b) In some others, either the masculine includes the feminine, or the feminine the masculine:

<i>El auditorio</i> , audience.	<i>la canalla</i> , rabble.
<i>el concurso</i> , concourse.	<i>la clientela</i> , customers, clients.
<i>el gentío</i> , crowd.	<i>la gente</i> , people.
<i>el vulgo</i> , common people.	<i>la muchedumbre</i> , multitude, crowd.
<i>el populacho</i> , populace.	<i>la plebe</i> , mob, common people.
	<i>la multitud</i> , multitude.

Traducción. 1.*

1. The village where we live during the summer has a beautiful situation at the foot of high mountains. The soul of (the) man, says Goethe, resembles (*say* to the) water. The nag you (have) bought is too dear. The west wind is cooler than the south wind and usually brings rain. The north wind and the north-east wind are very cold. Peru was formerly a colony of Spain. (The) old Madrid has almost disappeared. Right does not need science in order to be known and practised. This word is not spelt (*no se escribe*) with a *G*, but with a *J*. The male witness as well as the female witness did not know what to say definitely. My uncle is a dean, and the aunt of my friend is a deaconess. Have you spoken to the lodger or the lodger's wife? The emperor and the

* Henceforth the words of the translations are not given in the vocabulary at the end of this Grammar. The sign () show the need of the Spanish article.

empress ordered (fr. *hacer*) the singer (*m.*) [to] come to the castle. The duke and the duchess dined with the prince and the princess. Fernán Caballero is a Spanish poetess. Prophets and prophetesses are rare in our age (time). Is this young nun a relation of yours (tr. *a r. your*)? The Cid is one of the greatest heroes of Spain. The maid of Saragossa is celebrated by the poets as a great heroine.

2. Hero was a priestess of Venus. This female elephant is very strong. The ancient heathens had many gods and goddesses. The King of Spain signs his orders: «I, the king.» This gentleman is my countryman, and this lady is my countrywoman. The Persian woman was the accomplice of the native (*m.*). The guide was arrested by the sentinel as a spy. Louis XIV., King of France, was a protector of arts and sciences. The stream increased on the 7th inst. She lost an earring on coming down (*al bajar*) the slope. The pope is dead (*ha muerto*). That is a lie. The curate is entrusted with (*encargado de*) the care of (the) souls. The mechanical arts are mostly a matter of practice. The Greeks on their retreat greeted the foaming brine with exultation. Nothing is beautiful enough for the discontented (*m.*). A dream is a mere nothing. The watch-tower stands at the entrance of the harbour. The (help-)mate of the tower-warder is either a dunce or a thoughtless fellow. The boys played with kites. The comet of the year 1858 was beautiful. At the end of the present month you will receive my report. The order of Charles the Third is a Spanish order. The hilt of this sword is worked with great art. You have here a very fine penknife. The Better is often the enemy of the Good. He knows neither how nor why. The crowd [both *m. & f.*] was numerous. There were many people.

Reading Exercise.

Descubrimiento de América.

Adoptada y protegida la empresa por Isabel, pronto iba á saberse si el proyectista era en efecto un visionario, digno de lástima, ó si era el más sabio y el más calculista de los hombres. Seguido de un puñado de atrevidos aventureros, el náutico genovés se lanza en tres frágiles leños por los desconocidos mares de Occidente. «¡Pobre temerario!», quedaban diciendo en España y Europa. Y Colón lleno de fe en su Dios y en su ciencia, en sus mapas y en su brújula, no decía más que «¡adelante!» España y Europa suponían pero ignoraban sus peligros y trabajos, sus conflictos y penalidades. ¿Qué habrá sido del pobre aventurero? — Transcurridos alguno meses, volvió el aventurero á España á dar la respuesta.

Nada necesitó decir. La respuesta la daban por él los habitantes y los objetos que consigo traía de las regiones trasatlánticas en que nadie había creído. El testimonio no admitía dudas. El Nuevo Mundo había sido descubierto! El miserable visionario, el desdeñado de los doctos, el rechazado por los monarcas, el peregrino de la tierra, el mendigo del convento de la Rábida, era el más insigne cosmógrafo, el gran almirante de los mares de Occidente, el virrey de Indias, el más envidiable y el más esclarecido de los mortales. España y Europa se quedaron absortas, y para que en este extraordinario acontecimiento todo fuese singular, asombró á los sabios aún más que los ignorantes.

[Lafuente, Historia de España.]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué hizo Isabel?
- ¿Qué iba á saberse pronto?
- ¿Que hace Colón?
- ¿Que se decía de él, y que decía él?
- ¿Cuándo se supo la respuesta?
- ¿Quién la dió por él?
- ¿Qué había sido, y qué era entonces Colón?
- ¿Qué efecto produjo el descubrimiento?

Second Lesson.

Plural of Substantives.

The principal rules on the formation of the plural have been given, Lesson 2, Part I. (page 11). We repeat them here in a more enlarged form.

§ 1. The following words take *s* in the plural.

1. Substantives terminating in a single unaccented vowel, *y* excepted, as:

<i>La carta</i> (letter)	Plur. <i>las cartas</i> .
<i>el padre</i> (father)	» <i>los padres</i> .
<i>la metrópoli</i> (capital)	» <i>las metrópolis</i> .
<i>la mano</i> (hand)	» <i>las manos</i> .
<i>el espíritu</i> (spirit)	» <i>los espíritus</i> .

But, *rey* (king), *reyes*.

2. Words terminating in *é* accented, as:

<i>El pié</i> (foot)	Plur. <i>los piés</i> .
----------------------	-------------------------

Except.: *la é*, *las ées*.

§ 2. The following words take *es* in the plural:

1. Words terminating in a consonant or in *y*, as:

<i>La flor</i> (flower)	Plur. <i>las flores.</i>
<i>el ángel</i> (angel)	> <i>los ángeles.</i>
<i>el huésped</i> (guest)	> <i>los huéspedes.</i>
<i>el corazón</i> (heart)	> <i>los corazones.</i>
<i>ruín</i> (mean)	> <i>ruines.</i>
<i>el rey</i> (king)	> <i>los reyes.</i>
<i>la ley</i> (law)	> <i>las leyes.</i>

Remark.—Substantives in *x* (if sounded like *ks*) and *z* change their final consonant into *c* before *es*, as:

<i>La vez</i> (time)	Plur. <i>las veces.</i>
<i>la voz</i> (voice)	> <i>las voces.</i>
<i>la cruz</i> (cross)	> <i>las cruces.</i>
<i>feliz</i> (happy)	> <i>felices.</i>
<i>el fénix</i> (phenix)	> <i>los</i> { <i>fénices.</i>
	{ <i>fénix.</i>
<i>el ónix</i> (onyx)	> <i>los ónices.</i>

2. Word terminating in an accented vowel, *é* excepted, as:

<i>El bajá</i> (pasha)	Plur. <i>los bajáes.</i>
<i>el alelí</i> (gillyflower)	> <i>los alelíes.</i>
<i>el rondó</i> (rondeau)	> <i>los rondóes.</i>
<i>el tisú</i> (tissue)	> <i>los tisúes.</i>

Exceptions:

<i>El papá</i>	Plur. <i>papás.</i>
<i>la mamá</i>	> <i>mamáes.</i>
<i>el sofá</i>	> <i>sofás.</i>
<i>el maravedí</i> (farthing = $\frac{1}{34}$ part of 1 real)	> <i>maravedís</i> (<i>maravedies</i> or <i>maravedises</i>).
<i>el bisturí</i> (bistoury)	> <i>bisturís.</i>
<i>el zaquizamí</i> (uppermost loft)	> <i>zaquizamís.</i>

§ 3. The following are invariable:

Polysyllables in *-es* and *-is* unaccented on the last syllable, as well as patronymics in *-s*, *-z*, and Latin technical words, as:

<i>El martes</i> (Tuesday)	Plur. <i>los martes.</i>
<i>el éxtasis</i> (ecstasy)	> <i>los éxtasis.</i>
<i>la análisis</i> (analysis)	> <i>las análisis.</i>
<i>Gutiérrez</i>	Plur. <i>los Gutiérrez.</i>
<i>Sánchez</i>	> <i>los Sánchez.</i>
<i>El déficit</i>	Plur. <i>los déficits.</i>
<i>el memorándum</i>	> <i>los memorándums.</i>

§ 4. *Irregular Plurals.*

<i>El lord</i> (lord)	Plur. <i>los lores.</i>
<i>el flámen</i> (Roman priest)	> { <i>los flámines.</i> <i>los flámenes.</i>
<i>la testudo</i> (testudo)	> <i>las testudines.</i>
<i>el val</i> (sewer, drain)	> <i>los valles.</i>
<i>el frac</i> (dress-coat)	> <i>los fraques.</i>

Properly speaking, the plural of *frac* is not irregular, *c* being of necessity changed into *qu* before *e*, according to a well-known orthographical rule.

Observation.—Sometimes the accent is displaced in the plural.

<i>El carácter</i> (character)	Plur. <i>los caractéres.</i>
<i>el régimen</i> (government, object, diet)	> <i>los regímenes.</i>

§ 5. *Plural of Compound Substantives.*

The question whether a compound substantive is changed in the plural or not must be decided by looking at its components.

1. *Both* factors are changed in the plural, if each, when taken separately, would undergo such an alteration, as:

<i>La casamata</i> (casemate)	Plur. <i>las casasmatas.</i>
<i>el gentilhombre</i> (nobleman)	> <i>los gentileshombres.</i>
<i>el ricohombre</i> } (member of the {	> <i>los ricoshombres.</i>
<i>la ricahembra</i> } high aristocracy) }	> <i>las ricashembras.</i>
<i>la mediacaña</i> (semi-circular tools)	> <i>las mediascañas.</i>

Exceptions:

<i>El padrenuestro</i> (the Lord's Prayer)	Plur. <i>los padrenuestrros.</i>
<i>el ferrocarril</i> (railway)	> <i>los ferrocárriles.</i>
<i>la vanagloria</i> (vainglory)	> <i>las vanaglorias.</i>
<i>la barbacana</i> (barbacan)	> <i>las barbacanas.</i>
<i>la bocacalle</i> (street entrance)	> <i>las bocacalles.</i>
<i>el viaducto</i> (viaduct)	> <i>los viaductos.</i>

2. Only *one* factor is changed in the plural if the other, when taken separately, could not undergo such an alteration, as:

<i>Cualquiera</i> } (whoever)	Plur. <i>cualesquiera.</i>
<i>quienquiera</i> }	> <i>quienesquiera.</i>
<i>el hijodalgo</i> *	> <i>los hijosdalgo.</i>

* = *hijo de algo*, lit. the son of something—i.e., the son of a person "who is somebody"—viz., who holds some rank in society.

3. Singular and plural are *alike* if both factors, when taken separately, could not undergo any alteration in the plural, or (and this case applies to the majority of the Spanish compound substantives) if the second factor is plural already, thus:

- El* and *los sacabotas*, bootjack.
el > *los mondadientes*, toothpick.
el > *los guardapiés* (or *guardapieses*), petticoat.
el > *los limpiabotas*, shoeblack.
el > *los quitamanchas*, cleaner, dyer.
el > *los besamanos*, levee.
el > *los azotacalles*, lounge.
el > *los catalejos*, spy-glass (*lit.* "look-far").

§ 6. Besides the words enumerated on page 12, the following are likewise used in the plural only:

- | | | |
|---------------------------------------|----------|--|
| <i>Los bofes,</i> | } lungs. | <i>expensas</i> , expense. |
| <i>los chofes,</i> | | <i>los esponsales</i> , betrothal. |
| <i>los livianos,</i> | | <i>los pertrechos</i> , utensils, furniture. |
| <i>las arras</i> , earnest(-money).* | | |
| <i>las carnestolendas</i> , carnival. | | <i>los postres</i> , dessert. |
| <i>los calzones</i> , trousers. | | <i>las visperas</i> , vespers, |
| <i>las pinzas</i> , pincers, nippers. | | |
- and a few others of less importance.

§ 7. The following words change their signification in the plural (*see also page 12*):

- | | |
|--------------------------------|---|
| <i>El alfiler</i> , the pin | Plur. <i>los alfileres</i> , the pin-money. |
| <i>la baqueta</i> , the ramrod | > <i>las baquetas</i> , the gauntlet. |
| <i>la corte</i> , the court | > <i>las Cortes</i> , the Spanish Parliament. |
| <i>la mano</i> , the hand | > <i>las manos</i> , the handiwork.** |
| <i>el zelo</i> , zeal | > <i>los zelos</i> , jealousy. |

§ 8. The following substantives denote the male sex in the singular, *both* the male and female in the plural (*see those enumerated on page 12*):

- | | | |
|---------------------------------|--------------|---|
| <i>El amo,</i> | } the master | Plur. <i>los amos, los señores</i> , master and |
| <i>el señor,</i> | | |
| <i>el conde,</i> | | > <i>los condes</i> , count and countess. |
| <i>el marqués</i> , the marquis | | > <i>los marqueses</i> , marquis and marchioness. |

§ 9. If a *geographical* name is *plural*, as *los Arcos*,

* French: *les arrhes*.

** But also "the hands."

las Navas, Dos Barrios, the verb remains in the *singular*, since the word denotes but *one* object, as:

Los Arcos es una ciudad de España.

Los Arcos is a town in Spain.

Traducción. 2.

1. On the sofas in the salon the different papas and mamas were seated, and watched the amusements of the young folks. The upper parts of the lofts of these houses are usually entirely empty. How many maravedis had a real? Thirty-four maravedis. The *flamens* of the ancient Romans were priests. Of how many members does the English House of (the) Lords consist? It is very difficult to know exactly the different characters of men. The principles of government have a great influence on the prosperity or the decay of (the) empires. Three consecutive Mondays we could not get our box at (*tr. in*) the theatre. You do best (had better not care) if you do not care for the boastings of that man. The casemates of this fortress are extremely strong. The noblemen at the court of this unhappy prince all shared the fate of their master. The members of the high nobility of Spain have all the title (of) Grandee. By foreigners the noblemen of inferior rank in Spain are commonly called "Hidalgos," contrary to the rules of the language. The outskirts of Paris are finer than those of Madrid.

2. Have you given the earnest money to the merchant? (The) Carnival was very long this year. To what sum does the expense of your journey amount? In a fortnight we shall celebrate the betrothal of my cousin (*f.*). These trousers are very well made (*bien hechos*); which tailor has made them? Why (did) has not the footman put the dessert on the table? The origin of his family is lost in the obscurity (darkness) of history. (The) vespers were being chanted when we returned from our walk. The Estates of the country will not assemble this year, because the queen and her court are abroad. My master and mistress will have no reason to complain of my behaviour. The king and queen refused to receive the count and countess. Do your parents know that you are here? Can you tell me in which province "Las Navas" is situated? Give me the toothpicks! I bought two bootjacks yesterday. This petticoat is finer than the petticoats which are sold in that shop.

Reading Exercise.

Descripción del país mejicano.

Esta tierra tiene cincuenta leguas de costa de la una parte y de la otra de este pueblo, y por la costa de la mar

es toda llana, de muchos arenales que en algunas partes duran dos leguas y más. La tierra adentro y fuera de los dichos arenales es tierra muy llana y de muy hermosas vegas y riberas en ellas, tales y tan hermosas, que en toda España no pueden ser mejores, así de apacibles á la vista, como de fructíferas de cosas que en ellas siembran. Hay en esta tierra todo género de caza y aves y animales conforme á los de nuestra naturaleza, así como ciervos, corzos, gamos, lobos, zorros, perdices, palomas, tórtolas de dos y tres maneras, codornices, liebres, conejos; por manera que en aves y animales no hay diferencia de esta tierra á España; á mas de una gran cordillera de sierras muy hermosas, y algunas de ellas son en gran manera muy altas, entre las cuales hay una que excede en mucha altura á todas las otras, y de ella se vé y descubre una gran parte del mar y de la tierra, y es tan alta que si el día no es bien claro no se puede divisar ni ver lo alto de ella, porque de la mitad arriba está toda cubierta de nubes.

[*Hernán Cortés*, Cartas de Relación, Carta primera.]

Conversación.

- ¿Cuál es la extensión de esta tierra?
- ¿Qué tiene por la parte del mar?
- ¿Cómo es la tierra?
- ¿Cómo son sus vegas?
- ¿Qué tiene en caza, aves y animales?
- ¿Qué tiene además, y como son sus sierras?
- ¿Cómo es una de ellas?

Third Lesson.

Use of the Article.

Definite Article.

Expressed in Spanish and suppressed in English.

1. Before plural words in sentences expressing general or universal characteristics, or before words in the singular either referring to abstract things or used in an abstract meaning:

Los cometas tienen cola, comets have tails.

Las golondrinas vuelven en verano.

Swallows return in summer.

Los árboles tienen hojas, trees have leaves.

Los pajaros vuelan, y los peces nadan.

Birds fly, fishes swim.

Las abuelas miman á sus nietas.

Grandmothers spoil their granddaughters.

Los oídos son para oír, ears are made to hear with.

La mentira es odiada, lying is hated.

La tórtola es el emblema de la inocencia.

Doves are the emblems of innocence.

La leña se saca de los bosques.

Firewood is obtained from woods.

La fruta verde es nociva.

Unripe fruit is unwholesome.

El amarillo y el azul producen el verde.

Yellow and blue produce green.

N.B.—Thus, before the Infinitives when used as a verbal noun:

El saber no ocupa lugar, knowledge is no hindrance.

El viajar es agradable, travelling is pleasant.

Le encontré al salir, I met him on coming out.

Remark.—When in the above case (See 1) *todos, todas* is introduced, it precedes the article; *todo* or *toda* replaces the article:

Todos los árboles tienen hojas, all trees have leaves.

Toda fruta verde es nociva.

Any unripe fruit is unwholesome.

N.B.—*Cf.*:

No todo libro es bueno.

It is not every book that is good.

Todo el libro es bueno, the whole book is good.

2. Before the names of titles, dignities, etc., — *don, doña, sor, fray* excepted — when speaking of the person, not to the person:

El rey Alfonso XIII, King Alphonse XIII.

El general Prim, General Prim.

El Sr. de Pérez Galdós, Mr. Perez Galdos.

Don Juan, Doña María,

Sor Juana, Sister Joan.

Fray Lope, Brother Lope.

3. Before the proper names of certain countries, provinces, towns, and most of the volcanoes:

El Brasil, Brazil.

el Ferrol, Ferrol.

el Canadá, Canada.

el Japón, Japan.

el Perú, Peru. *la Florida*, Florida.
el Vesuvio, Mount Vesuvius. *la Habana*, Havana.
la Coruña, Corunna. *la Argentina*, the Argentine.

N.B.—*Castilla la Nueva (la Vieja)*, New (Old) Castile.

Remark.—Indifferent are:

África, or *el África*, Africa. *Asia*, or *el Asia*, Asia.
Argelia, or *la Argelia*, Algeria. *Egipto*, or *el Egipto*, Egypt.

N.B.—Proper names of countries, towns, etc., when referred to in a restricted meaning *require* the article:

La España de los Reyes Católicos.

Spain of the time of the Catholic Monarchs.

El Madrid de entonces, the Madrid of those days.

4. With the names of the days of the week and the hours of the day, except in dates and time in a letter or telegram:

Le veré á usted el domingo, I shall see you on Sunday.

Hasta el lunes, until Monday.

El año pasado, last year.

El mes que viene, next month.

La semana próxima, next week.

Son las tres, it is three o'clock.

El sol se pone á las cinco, the sun sets at five.

But:

Lunes, 12 diciembre, Monday, December 12.

Madrid, 2. 40 tarde, Madrid, 2.40. p. m.

5. After *nosotros* and *vosotros*, if followed by a noun *collectively* used, as:

Nosotros los españoles. We Spaniards.

Vosotros los actores. You actors.

6. After the verb *dar*, when meaning "to wish" in certain locutions, as:

Dar los buenos días, to wish a good morning (day).

Dar las buenas tardes.

To wish a good evening, good night.

Likewise: *dar el parabién*, to congratulate, *dar el pésame*,* to condole.

7. With certain words, phrases, or idioms:

Voy á la iglesia, I am going to church.

Se prohíbe la entrada, no admittance.

Creer en el cielo, to believe in heaven.

* *pésame* = *me pesa*, it afflicts me.

Se ha proclamado la ley marcial.

Martial law has been proclaimed.

La luna brilla en el espacio.

The moon shines in space.

Me voy al extranjero, I am going abroad.

Los reclutas son llevados al cuartel.

Recruits are taken to barracks.

La Cámara de los Lores, the House of Lords.

La Cámara de los Comunes, the House of Commons.

La gente va á la iglesia, people go to church.

Irse á la cama, to go to bed.

El monopolio del tabaco, the monopoly of tobacco.

El ministro de la Guerra, the Minister of War.

Compelido de la necesidad, compelled by necessity.

Todo el mundo, everybody.

Al parecer, apparently.

Es á la vez una ciencia y un arte.

It is at once an art and a science.

Señores viajeros, al tren, gentlemen, take your seats.

Pronunciar el sí, to say "I will".

Hemos estado en el Real.

We have been to the Opera House (Madrid).

8. After *todo*, all, if the following word has a *concrete* signification, as: *todo el dinero*, all the money. If, however, the following words express an *abstract* idea, without any further attribute, the article is omitted after *todo*, as:

Con toda consideración, with all consideration.

9. With the names of languages (note the contrast), speaking of *languages*:

Mi hermano lee y escribe el español.

My brother reads and writes Spanish.

Whereas: *Esas señoras hablan italiano* (or *en italiano*),

Those ladies speak Italian—i.e., just now, and not English, etc.

10. To render the English *possessives* —'s, *my, thy, etc., mine, his, etc.*; *the correlatives he who, whoever*, and *the demonstratives that, those*—i.e.:

La casa de Juan, John's house.

Me he cortado el dedo, I have cut my finger.

Aquel libro es el de V., that is your book.

El que vive aprende, he who lives, learns.

El bueno de mi hermano, that good brother of mine.

Observation.—It must be well understood that the prepositions *de* and *á* cannot be *contracted* with the article, if this precedes a word which is taken as a *title* or a *name* of a book, opera, or a similar work. Thus:

Rodrigo Diaz de Vivar es generalmente conocido con el sobrenombre de el Cid (and not *del Cid*).

R. etc. is commonly known by the surname of *the Cid*.

Pocas comedias de Calderón aventajan á EL alcalde de Zalamea.

There are but few comedies of Calderon superior to "The Justice of Zalamea."

Definite Article omitted in Spanish and expressed in English.

1. With the *apposition*, as:

Bernardo Taso, padre de Torcuato.

Bernard Tasso, the father of Torquato.

Isabel, reina de España. Isabel, the Queen of Spain.

Exception.—The article should be used with the *apposition*:

- (a) If the *apposition* is qualified by a *superlative*; as:

Shakespeare, el poeta dramático más famoso de Inglaterra.

Shakespeare, the most celebrated dramatic poet of England.

Dante, el mayor poeta de Italia.

Dante, the greatest poet of Italy.

- (b) If a *characteristic* surname (*not* a numeral) is added to an historical name, as:

Luis el grande, Louis the Great.

Cárlos el temerario, Charles the Dauntless.

2. With the *ordinals* with the names of kings, popes, etc., both in writing and in speaking:

Alfonso XIII (trece, not el trece).

Eduardo VII (séptimo).

Carlos V (quinto) y Felipe II (segundo).

Pio IX (nono).

3. With titles of books:

Vida de Cristobal Colón.

The life of Christopher Columbus.

4. With the names of the *months*, and in the dating of letters:

Enero y febrero son meses muy fríos.
January and February are very cold months.

Miércoles diez y ocho de octubre.

Wednesday, the 18th of October.

Note.—The article should always be used otherwise:

El doce de enero, the 12th of January.

Le veré á V. el lunes, I will see you on Monday.

5. The article is omitted after the verbs *to be*, *to become*, *to seem*, *to name*, *to call*, etc., if these verbs are followed by a word denoting *rank*, *dignity*, *office*, *nationality*, etc., as:

Es hijo de un príncipe ruso.

He is the son of a Russian prince.

La reina nombró al general por ministro.

The queen appointed the general her minister.

Likewise, with *finés* (end), *mediados* (half, middle), *principios* (beginning), if denoting a certain period, as:

Á finés de abril, at (towards) the end of April.

Á mediados del año pasado.

Towards the middle of last year.

6. In a great many *adverbial* locutions and *idioms*, as:

Morir á hierro, to perish by the sword.

A porfía, in emulation.

Morir de fiebre (de calentura), to die of (a) fever.

Por desdicha, unfortunately.

Estar en ascuas, to be in great anxiety.

Fin. The end (in books).

En primer lugar, en segundo lugar.

In the first place, in the second place.

Comida hecha, compañía deshecha.

The end of a feast is the parting of company.

Note.—With some expressions, however, the article is not totally excluded. Thus we may as well say: *ir en socorro*, as *ir al socorro*, to hasten to some one's assistance; *traducir en francés*, as *al francés*, to translate into French.

Further cases of the omission of the Indefinite Article in Spanish.

1. In such locutions as:

Tener costumbre, to use (to have the habit),

tener sed, to be thirsty,

tener intención, to have the intention.

Indefinite Article.

The Indefinite Article omitted in Spanish and expressed in English.

1. Before nouns used in connection with *ser*, *hacerse*, *meterse*, to denote class, profession, etc., in a general sense, also in speaking of qualities, as:

Es hábil músico, he is a clever musician.

Es general, he is a general.

Se metió soldado, he became a soldier.

Se ha hecho cura, he has become a priest.

Lo creían traidor, they believed him (to be) a traitor.

Esta flor da buen olor, this flower has a good smell.

Note.—In these sentences the speaker does not consider the *individuality*, but only the *quality*. If I say, "He is a clever musician," of course I do not mean to say that he is but *one* musician, but that he is *very musical*. The substantive is therefore used instead of an *adjective*, and the article denoting individuality, being superfluous, is omitted in Spanish.

But the indefinite article is required, if the quality is represented as a *particularly* remarkable or striking one, or if the substantive used as a predicate is followed by an adjunct. Compare:

Es un loco, he is a madman. *Es loco*, he is a fool (a foolish fellow).

Es un bobo, he is a dunce. *Es bobo*, he is stupid.

El marqués es un general de mérito, the marquis is a general of great merit. *El marqués es general*, the marquis is a general.

2. With the *apposition* (see p. 224, § 1) and with words denoting *office*, *rank*, *social position*, or any other *particular* quality, as:

El desdén con el desdén, *drama de Moreto*.

Disdain with disdain, a drama of Moreto.

El título de marqués, the title of marquis.

El nombre de padre de los pobres, the name of "father of the poor."

3. Before the adjectives *tan* (so), *tal* (such), *otro* (other), *semejante* (similar), *igual* (equal), *medio* (half), *cierto* (certain), *tanto*, *tamaño* (so great), and before the substantives *número* (number), *parte* (part), *porción* (portion), *cantidad* (quantity), *multitud* (many), where the

expression becomes more emphatic by the omission of the article. Examples:

Tan noble acción, so noble an action.

Tamaño esfuerzo, so great an exertion.

Gran parte de los infelices, a great number of the unhappy men, etc.

Otra vez*, another time.

Media hora despues, half an hour afterwards.

Tanta virtud, such (so great a) virtue.

4. In *exclamatory* and *interrogatory* elliptical sentences, where the exclamation or interrogation is used instead of a *negation*, likewise in *negative* elliptical sentences, as:

¿Hay mujer más arrogante?

Is there a more arrogant woman to be found (that is to say: there is no woman more arrogant than . . .).

Nunca vi hombre más impertinente.

I never saw a more impudent man.

5. In elliptical sentences with the admirative *¡qué* , . . ! to render What a . . . !

¡Qué hombre más orgulloso! what a proud man!

¡Qué cosa tan bonita! what a pretty thing!

Use of the Neuter Article, *lo*.

1. With adjectives in the masculine singular; it gives the adjective the force of a substantive, or of a substantive-equivalent:

Lo bueno y lo verdadero, good and truth.

Todo lo barato es caro, cheap things are dear in the end.

Eso será lo prudente, that will be the wisest thing.

2. With adjectives, of either gender and number, in conjunction with *ser* (*to be*) or any of its equivalents, and *que* (either expressed or understood), to translate *how*, *how much*, *so*, when bringing forth the attribute or quality:

No sabe usted lo mal que está.

You do not know how ill he is.

¡Lo alta que está! how tall she has grown!

¡Lo atentos que son! they (m.) are so polite.

No me gustan por lo orgullosas.

I do not like them, because they (f.) are so proud.

* *Otro* is never preceded by the indefinite article.

3. Before comparatives, or adverbs to form a kind of superlative:

Eso es lo peor, that is the worst of it.

Lo mejor es callar, the best thing is not say anything.

Es lo menos que puede hacer, it is the least he can do.

¡Lo bien que canta! how well she sings!

Ignoraba lo cerca que vive V.

I did not know you lived so near.

4. With *que*, almost always with the force of a pronoun:

Eso es lo que quiero, that is what I like.

¡Lo que es ser pobre! that shows what it is to be poor!

The Articles Used Idiomatically.

Its power of being used in idiomatic expressions is characteristic of the Spanish article, as:

Al contado, ready money.

Á la española, in the Spanish fashion.

Á la moda, according to the fashion.

Á la chita callando, on the sly.

Obrar á la ligera, to act thoughtlessly.

Al óleo, á la aguada, in oils, in water-colours.

Al punto, al momento, at once, immediately.

Al revés, al contrario.

Upside down, quite the contrary, on the contrary.

Hacerla, to put one's foot in it.

Guardársela á uno, to nurse a grudge.

Jugársela á uno de puño.

To play a nasty trick on someone.

Pegársela á uno, to take one in.

No tenerlas todas consigo, to feel uneasy.

No se como se las compone.

I do not know how he manages to do it.

Me la pagará, me las pagará.

I will make him pay for it.

Le ha pasado una.

Something serious has happened to him.

Á lo militar, in a military way.

Á lo torero, in bull-fighter's fashion.

Á lo hipócrita, hypocritically.

Comer á lo cerdo, to eat like a pig.

Por lo común, por lo general, generally.

Traducción. 3.

1. () Birds fly and () fishes swim. () Ears are to hear with. () Life is short. All () trees have leaves in summer. Any unripe fruit is unwholesome. Brazil has many mines. Canada has many pastures. Does the ship call (*tr. tocar*) at Corunna and Ferrol? Until Sunday. I wish you a good night. I am going abroad. Has your daughter blue or black eyes? The culprit answered bending his head. Has he a sore eye or a sore ear? His eye is bad. Heaven and earth proclaim the glory of God. I swear by the God of my fathers that I have spoken the truth. My elder brother studies philosophy; my younger, theology. Hatred and love are two powerful motives of () human actions. () Lead is heavier than () iron, but () iron is more useful than () lead. Has Mr. Verguero already written to you from Paris? No, sir, Mr. Verguero has not yet written, but Miss Verguero has written to a friend (*f.*) of hers in our town. You () French are the vainest of all () nations. We () authors have more to do than you () actors. We (*say the*) three brothers found ourselves in a desperate situation at our uncle's death. I have condoled with the captain. Go and wish the young lady good evening!

2. Will you come back at nine or at ten o'clock? Last week I (had) received a letter from my friend at Madrid. My grandfather died at 85 years of age. Shall you depart [on] Thursday or Friday? The ship starts on Tuesdays. Why did you not bring (use Compound Perfect) all the cloth? With all respect for your word, sir, I beg leave to doubt the (*say of the*) fact. I do not know, whether the ladies spoke Spanish or Italian; I was too far off to be able to understand them. My brother speaks () French better than () English. Gregory VII., the son of a peasant, was one of the most celebrated popes. Alexander, Cæsar, and Napoleon were the three greatest generals of all () ages. Schiller, the greatest dramatic poet of Germany, died in the year 1805. Louis XIV. of France is also sometimes called Louis the Great.

3. Charles the Dauntless was Duke of Burgundy. King Philip II. of Spain was the father of Don Carlos. Do you know this gentleman? Yes, he is the son of a rich American merchant. The prince appointed the lieutenant, captain. July and August are usually very warm months. December was very cold last year. We arrived at Prague (on) Tuesday the 14th of October. The second person of the plural of () Spanish verbs usually ends in *s*, and the third person of the plural in *n*. Aristides had the surname of the Just. Unhappily my best friend died of () fever a few days after his

arrival. The awkward footman let the cup fall on the floor. I have never lost *sight of* (*de vista*) this gentleman. The ship rides at anchor in the harbour of Cadiz. I have translated this book into French.

Traducción. 4.

1. Many people have the habit to sleep an hour after dinner. Have you the intention to offend me (*de ofenderme*) with these words? Are you hungry or are you thirsty? The poor child has the fever (*la calentura*). The criminal turned pale when the judge appeared. The unfortunate man expired at 10 o'clock in the evening. The enthusiasm for a great cause enlivens our endeavours. On the day of the trial (*día del juicio*) there appeared more than thirty persons. Doomsday is the day of the end of the world. Has the servant (*f.*) made the bed? I was confined to bed for a fortnight. The young lady will become a nun. One easily takes the habit of sleeping long. I go to my aunt's in order to dine with her. Do you live with your aunt or with your cousin (*f.*)? When we left the house of the judge, it began to thunder. Towards the middle of May we hope to be in London.

2. Have you read () "Don Juan," by Lord Byron? No, but I have read () "Childe Harold." () Canada is a British colony in North America. () Corunna and () Ferrol are Spanish towns. There are two Castiles, Old Castile and New Castile. I study the English and Italian languages. The fourth and fifth cantos of this poem are most beautiful (*superl.*). The boys and girls greeted the prince on his entering (*al entrar en*) the castle. This young man is a clever physician, but a bad poet. He obtained the title of Aulic Councillor for his merits. Such a man can never be my friend. Half an hour afterwards everything had disappeared. Is there a more distrustful man than he? I doubt if (*tr. that*) there is a good theatre in that town. Do you speak of () "Disdain with () Disdain," by Moreto?

3.* She buys everything that is cheap, but cheap things are dear in the end. That is not the wisest thing. She is an admirer (*admiradora*) of beauty, but you do not know how proud she is, and that is not the worst of her. When one cannot praise, the best thing is not to say anything. How well you speak! I say what I feel. I hate () things done on the sly, hypocritically. Generally () things are done in (*se hacen de*) that way. How (*neut.*) ill he is! How (*neut.*) proud they (*f.*) are for the little they have! That will be

* For this part of the Exercise see "Use of the Neuter Article *lo*" and "The Articles Used Idiomatically."

the best. Pay always ready money! He has played me a nasty trick, but I will make him pay for it.

Reading Exercise.

Descripción de la ciudad de Méjico.

Estaba fundada en un plano muy espacioso, coronado por todas partes de altísimas sierras y montañas, de cuyos ríos y vertientes, rebalsadas en el valle, se formaban diferentes lagunas, y en lo más profundo los dos lagos mayores, que ocupaba, con más de cincuenta poblaciones, la nación mejicana. Tendría este pequeño mar treinta leguas de circunferencia, y los dos lagos que le formaban se unían y comunicaban entre sí por un dique de piedra que los dividía, reservando algunas aberturas, con puentes de madera, en cuyos lados tenían sus compuertas levadizas para cebar el lago inferior, siempre que necesitaban de socorrer la mengua del uno con la redundancia del otro. Era el más alto de agua dulce y clara, donde se hallaban algunos pescados de agradable mantenimiento, y el otro de agua salobre y oscura, semejante á la marítima, no porque fuesen de otra calidad las vertientes de que se alimentaba, sino por vicio natural de la misma tierra, donde se detenían, gruesa y salitrosa por aquel paraje, pero de grande utilidad para la fábrica de la sal, que beneficiaban cerca de sus orillas, purificando al sol y adelgazando con el fuego las espumas y superfluidades que despedía la resaca.

[*Solís, Conquista de Méjico.*]

Conversación.

- ¿Dónde estaba fundada la ciudad de Méjico?
- ¿De qué estaba coronado el plano?
- ¿Qué se formaban de los ríos y vertientes?
- ¿Cuántas poblaciones formaban la nación mejicana, y qué territorio ocupaban?
- ¿Cómo se unían y comunicaban los dos lagos?
- ¿Cómo cebaban el lago inferior?
- ¿Cómo eran estos lagos, y cómo era la tierra?
- ¿Para qué era útil?
- ¿Cómo fabricaban la sal?

Fourth Lesson.

(See Part I., Lesson 15.)

Possessives.

Possessive Adjectives.

Use of the complete, postpositive forms (*mío, tuyo, suyo*, etc.).

1. Emphatically after nouns preceded either by the definite article, or by the indefinite article [not followed by *de*], or by *que*; also by the demonstratives or cardinals provided they are not followed by *de*—i.e.:

El libro mío está encuadernado, my book is bound.

Un amigo suyo lo vió, a friend of his saw it.

¿*Qué obras suyas conoce V.?*

What works by him do you know?

Aquel tío nuestro murió, that uncle of ours died.

Tres hijas suyas se casaron.

Three of his daughters married.

But:

Uno de sus amigos lo vió, tres de sus hijas se casaron.

2. In general statements, not emphatically, as a predicate of *ser*, to be:

Son unas parientas mías, they (f.) are relatives of mine.

N.B.—¡Hijo mío! my son!

Padre nuestro que estás en los cielos.

Our Father which art in Heaven.

Muy Sr. mío: — Dear Sir.

Muy Sra. mía: — Dear Madam.

Use of the apocopated, prepositive forms (*mi*, *tu*, *su*, etc.).

1. Not emphatically when either the possessive begins the sentence or when no article accompanies the noun to which the possessive refers:

Mi amigo lo sabe, my friend knows it.

Sus libros no se venden, his books do not sell.

Mis padres han llegado hoy.

My parents have arrived to-day.

No me gusta su cara, I do not like his face.

Le conocí en mi juventud, I knew him in my youth.

2. After *uno*, *una*, the relatives *quien*, *cual*, etc., the cardinals, the ordinals, and the comparatives and superlatives, when they are followed by *de*:

Uno de mis amigos, one of my friends.

¿*Cuál de sus obras?* which of his works?

Tres de sus hijas, three of his daughters.

El mayor de mis hermanos, my eldest brother.

N.B.— The Spanish definite article replaces the English Possessive Adjective in such sentences as:

Me he cortado el dedo, I have cut *my* finger.
Se ha roto la pierna, he has broken his leg.
He perdido los guantes y el anillo.
 I have lost my gloves and my ring.

Possessive Pronouns.

Use of the forms with the article (*el mío, la mía*, etc.).

1. When referring to a noun in the same sentence or in a previous one (except in answering a question with *¿quién?*):

Si no tiene V. paraguas llévese V. el mío.
 If you have not got an umbrella take mine.
¿Es esta la mía ó la suya?
 Is this mine or his (pen, etc.)?

But:

¿De quién es este paraguas? — Mío.
 Whose umbrella is this? — Mine.

2. In answering to *¿qué? ¿cuál? ¿cuántos?*, also in elliptical sentences, as:

¿Qué libro este? — El mío.
 Whose book is this? — Mine.
¿A cuál amigo se refiere V.? — Al mío.
 Which friend do you mean? — My friend.

¡Qué memoria la mía! what a memory mine is!

§ 1. As stated in Lesson 15, § 4 (Part I.), the possessive adjective is in Spanish, as in English, commonly expressed but once, if two or more nouns, connected by *y* or *ó*, follow each other, thus:

Su persona y (sus) facultades, his person and qualities.

If, however, these substantives denote *persons*, or if they are of *different* numbers, or if a particular *stress* is laid on each word, the possessive should be repeated; as:

Sus fueros, sus bríos, sus pramáticas, su voluntad.
 (Cervantes.)

His privileges, his courage, his deeds, his will.

He perdido mi sombrero y mis guantes.

I have lost my hat and my gloves.

Mi amiga y mi prima.

My friend (*f.*) and my cousin (*f.*).

N.B.—*Mi amiga y prima* would be: my friend and cousin (*i.e.*, the same person).

§ 2. If the substantive is *preceded* or *followed* by an *adjective*, either the apocopated or the complete form of the possessive may be used. The latter is preferred if a stress is laid on the adjective, or if the expression is exclamative; thus:

Mi querido amigo, my dear friend. Whereas:
¡Querido amigo mío! dear friend!

§ 3. The complete form should be used if not possession, but a mere personal reference is intended, as:

Es costumbre suya, that is his habit (a custom of his).

§ 4. By using the *indefinite* article together with the possessive adjective, the expression is rendered more emphatic. Thus:

Es amigo mío, means: he is living on friendly terms with me.

Whereas:

Es un amigo mío, means: he is a friend of mine.

§ 5. Sometimes a *demonstrative* pronoun is added to the possessive adjective, as: *this* book of yours. In this case either the apocopated or the complete form may be used, as:

Esta tu culpa or *esta culpa tuya*, this fault of yours.

§ 6. Very often the possessive pronoun of the 3rd person is rendered by the *genitive* of the *personal* pronoun, especially if a *misconception* might arise from the possessive pronoun being alike for both genders. Thus:

My pen, his, and hers.

Mi pluma, la suya y la de ella (*lit.* that of her).

This is her book, and that is his.

Este es su libro y aquel es el de él.

§ 7. The possessive of the *polite* form (your) has been mentioned Part I., page 53, § 7. Note now how it is rendered in Spanish.

Mi casa y la de V. (or *y su casa de V.*)

My house and yours.

Mis amigos y los de V. (or *y sus amigos de V.*)

My friends and yours.

N.B.—The same mode of expression should be employed if “yours” is preceded by the auxiliary verb “to be,” as:

These gloves are yours, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{estos guantes son los de V.} \\ \text{estos guantes son sus guantes} \\ \text{de V.} \end{array} \right.$

N.B.—*Estos guantes son de V.* (*lit.*: these gloves are of you).*

Traducción. 5.

1. A friend of his saw her and told (*lo dijo á*) one of my friends. Her words were, my son! Do you come from her house or from your house? Neither from hers nor from mine. Which of his works do you like best? The best of his works is "Hamlet". She had always loved him for his kindness towards his sisters. This poet is distinguished for his profoundness and clearness. Have you found your knife and gloves? I have found them, but I have lost my pocket-handkerchief and my earrings. My friend and cousin (*m.*) has no idea how much he owes me. Last night my aunt and cousin (*f.*) harried by (*the*) train. Dearest sister! You (*tr.* thou) do not know how much I love you (*tr.* thee), or you would think better of your (*thy*) brother and friend! It is an arrogance on (*tr. of*) your part (possess. pronoun) to pronounce (*a*) judgment on a matter that does not concern you. No prudence on my side (*mía*) could have prevented (*prevenido*) that danger. So much the worse for him (*tr.* It is in his harm) if he does not follow (*the*) good advice. It is your fault if we do not succeed. It is a habit of mine to call everything by its right name. This gentleman is a friend of mine. Whose book is this? Mine. What a memory mine is! My friend is a writer; have you read his works? I have read some. Which of his works?

2. Mr. Ferrer is a relation of mine, but he is not a friend of mine. (*This*) your levity will do you the greatest harm. (*This*) my behaviour needs not to be concealed from anybody. Next year my uncle and yours will (*go to*) visit the Exhibition in Paris. Your brother and his have settled the conditions of the sale. Our house, his, and hers will be newly painted this year. My uncle has always provided for his sister and her children like a father. This is his pen; where (*did* Agnes leave) has Agnes hers. Whose are these beautiful steel pens? They are yours, Miss (*N.*)! My children and yours have done great mischief in our neighbour's garden.

Reading Exercise.

Descripción de la plaza del mercado de México.

Digo esto porque á caballo nuestro capitán, con todos los más que tenían caballo y la más parte de nuestros solda-

* The English verb "to belong to" is generally translated by *ser de*.

dos, muy apercebidos fuimos al Tatelulco, é iban muchos caciques que el Montezuma envió para que nos acompañasen; y cuando llegamos á la gran plaza que se dice el Tatelulco, como no habíamos visto tal cosa, quedamos admirados de la multitud de gente y mercaderías que en ella había y del gran concierto y regimiento que en todo tenían; y los principales que iban con nosotros nos lo iban mostrando: cada género de mercaderías estaba por sí, y tenían situados y señalados sus asientos. Comencemos por los mercaderes de oro y plata, y piedras ricas y plumas y mantas y cosas labradas, y otras mercaderías, esclavos y esclavas; digo que traían tantos á vender á aquella gran plaza como traen los portugueses los negros de Guinea; y traíanlos atados en unas varas largas, con collares á los pescuezos, porque no se les huyesen, y otros dejaban sueltos. Luego estaban otros mercaderes que vendían ropa más basta, y algodón, y otras cosas de hilo torcido, y cacagüeteros que vendían cacao; y de esta manera estaban cuantos géneros de mercaderías hay en toda Nueva España.

[*Bernal Diaz del Castillo, Conquista de Nueva España.*]

Conversación.

- ¿Quiénes fueron á Tatelulco?
- ¿Cómo iban?
- ¿Qué hizo Montezuma?
- ¿Qué les sucedió al llegar á la gran plaza?
- ¿De que se quedaron admirados?
- ¿Qué hacían los principales que iban con ellos?
- ¿Quiénes eran los mercaderes?
- ¿Cómo llevaban á los esclavos?
- ¿Cuales eran los géneros de mercaderías?

Fifth Lesson.

Degrees of Comparison with Verbs.

Degrees of Comparison.

1. *Máximo*, greatest, and *mínimo*, smallest, and *ínfimo*, lowest, are only used in certain phrases, as:

Un círculo máximo (mínimo), a great (small) circle.

Un disparate máximo, the greatest nonsense.

Riñen por la cosa más mínima.

They quarrel for the slightest thing.

Á precios ínfimos, at the lowest prices.

2. The forms *bonísimo* (also *buenísimo*) and *malísimo* have almost the same signification as *óptimo* (best) and

pésimo (worst), whereas *el menor* (the least) expresses the accessory idea of comparison, *el mínimo* denoting absolutely the lowest degree. Of *pequeño* (little) there exists a regular superl. absol. *pequeñísimo*, meaning the "very least," the "most trifling," etc. *Supremo* corresponds with the English adjective "supreme," as: *el consejo supremo*, the supreme council. *Sumo* means the highest—i.e., the greatest, as:

Con sumo gusto, with the greatest pleasure.

Formulæ of Comparison with Verbs.

1. For equality:

<i>como</i> ,	as	<i>lo sabe como yo.</i>
<i>tanto como</i> ,	as much as	<i>he andado tanto como usted.</i>
<i>tan bien como</i> ,	as well as	<i>no sabe tanto como dicen.</i>
		<i>le conozco tan bien como usted.</i>
<i>no menos que</i> ,	not less than	<i>lo sé no menos que él.</i>

N.B.—*Lee tanto que pierde la vista.*

gana tanto que no sabe lo que gana.

2. For superiority:

<i>más que</i> ,	more than	<i>paseo más que antes.</i>
		<i>le quiere más que él á ella.</i>
<i>mejor que</i> ,	better than	<i>le conozco mejor que usted.</i>
		<i>escribe mejor que Cervantes.</i>

3. For inferiority:

<i>menos que</i> ,	less than	<i>los jóvenes saben menos que los viejos.</i>
		<i>estudia menos que su hermano.</i>
<i>no—tanto—como</i> ,	not—so—as	<i>no sale tanto como antes.</i>
		<i>no me costó tanto como á usted.</i>
<i>peor que</i> ,	worse than	<i>lo hace peor que yo.</i>
		<i>está peor que estaba.</i>
<i>no tan bien como</i> ,	not so well as	<i>no lo hace tan bien como yo.</i>
		<i>no duermo tan bien como solía.</i>

4. If a number forms the second part of a comparison, the English "than" is not rendered by *que* (see page 80) but by *de* [as in French]. Thus:

Cayeron más de cincuenta hombres.

There fell more than fifty men.

Había ménos de veinte hombres.

There were less than twenty men there.

If, however, the *first* part of the comparison is *negative*, "than" is translated by *que*, as:

No tengo más que cinco duros.

I have only five dollars.

N.B.—No tengo más de cinco duros.

I have not more than five dollars.

5. If the second part of the comparison is an *accessory sentence* (see page 79, § 4 b), "than" is rendered by *de*, as:

Mi amigo tiene más (or menos) libros de los que puede leer.

My friend has more (or less) books than he can read.

If, on the other hand, the comparative is an *adverb*, *que lo* is employed, as:

Habla el español mejor que lo (or de lo que lo) escribe.

He speaks the Spanish language better than he writes it.

6. The English "the more the more" and "the less the less" are rendered by *cuanto más (ménos) . . . (tanto) más (ménos)*, as:

Cuanto más dinero tiene, (tanto) más quiere.

The more money he has, the more he wants.

Note.—The first part of the comparison may likewise be expressed by *mientras más (ménos)*, but then in the second part only *más* (and not *tanto más*) follows, whereas after *cuanto más* the corresponding *tanto* may, or may not be expressed, as shown by the above sentence.

If *cuanto* or *tanto* are followed by a *substantive*, they become *adjectives*, and therefore agree with their noun, as:

Era tanto más aplicado, cuanta más facilidad tenía para estudiar.

He was the more diligent, the more talent he had for studying.

7. If in English a superlative *immediately* follows a *numeral*, as: "one of the greatest men," etc., the Spanish equivalent may be rendered as follows:

One of the most cruel kings.

Un rey de los más crueles.

Uno de los reyes más crueles.

8. The adjectives *most* and *least* are rendered as follows:

(a) By *la mayor (menor) parte*, if a *substantive* follows, as:

Most men = *La mayor parte de los hombres.*

(b) If these words are *neuter*—i.e., if they are themselves substantives, as: “the least,” “the most,” they are rendered *lo más (lo ménos)*, as:

That is *the least* you can do.

Esto es lo ménos que V. puede hacer.

(c) If the substantive following *most* or *least* denotes not persons but *things*, *los (las) más (menos) de los (las)* may be used, as well as *la mayor (menor) parte de . . .*, as:

(The) most houses of this town.

Las más de las casas de esta ciudad.

9. The *highest* degree of comparison is rendered in Spanish:

(a) By the *relat. superl.* preceded by *lo más (menos)*, as:

An extremely clear river, *un río lo más limpio.*

An extremely simple woman, *una mujer lo más sencilla.*

(b) By the verb *poder* (to be able), *saber* (to know), or, less frequently, by *cabere*, as:

He shouted as loud as possible, *gritó lo más que podía.*

He did his best, *hizo cuanto supo.*

I shall do my utmost.

Haré cuanto pueda (todo cuanto cabe en mí).

(c) By *lo (la), todo (toda) . . . posible*, if a substantive *without* another adjective follows, as:

With the utmost correctness.

Con la posible corrección (or con la corrección posible).

(d) By *hasta no más* (lit. “till no more”), in which case the substantive with its adjective should *precede*, as:

An extremely timid woman.

Una mujer tímida hasta no más.

Degrees of Comparison with Adverbs.

1. Spanish adverbs expressing ideas which admit of comparison follow the rules given for the adjectives:

<i>tan lejos como,</i>	<i>más ó menos lejos que.</i>
<i>tan tarde como,</i>	<i>más ó menos tarde que.</i>
<i>tan dulcemente como,</i>	<i>más ó menos dulcemente que.</i>
<i>muy lejos,</i>	<i>lejisimo.</i>
<i>muy tarde,</i>	<i>tardisimo.</i>
<i>muy dulcemente,</i>	<i>dulcissimamente.</i>

Note the following:

mucho antes (not *muy antes*).
mucho después (not *muy después*).
mucho más (not *muy más*).
mucho menos (not *muy menos*).

N.B.—In degrees of comparison *acá* and *allá* are used instead of *aquí* and *allí*;

tan acá (ahí, allá) más acá (ahí, allá) muy acá (ahí, allá).
como, que,

Formulæ of Comparison with Adverbs.

1. For equality:

<i>tan—como,</i>	as—as	<i>vive tan lejos como yo.</i>
		<i>llegué tan tarde como él.</i>
		<i>toca tan bien como canta.</i>
<i>no—menos— que,</i>	not—less—than	<i>vive no menos lejos que yo.</i>
		<i>llegó no menos tarde que yo.</i>
		<i>toca no menos bien que canta.</i>

2. For superiority:

<i>más—que,</i>	more—than	<i>vive más lejos que yo.</i>
		<i>se levantó más tarde que ayer.</i>
		<i>habla más dulcemente que su hermana.</i>

3. For inferiority:

<i>menos—que,</i>	less—than	<i>se ha levantado menos tarde que ayer.</i>
		<i>le veo menos á menudo que le veía.</i>
		<i>vive menos comodamente que antes.</i>
<i>no—tan—como,</i>	not—so—as	<i>no le veo tan á menudo como le veía.</i>

Traducción. 6.

1. To quarrel for the slightest thing is the greatest nonsense. She is a very good woman, but he is very wicked; he

is one of the most wicked men. She had very bad taste (— *pésimo*) when she married him. I will do it with the greatest pleasure. () Fruit is now sold at the lowest prices. He knows her as I (do). You do not know him as well as I do. I know him as much as you do. I have read more than I read. He speaks better () French than () English. I walk more than I used to (*solía*). There were more than a thousand persons there. We waited more than three hours. I have seen that opera more than six times. They spend more than necessary — at least, more than they ought to. () Old people have more experience than () young people. She does not receive so much as she used to, because she is not so well as she was. She is worse than she was. She lives very far and retires very early. I knew her much before I knew (*de conocerle á*) you. You knew me much later. Come a little closer (*más acá*). Move back (*Hágase V.*) a little farther (*más allá*). Does he live so far as he did before? He does not live nearer than he did. I do not go to bed so late as when I was young. They do not go to the theatre so often as before. Lying is the worst excuse of a fault. “Wallenstein” is the best dramatic work of Schiller. In the whole town there is no worse lodging than ours. The greatest sum does not suffice to satisfy his wishes. I have read the new novel with the greatest pleasure. One hears such abominable words only amongst (*entre*) the lowest people. Did you pay more than 200 reals for this coat? No, sir, I did not pay more than 180. This lady has more whims than she can satisfy. You write English better than you speak it.

2. The more wealth we possess, the more we wish to possess. The more faults we have, the less we are inclined to confess them. These people are the more presumptuous, the less knowledge they possess. The more talent he has for learning, the less diligent he is. Frederick Barbarossa was one of the most powerful emperors of Germany. (The) most young people like pleasure (better) more than work. Ten dollars are the least you can give. It is you, my friend, who always speak most and act (do) least. The greatest number of the trees of this garden are old and do not bear any fruit. Few (*tr.* the least) things please us long, as soon as we possess them. Italy has an extremely agreeable climate. I said as much as I could, but he would not believe me. The prince promised him to do his *utmost* (*fr.* *poder*). Write this letter with the utmost care! An extremely impudent beggar followed me through several streets.

Reading Exercise.

De las riquezas del Perú.

Los que miran con otros ojos que los comunes las riquezas que el Perú ha enviado al mundo viejo y derramándolas por todo él, dicen que antes le han dañado que aprovechado, porque dicen que las riquezas comúnmente antes son causa de vicios que de virtudes, porque á sus poseedores los inclinan á la soberbia, á la ambición y á la gula, y que los hombres, criándose con tantos regalos como hoy tienen, salen afeminados, inútiles para el gobierno de la paz, y mucho más para el de la guerra, y que como tales emplean todo su cuidado en inventar comidas y bebidas, galas y arreos; y que de inventarlos cada día tántos y tan extraños, ya no saben que inventar, é inventan torpezas en lugar de galas, que más son hábito de mujeres que de hombres, como hoy se vé; y que si han crecido las rentas de los ricos, para que ellos vivan en abundancias y regalos, también han crecido las miserias de los pobres, para que ellos mueran de hambre y desnudez, por la carestía que el mucho dinero ha causado en los mantenimientos y vestidos; que, aunque sea pobremente, ya los pobres el día de hoy no se pueden vestir ni comer por la mucha carestía, y que ésta es la causa de haber tantos pobres en la república, que mejor lo pasaban cuando no había tanta moneda.

[*El Inca Garcilaso de la Vega, Comentarios Reales.*]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué se dice de las riquezas del Perú?
- ¿Quiénes lo dicen?
- ¿Por qué dicen que las riquezas son causa de vicios?
- ¿Qué les sucede á los hombres que se crían con tantos regalos?
- ¿Y cuál es la consecuencia de ello?
- ¿De haber crecido la riqueza en los ricos y la miseria en los pobres qué resulta?
- ¿Cuál es la causa de haber tantos pobres?
- ¿Cuándo lo pasaban mejor?

Sixth Lesson.

Numerals.

(See Lessons 16, 17, Part I.)

§ 1. In colloquial language, *uno*, *una*, are very much used pronominally, either with a personal or with an impersonal meaning:

Á veces uno no piensa en lo que hace.

Sometimes one does not think about what he is doing.

No sabe uno que hacer, si ir ó no ir.

I do not know what to do, whether to go, or not.

As an *indefinite*, **uno**, **una**, may be used both in the singular and in the plural:

Ha estado uno á preguntar por V.

Somebody called for you.

Ha venido una con un niño.

A woman with a child came.

Pasaban unos, y lo vieron.

Some that were passing saw it.

As an *indefinite*, as well as a *partitive*, may be used with the article:

De los dos, el uno escapó, one of the two escaped.

Las unas decían una cosa, las otras, otra.

Some of them (*f.*) were saying one thing, the others another.

§ 2. **Ambos**, *both* is often expressed (see p. 59, 10), by *uno y otro*, and negatively, by *ni uno ni otro*. Seldom "both" is rendered by *el uno y el otro*. Likewise, *dos* occurs with the signification "both," as:

Sus dos primos, both his cousins.

¿Tiene V. pan y vino? Tengo uno y otro.

Have you (some) bread and wine? I have both.

N.B.—*Both* used *adverbially* means *á la vez*, *á un mismo tiempo*, and may be rendered by *tan(to) . . . como . . .*, or negatively by *no menos — que*. Thus, *he is both prudent and brave*, is rendered by:

Es á la vez prudente y valiente,

Es á un mismo tiempo prudente y valiente,

Es tan prudente como valiente, or negatively:

No es ménos prudente que valiente.

§ 3. Some peculiar expressions may be noted:

Á últimos de mes, in the last days of the month.

Á primeros de enero, in the first days of January.

Á mediados de semana, about the middle of the week.

We need not add that in these examples the word *días* (days) is understood.

§ 4. Frequently *primero* is used *adverbially* with the signification *first(ly)* and *sooner*, or it is periphrased by *to like better*, *to prefer*, etc.

Primero quiero comer, first I will eat.

Primero me quedo con el libro que venderlo tan barato.

I would sooner keep the book (I prefer keeping the book) than sell it so cheaply.

§ 5. The adverb *first* and *last* are frequently translated *primero* and *último*, preceded by the respective article, as:

Los niños se recogieron los primeros (los últimos).

The children went away first (last).

Indefinite Numerals.

(See Lesson 18, Part I.)

1. *Alguno** followed by *que otro* means *now and again*, *now and then*, *very few*, *seldom*. It is equivalent to the plural of *alguno*, as:

Leo alguna que otra novela.

I read now and again a novel.

Voy alguna que otra vez.

I go now and then (seldom).

Le veo alguno que otro día.

I see him now and then.

Habia allí alguna que otra persona.

There were very few people there.

2. The contrary of *alguno* is *ninguno* (none). It requires the *negation only when following the verb*.

Su opinión no es de ningún valor.

His opinion is of no importance.

N.B.—En ningún país de Europa.

In no country of Europe.

En ningún caso, in no case.

3. *Nadie* (nobody) and *nada* (nothing) follow the same rules as *ninguno*—i.e.:

No sabe nada, } he knows nothing.
Nada sabe, }

In the following cases they are expressed in English by the affirmative words *one*, *anybody*, *anything*.

* If *alguno*, *mucho*, *poco*, *tanto*, *harto* are used *adverbially* before *más*, they become true *adjectives*, as: *Alguna (muchacha, poca) más agua*, Some (much, a little) more water.

(a) In rhetorical questions—*e.g.*:

¡Demos á la nueva población el nombre de Santa Fé!

¿Cabe en el mundo ninguno tan glorioso?

Let us give to the new town the name Santa Fé! Is there a more renowned one in the world?

¿Hay nada más formidable?

Is there anything more terrible?

(b) After a comparative—*e.g.*:

V. lo sabe mejor que nadie.

You know it better than anyone else.

Also the preposition, *sin*, *without*, and the conjunction derived from it, *sin que*, *without* (that) change the following indefinite numeral into a *negative* one—*e.g.*:

Sin ningún amigo, without any friend.

Sin que nadie lo supiera, without anyone knowing it.

4. *Quienquiera* is only used *substantively* (*i.e.*, without a substantive), whereas *cualquiera* is either an adjective or a substantive, as:

He de salir con cualquier tiempo.

I must go out in any weather whatever.

Digalo V. á quienquiera.

You may tell whom you please.

Note.—If *cualquiera* or *quienquiera* introduce a *relative* accessory sentence, they should be followed by *que*, as:

Cualquiera que sea el tiempo he de salir.

Whatever the weather may be, I must go out.

Cualquiera que lo diga se equivoca.

Whoever may say it is mistaken.

N.B.—*Ese en un cualquiera*, he is nobody.

5. *Todo* (all, whole, every) is either an *adjective* or a *substantive*. In the former case it should be followed by the article (as in French and Italian), or by its *substitutes*, unless in sentences of a general character, with the meaning of *every*. — Compare:

Todo el mundo, the whole world.

Todo un día, a whole day.

Toda mi casa, my whole house.

And:

Todo hombre honrado, every honest man.

Toda día trae sus penas, every day brings its sorrows.

Toda casa tiene puerta, every house has a door.

On the other hand, the article is omitted before *proper names* or in *adverbial* expressions, as:

Por toda España, all over Spain (*lit.* through the whole Spain).

Con toda puntualidad, with all punctuality, in the nick of time.

If *everyone* or *all* is followed by a *relative* pronoun, this pronoun is rendered either by the corresponding form of *cuanto* or by *que* preceded by the article, as:

Todo lo que tengo, all (that which) I have.

Todo el que lo haya dicho, whoever may have said so; or (*Todos*) *cuantos lo hayan dicho** (but not *cuanto lo ha dicho*).

El príncipe ha hablado con (todos) cuantos estaban presentes.

The prince spoke to all those who were present.

Remark.—*Todo* is also *neuter* and corresponds to the English *everything*, as:

Él habla de todo, he speaks of everything.

N.B.—*Todo*, if adverbially used (*as much as, all, everything, entirely*), is invariable, and when followed by a verb is used in connection with *que, cuanto*—*i.e.*:

Lo ha perdido todo, he has lost everything.

Ha jugado todo lo que tenía.

He has gambled away all he had.

Todo cuanto se haga, sera inútil.

All that may be done will be useless.

Idioms with todo:

Es todo un caballero, he is a perfect gentleman.

Es una mujer todo corazón, she is a woman all heart.

Lo sabe y, con todo, no lo dice.

He knows it, and yet does not tell.

Lo sabe él y todo, even he knows it.

6. *Mismo, same, self, own*, is used adjectively, as: *la misma cosa*, the same thing, *su mismo padre*, his own father. Sometimes it occurs as an *absol. superl.*, as: *la mismísima cosa*, the *very* same thing, and frequently it corresponds to the English *even*, as:

La misma reina lo ha dicho.

Even the queen said so.

* *Todos cuantos lo han dicho*, all those who said it.

In conjunction with the personal pronouns it immediately follows the pronoun, thus:

Nosotros mismos, we ourselves.

Vosotras mismas, you yourselves (*fem.*).

If the *personal* pronoun is a *dative* or *accusative* case, both the conjunctive and the absolute form of the *same* pronoun should be used, as:

He will give it me (to myself).

Me lo dará á mí mismo.

Note the expressions:

Hoy mismo, this very day.

Mañana mismo, on the (very) morrow itself.

Propio, propia (*self, same, own*) may be used as an adjective and as a pronoun:

Al propio tiempo, at the same time.

Á las 9 de la mañana del propio día.

At 9 o'clock in the morning of the same day.

N.B.—*Identity, equality*, are the striking features of *mismo*; *possession, suitability*, those of *propio*. Compare:

Ya no soy el mismo (not *el propio*).

I am not the same man.

Tiene coche propio (not *mismo*).

He has a private carriage (of his own).

Esto es lo mismo que eso.

This and that are the same.

Eso es lo propio del caso.

That is the proper thing under the circumstances.

Thus, though *mismo* and *propio* may join nouns, and pronouns, only *mismo*, on account of its signification, may join adverbs of time and place:

Yo propio (*yo mismo*) *lo oí*, I saw it myself.

Él propio (*él mismo*) *Juan lo asegura.*

John himself affirms it.

Ayer mismo (not *propio*), indeed yesterday.

Aquí mismo (not *propio*), in this very place.

7. *Demás* (from *de* — *más*), "other," is invariable and used both adjectively and substantively, as:

Las demás hermanas, the other sisters.

Los demás no han hablado.

The others did not speak (have not spoken).

Dígale V. eso, y yo le diré lo demás.

Tell him that, I will tell him the rest.

A derivative of *demás* is *demasiado*, "too much," which (like the Italian *troppo*) is used both adjectively and substantively, as:

Demasiada gente, too many people.

Bebió demasiado vino, he drank too much wine.

Somewhat stronger than *demasiado* is *sobrado*, as:

Ha dado á su hijo sobrado dinero.

He gave his son too much money.

N.B.—From *sobrado* is formed the adverb *sobradamente*.

8. *Bastante* and *harto* (enough) are used both adjectively and substantively, and sometimes even adverbially, as:

Tengo bastante dinero, I have money enough.

Me ha dicho bastante (harto), he has told me enough.

Harto se lo he dicho, I have told him many a time.

9. *Otro, -a* (*other, another*) is both an adjective and a pronoun. As already stated (p. 69, 7), it never takes the indefinite article. Coupled with *uno*, as: *uno con otro* or *uno y otro*, pl. *unos y otros*, it corresponds to the English *both*; *uno á otro* with *one another, each other*, as:

Eso es otra cosa, that is a different thing.

Déme V. otro, give another.

Salieron uno con otro, they both went out.

Miráronse unos á otros, they looked at each other.

Followed by *tanto*, it means *just as much* or *quite as much (as many)*, as:

*Yo tengo dos varas, y V. tiene otras tantas**.

I have two ells, and you have just (quite) as much.

N.B.—

otro libro, el otro libro, another book, the other book.

otro día, el otro día, another day, the other day.

otras casas, las otras casas, other houses, the other houses.

10. *Tal* (*such, such a thing*) is both a substantive and an adjective. It also means *the aforesaid, the same, etc.*, as:

El tal Diego, the aforesaid D.

* In this case *otro tanto* should agree in gender and number with the word to which it refers.

Joined to *uno*, it means *a certain*, etc., as:

Un tal López lo ha dicho, a Mr. Lopez said so.
Habla de una tal Elvira, he speaks of a certain E.
No haré yo tal, I will not do such a thing.

Preceded by *cual* it means *as — so*; thus:

Cual es el padre, tal es el hijo.
 As the father, so is the son.

In *proverbial* expressions *tal* is often used instead of *cual*, as:

Tal amo, tal criado, like master, like man*.

Idioms with *tal* are:

Por tal razón, therefore.

Si tal; no tal, yes, indeed; no, indeed.

Ese es un tal, he is a rogue.

No hay tal, no such thing!

Con tal que, on condition that

¿Qué tal? — *Tal cual*, Well, how are you? — Middling.

Tal vez, perhaps.

11. **Fulano** or *fulano de tal* (Mr. So-and-So):

Fulano no quiere pagar, So-and-So won't pay.

Tiene en su casa á fulano y á zutano.

He has Mr. So-and-So and Mr. So-and-So at his house.

Traducción. 7.

1. Sometimes one (*m.*) does not know what to do. One (*f.*) does not know what to say. Somebody (*m.*) has been. Some (*m.*) came, but did not leave their names. One of the two (say of the two, the one) was a foreigner. Both my sisters are now in Paris. Here is ice and lemonade; you may have both if you like. The ship will arrive here in the last days of June. We left the town in the first days of January. Will you write a letter, or give me your orders by word of mouth? I prefer (see p. 244, § 4) keeping my old servant to (*tr.* than) taking (*Inf.*) another (one). The gentlemen entered last and the ladies went out first. Have you found *any* (see page 245, 1) book that you could recommend me? In no town of this country are there so many foreigners as in the capital. These jewels are of no value. None of your friends (has) said that you had not done your duty. He arrived in this town without having (*Inf.*) any acquaintances here. Is there anything more precious than the friendship of a virtuous man?

* In French: *Tel maître, tel valet*.

2. I go now and then to that house, and I sing now and again; I meet very few people there. You know me better than anybody else; how can you say that I have cheated my friends on (*en*) any occasion? Whatever excuse he may proffer, I shall not pardon him. The whole town speaks of this accident. All over Europe one finds Englishmen travelling. I have listened to him with *the greatest (toda)* attention. Everybody that (has) seen it will say that I am right. All he said was the purest truth. Every sensible man will be of my opinion. Here you have your poems; I (have) read them all, but none has pleased me. You speak of everything, you judge of everything, and yet you know nothing. That is all (which) I have heard. The child screamed with all its might, and nevertheless the nurse did not awake. She has lost all she had, and yet even in her poverty she is a perfect lady.

3. She is not the same woman she was (*que era*) since (*desde que*) she has a private carriage. This (*neuter*) and that (*n.*) are not the same. I heard it myself, indeed, to-day, in this very place. The count (has) told me so himself. Has the footman given it to you (thee) himself? No, he has not given it to me himself, the (maid-)servant gave it to me. Give me another book, the other book. Where are the other books? Have you not (got) them all? Yes, you (thou) have given them to me yourself. The coachman got five dollars, and the cook (*f.*) as much; the others got nothing. No, (*indeed*) you want (*pide*) too much, my friend. That is too much money for so little work. He has shown (to) his children too much tenderness. Have you wine enough? Thank you, sir, I have enough. Yesterday he lost ten dollars, and I gained (*gané*) just as much. Yesterday they spoke (with) me of a certain count Fabian; is he still here? The proverb says: Like mistress, like maid; like master, like man. Shall you come with me? Yes, (but) on condition that we return soon.

Reading Exercise.

De algunas costumbres de los Incas.

Tuvieron los indios por costumbre traer las orejas horadadas, y el primero que lo usó fue Mango Capa, Inca, de donde todos proceden. Y visto despues como este traía esta señal, y que había sido valiente, usaron después los sucesores de ella, y otros muchos, asimismo, á quienes ellos daban licencia, por ser criados, ó allegados, ó parientes, como se dirá. Y tuvieron por grande blasón y nobleza esto, y así lo tienen el día de hoy. La solemnidad y costumbre que entre ellos había cuando se horadaban las orejas, y se hacían Incas (que

es como cuando arma el Rey á uno caballero), es ésta. Todos los que se habian de horadar las orejas venian donde estaba el señor, y todos allí juntos ayunaban treinta dias (que era no comer sal ni aji, que son dos cosas que ellos más usaban en sus comidas, y usan el dia de hoy). Vestíanse todos unas camisetas casi blancas, que tenían por delante una señal como cruz: y estas no las vestían en otro tiempo, sino para este efecto. Y á los quince dias juntábanse todos, y subían á un cerro, el más alto que hubiese, é iban corriendo, y los que más presto subían estos eran tenidos en más, y por más valientes y señalados.

[Diego Fernandez, Historia del Perú.]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué tenían por costumbre los indios?
- ¿Por qué la usaron después los sucesores de Mango Capa?
- ¿Por qué lo tenían?
- ¿Qué cosa era hacerse Inca?
- ¿Qué hacían todos los que se habían de horadar las orejas?
- ¿En qué consistía su ayuno?
- ¿Qué se vestían?
- ¿Se vestían esas camisetas en otro tiempo?
- ¿Qué hacían á los quince días, y quiénes eran tenidos en más, y por más valientes?

Seventh Lesson.

Pronouns.

(See Lesson 24, Part I.)

Personal Pronouns.

§ 1. From numerous examples the learner will have observed that the personal pronoun in the nominative case is usually omitted before the verb, provided no stress be laid upon it, or that no misconception can possibly arise by this omission. Thus we should say: *Yo trabajo más que tú*, I work more than you (thou), because here the comparison requires the personal pronoun.

§ 2. The form of address *usted* (*V.*) or its plural *ustedes* (*VV.*, *Vds.*), is only omitted if it has been employed immediately before, so as to avoid every chance of a misconception, as:

V. ha venido y me ha hablado mucho.

You have come and (you) have spoken much with me.

§ 3. Concerning the position of the dative and accusative case of the conjunctive personal pronouns the general rules have been given, page 100, 2 (b). Further particulars are here added.

(a) Contrary to the general rules, the conjunctive pronouns are *affixed* to the verb if the latter *begins* the sentence, also in poetry and in literary prose, as:

Alégrame, I rejoice.

Porque allí llego sediento,

Pido vino de lo nuevo;

Mídenlo, dánmelo, bébolo,

Págolo, y voyme contento.

Parecióle ser ya tiempo oportuno.

It seemed to him that it was the right time (to be the r. t.).

(b) These pronouns are rarely applied to the *first* and *second* persons plural. If the accent is on the *ante-penultimate* of the verb, they can *never* be affixed. Thus: *los mandaríamos*, we should send them, but *never* "mandaríamoslos."

(c) In the case of auxiliary verbs used in a wider sense, the pronoun can either *be put before* these or *be attached* to the following gerund or infinitive—e.g.:

Iba buscándolo or *Lo iba buscando.*

He sought it (cf. Lesson 23, The Gerund).

No me lo quiere decir, or:

No quiere decírmelo, he won't tell me.

Se estaba levantando, or:

Estábase levantando, or:

Estaba levantándose, he was rising.

No he de decirlo, or:

No lo he de decir, I shall not tell.

N.B.—In literary style, this practice is also admissible in the tenses compounded with *haber*, as:

Habíanlo hallado, they had found it,

but in conversation the auxiliary is always preceded by the pronoun:

Lo habían hallado.

(d) If an *accessory* sentence refers to a conjunctive personal pronoun in the dative or accusative case, the accessory sentence should be preceded by the *absolute* form of the *same* pronoun, as:

Declárote por mi heredero á tí que has tenido ingenio para entender el sentido de la inscripción.

I declare thee for my heir that hadst sagacity enough to understand the meaning of the inscription.

(e) Sometimes for the sake of greater emphasis, a substantive in the dative or accusative, is placed *before* the verb, contrary to the general arrangement of words. In this case the corresponding personal pronoun should be added, as:

Á mi padre no le conocí, as to my father, I did not know him (instead of: I did not know my father).

Eso no lo sé, I do not know that (and not *eso no se*).

§ 4. Very frequently, even with good authors, the accusative cases *lo* and *le* are used indiscriminately. When speaking of *things*, we may, as we observed page 99, 1, substitute *lo* for *le*; thus:

¿Ha visto V. mi libro? No lo (or le) he visto.

Have you seen my book? I have not seen it.

If, however, the preceding substantive denotes a *person*, *le* is decidedly preferable, as:

¿Quiere V. á su hermano? Sí, le quiero mucho.

Do you love your brother? Yes, I love him much.

§ 5. Notice how such expressions as "*Ye English*," "*We . . . both*," are rendered in Spanish:

Masc. *Vamos los dos juntos,* let us go both (together).

Fem. *Vamos las dos juntas,* » » » » » .

Las mujeres queréis hablar todo el día.

Ye women like to chatter all day long.

Vosotros los médicos, ¿qué sabéis?

You, doctors, what do you know?

The same, if a *relative* accessory sentence follows a personal pronoun, as:

You that know nothing.

Los (fem. las) que no sabéis nada.

§ 6. Whenever in *exclamations* an *adjective* or an *interjection* is joined to a personal pronoun, the pronoun should be preceded by *de*, as:

¡Desdichado de mí! Unhappy man that I am!

¡Desdichada de tí! Unhappy woman that you are!

¡Ay de mí! Woe to me!

Traducción. 8.

1. Have you studied the song which I brought (*traje*) you yesterday? Yes, it is very pretty; I (have) sung it twice this morning. You have written more than I, but I have drawn more than you. You have asked me, and you have got the answer (which) you desired; what more do you wish? I am very glad to see you here. I told (fr. *referir*) him [about] the accident, but he would not believe me. Let us go (fr. *irse*)! If we had already received the books, we should have sent them to you. Have you found your hat? No, I have been looking (§ 3. c) for it in my room and in yours, but I cannot find it. I went to see him at his house in order to ask him if he could lend me a book. I wrote him three times, but he would not answer me.

2. I appeal to *you* who have been my best friend. To that famous Greek called Ulysses they gave the surname of the Prudent. As for his brother, I never saw him. Have you read this novel? No, I have not yet read it. Have you (already) seen the author of the new play? I have not yet seen *him*; but the play, — I have seen it. "We shall both go to Paris," said the girls; "there we shall visit our uncle and aunt." Ye men are often more loquacious than (the) women. We who always work, we do not know weariness; but you, who do nothing the whole day, you are always complaining of weariness. Woe to you, reprobate (*m.*), if you dare to enter this house! "Alas (*tr.* Woe to me)!" cried the peasant, "I have lost all my money!"

Reading Exercise.

De algunas costumbres de los Incas. (Continuación.)

Todos los treinta días, desde el primero hasta el postrero, se juntaban en la plaza del Cuzco, ó en las del pueblo donde se hallaban aquel año. Y sentábanse por su órden, y hacían sus calles, y venían allí sus parientes y hermanos y deudos, y á las veces sus caciques. Y ponían á cada uno de los que se habían de hacer Incas una lanza en las manos, las cuales tenían juntas, como cuando un cristiano está rezando, y en medio tomaban la lanza. Y luego decían á cada uno los padres, y sus parientes y caciques: «Mira que de aquí en adelante no seas vellaco; sirve y obedece bien á tus padres, y trabaja y no seas perezoso; corre mucho y haz todo lo que te mandaren, con mucha diligencia, porque cuando te llamare el Inca para la guerra, ó para cualquier otra cosa, le sepas servir». Ellos decían en respuesta que así lo prometían hacer, y acabadas de decir estas palabras dábanle cuatro azotes, en cada brazo uno, y en cada pierna otro, y él habiase de estar quedo, y no se había de menear, ni hacer muestra de senti-

miento, porque si se meneaba ó hacía muestra de dolerse, teníanle en poco. Llegado el postrer día, sentábase el Inca en medio de toda la gente, y venían indios viejos, y maestros de horadar las orejas con sus herramientas, que para ello tenían. Algunos de estos maestros lo hacían mejor, y eran más diestros, y no lastimaban tanto y dejaban los agujeros mayores. Luego les metían los anillos, y á los que eran hijos de caciques y señores poníanselos de oro, y de plata, y á los demás de madera ó de metal. Acabado esto, ofrecían sus padres ó parientes un carnero ú oveja, y matábanlo y sacábanle el corazón, y tomábale un hechicero y mirábale, y soplabale; y si el corazón estaba tieso, decía que aquel tal había de ser para mucho, y valiente, y que era buena señal; empero, si el corazón estaba flojo, decía que viviría poco, y que aquel tal no había de ser valiente, ni para nada. El carnero que se ofrecía partíase entre los padres y parientes de cada uno, y luego bebían y hacían sus borracheras.

[*Diego Fernandez*, Historia del Perú.]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué hacían cada treinta años?
- ¿Cómo se sentaban y que hacían?
- ¿Qué les ponían á los que se habían de hacer Incas?
- ¿Y qué les decían?
- ¿Y ellos qué respondían?
- ¿Qué les hacían entonces?
- ¿Cómo se habían de estar?
- ¿Qué hacían el postrer día?
- ¿Cómo les horadaban las orejas?
- ¿Y qué les metían en ellas?
- ¿Cuántas clases de anillos había?
- ¿Qué hacían despues?
- ¿Qué decían los hechiceros?
- ¿Qué hacían por fin?

Eighth Lesson.

Demonstratives. — Interrogative Pronouns.

(See Lesson 25, P. I.)

Demonstratives.

§ 1. The principal difference between *este* and *ese* is that *este* generally refers only to the *speaker* or anything near him, whereas *ese* refers not only to the

person *addressed** or things near by, but *also* to the subjects of conversation. The opposite of both is *aquel*. From this difference it results that *este* should always be rendered by "this," and that *ese* frequently corresponds to the English "this . . . here," whereas *aquel* is "that." Examples:

Esta casa es más alta que aquella.

This house is higher than that (house).

Déme V. ese libro, give me that book near you, or:
which you have in your hand.

Esas palabras no las dije yo, I never said those words.

La cuestión no es esa, that is not the case.

Eso no es verdad, that is not true.

N.B.—*Este* and *ese* can never be used as contrast in translating the English **the former, . . . the latter . . .**; which must be rendered by *aquél . . . , éste . . .*; or more generally, *éste . . . , aquél . . .*, agreeing in gender and number with the words to which they refer. Compare:

Los niños y las mujeres tienen derecho á la protección de los hombres, éstas por su debilidad, aquellos por su inocencia.

Children and women have a right to be protected by men, **the former** on account of their innocence, **the latter** on account of their weakness.

§ 2. In English, *it* (or *that*) is very often used *absolutely*—i.e., as the *seeming* subject of a sentence, whilst the *real* subject follows, as: *It* is my sister. In Spanish, the neuter form may only be used, if "that" refers to a *whole sentence preceding*, as:

Eso es increíble, it (that) is incredible (*viz.*: what I heard or: what I have been told, etc.).

But, as in English:

Esta es mi hermana, this (that) is my sister.

Estas son mis esperanzas, these are my hopes.

Esta es la Señora de A. y aquella es la Señora de N.
This is Mrs. A. and that is Mrs. N.

N.B.—*Position of the demonstrative.* Though demonstrative adjectives *precede* the noun, they must follow it when, — for the sake of emphasis — this is affected by the definite article, also in exclamations with *qué . . . !*

* The Italian *cotesto*.

Este libro , el libro este, this book.
Esa casa la casa esa . . ., that house.
Aquel amigo . . , el amigo aquel, that friend.
¡Qué hombre ese! what a man!
¡Qué mujer aquella! what a woman!

§ 3. We noticed (page 105) that the Spanish language often replaces the *article* by the demonstrative pronoun. This is the case when the demonstrative pronoun refers to a preceding substantive, as:

My house and *that* of my neighbour.
Mi casa y la de mi vecino.

§ 4. If the real *subject* of the sentence is not a *single* word, but an *infinitive with its object*, as: *To see you happy* is my greatest happiness, this infinitive in Spanish commonly *follows* and, if so, should be introduced by the *article*, and *de*; the article, of course, agreeing with the preceding predicate. Thus:

Mi única felicidad es la de ver á V. dichoso.
 My only happiness is to see you happy.

§ 5. The article used in lieu of the relative pronoun may also appear as a genitive or dative case, as:

Prefiero este libro al que V. leyó ayer.

I prefer this book to that which you read yesterday.

N.B.—Formerly the preposition *de* was often contracted with *este* and *ese* into one word, as: *deste* = *de este*; *destos* = *de estos*; *desa* = *de esa*. These contractions are now obsolete.

§ 6. In English the reference to a foregoing substantive or adjective is often *not* expressed. In Spanish the *neuter article lo* is used:

¿Es V. la hermana de este señor?

Are you the sister of this gentleman?

Sí, lo soy, yes, I am (*i.e.*, the sister).

¿Sois los criados del conde?

Are you the servants of the count?

Sí, lo somos, yes, we are (*i.e.*, the servants).

Todos se precian de patriotas; y sin embargo de que muchos lo parecen, ¡cuán pocos lo son!

All boast of being patriots, and though many seem to be *such*, how few are so!

Hermoso fué aquel día, y no lo fué ménos la noche.

Beautiful was the day, and no less (*i.e.*, beautiful) was the night.

Likewise, the reference to a preceding *adverb* is expressed by *lo*, as:

Amadis fué el sol de los valientes. Siendo pues esto así, como lo es, etc.

Amadis was the star of the gallant (knights). This being as *it* is, etc.

§ 7. Note the following **peculiarities** of the Spanish demonstratives:

¿Qué hay de nuevo en ésta?

What is going on at **your** place?

En ésta no ocurre nada.

Nothing new is going on **here**.

Los niños de estos días, children nowadays.

Idioms:

Esta noche, to-night.

Ése lo sabe, he knows it.

Ni por esas, not even so.

Ésta (or ésa) no se la perdono.

I shall not pardon him for this.

¡A ése, á ése! stop thief [murderer]!

No me ha dado ni esto.

He has not given me even the smallest thing.

En esto, at this time.

¿Hemos reñido? — ¿Y eso?

We have quarrelled — Why?

Me fuí á eso de las cinco, I left about 5 o'clock.

Interrogative Pronouns.

§ 1. Like *que* in French, the interrogative *qué?*, what? is often accompanied by *de*, if the following *adjective* is used substantively, as:

¿Qué hay de nuevo? What is the news? (Qu'y a-t-il de nouveau?)

§ 2. If in an exclamation *qué* precedes a substantive, it should likewise be followed by *de*, if more emphasis is required, as:

¡Qué de envidia! What envy!

¡Qué de locuras! What follies!

§ 3. If *qué* precedes a substantive qualified by an adjective, *tan* is often inserted for the sake of emphasis, as:

¡Oh, qué carga tan pesada! Oh, what a heavy burden!

¡Qué muchacha tan hermosa es esta!

How beautiful this girl is!

N.B.—Yet *tan* may be omitted: *¡Qué hermosa muchacha es esta!*

§ 4. As mentioned on page 106, *cuyo** occurs as an *interrogative* pronoun (whose?); but the proper *interrogative* pronoun is preferable. Thus:

Whose books are these?

¿Cúyos libros son estos? Or rather:

¿De quién son estos libros?

§ 5. *¿Cuál?* implies distinction between two or more persons or things; it always carries the written accent; as:

Estoy leyendo una novela. — ¿Cuál?

I am reading a novel. — Which one?

¿Cuál es su sombrero de V., éste ó aquél?

Which is your hat, this one or that one?

¿Cuál de los dos le gusta á V. más?

Which of the two do you like best?

Traducción. 9.

1. These flowers and yours (see § 3) are finer than those. Which hat do you want, this or that? Give me that which you have in your hand. I have seen this picture and that; that pleases (fr. *gustar*) me better (*más*) than this. Father and son parted, the former to return to his lonely house, the latter to join his friends. This wine is bad; this bread is good; what bad wine! what good bread (see p. 259, § 3., *N.B.*). — I never said those words, that is not true. These gentlemen and those have not been present at the ceremony. Is this your sister or your cousin? Neither one nor the other; she is my aunt. If these are all your wishes, they are very easily fulfilled (*tr.* to *fulf.*). Those are remarks which are not becoming to a young man. He said he would not give the workman his wages; that is abominable. My cloak and that of my cousin Paul are made in the latest fashion. You say that he has told you (that) he came at 3 o'clock, but that

* The *relative cuyo* is sometimes *separated* from its substantive by the verb, as:

El caballero, cuya era la espada.

The knight to whom the sword belonged.

Yet *de quien* is much to be preferred in such a case.

is impossible. Who is that lady? She is Miss Vallarino, and her companion is my sister's governess.

2. He has lost his fortune and that of his uncle. She has invested your money and that of her sister. My most ardent wish was always to see you friends. Do you speak of Mr. Estrada? I do not speak of (the) Mr. Estrada who lives here, but of him (*tr.* that) who is in Mexico. I prefer this wine to that which we had (*tr.* drunk) yesterday. What news have you heard? Nothing of importance. What nonsense! How can anybody believe such a thing as that? Oh, what a horrible crime! What meanness to do such a deed! How charming are the banks of the river! How majestic are the summits of these mountains! Whose gloves are these? They are those of the young officer who arrived with me yesterday. Are you the daughter of my old friend Sagasta? Yes, sir, I am. Were you satisfied (*plur. f.*) with your new dresses? Yes, Mrs. B., we were. Is this man really happy? To be sure he is. My dear mother, nothing new is going on here; Charles left and must be now at your place (see p. 259, § 7). I will write more to-night. They have quarrelled. Why? She begged and cried, but not even so. She will not pardon him for that. I left their house about 11. Which of the two do you think is right? Which do you like best?

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España.

España es país para todo, y también los españoles. España produce todas las materias necesarias para la vida, no sólo las de primera necesidad, sino aún las útiles y de delicia. España es, entre los descubiertos, el único reino que pudiera vivir con solos sus frutos, sin mendigar género alguno extranjero: pan, vino, legumbres, aceites, agrios, frutas, miel, cera, pescados, carnes, aves, caza, lana, seda, linos, cáñamos y minerales de todas especies. Estas son sus más abundantes producciones; y se hallan debajo de un clima sano, delicioso, de aguas muy saludables, y de ríos en gran número, y rodeados de dos mares. España tiene en sus dominios todas las materias simples que necesitan sacar de nosotros las fábricas extranjeras; á ninguna nación le sucede otro tanto. Y á España no le falta, en fin, ni le ha faltado nunca, más que ser conocida. El cielo hizo mucho por ella; nosotros lo deshacemos; á Dios le debe infinito; á nosotros muy poco.

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara. — "Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España."]

Conversación.

¿Qué clase de país es España?

¿Qué clase de gente son los españoles?

¿Qué produce España?

¿Puede algún país vivir con solos sus frutos?

Pruébese con la descripción de las producciones y clima de España.

¿Qué materias simples tiene España?

¿Qué le falta á España?

Ninth Lesson.**Possessive and Relative Pronouns.**

(See Lessons 15 and 26, Part I.)

Possessive Pronouns.

Concerning the possessive pronouns we need add but one observation to what we stated in the first part of the Grammar—*viz.*:

As the possessive pronoun of the *third* person singular is alike in the masculine and feminine, a misconception might often arise, as in the sentence:

This is his book and that is hers, or yours,
Este es su libro y aquel es el suyo,

where it seems doubtful whether "el suyo" means *his*, *hers* or *yours*. Hence the above sentence should be accordingly translated:

Éste es su libro y aquel es el de ella.

This is his book, and that is hers.

Éste es su libro y aquel es el de usted.

This is his book, and that is yours.

N.B.—Idioms:

Los míos, my people (family, friends, partisans).

Le han pasado de las suyas, he has had many troubles.

He de hacer la mía, I shall have my own way.

Relative Pronouns.

1. The relative pronoun *que* is used for all cases if referring to *things*; with reference to *persons*, however, it may only be employed in the *nominative* and *accusative* case. *Que* also does not take *á* if it is an accusative

and refers to persons. Besides *de* and *á*, other prepositions may likewise be coupled with *que*, provided they are *monosyllables*. The preposition *por*, however, cannot be used before *que**. Examples:

Nom. *La señora que viene*, the lady who comes.

Las señoras que vienen, the ladies who come.

Acc. *La carta* } *que recibí*, the letter } which I received.
Las cartas } the letters }

Las señoras que he visto, the ladies whom I have seen.

With prepositions: *La casa de que le hablé á V.*

The house of which I spoke to you.

El jardín en que he visto á V.

The garden where (in which) I saw you.

N.B.—The direct object *que* is never suppressed in Spanish; compare:

I have read the book that you	}	<i>He leído el libro que</i>	
lent me,			<i>V. me prestó.</i>
I have read the book you lent			
me,			

2. *Que* also occurs with the *article*, especially if preceded by *two* substantives, in which case it is used instead of *el (la) cual*, as:

La señora me envió á un colegio de Cartagena, del que era directora una parienta suya.

The lady sent me to a school in Cartagena, the headmistress of which was a relation of hers.

Note.—Usually *no* comma is put before the relative pronoun. If it is, the meaning of the accessory sentence undergoes a slight variation. [A similar rule obtains in French.] The pupil is requested to compare the following sentences:

Las señoras, que deseaban descansar, se retiraron.

The ladies, who wished to repose, withdrew (here *all* the ladies wished to repose).

Whereas:

Las señoras que deseaban descansar, se retiraron, means:
 (Only) those ladies who wished, etc., withdrew.

It is a peculiarity of the Spanish language that if *que* refers at once to *two* foregoing nouns of *different* gender,

* *Que* corresponds to the French *que* and the Italian *che*, with the sole exception that these relative pronouns only refer to the *nominative* and *accusative*, whilst the Spanish *que* admits of other prepositions. *Por* is avoided before *que*, because *por que* (= *porque*) means "because" and *por qué*, why?

demonstrative pronouns should be added in order to distinguish these words, as :

Adornaron la nave con flámulas y gallardetes que, ellos azotando el aire y ellas besando las aguas, vistosísima vista hactan. (Cervantes.)

They adorned the ship with pennons and flags which, the latter beating the air and the former kissing the waves, offered a splendid sight.

Note.—*Que* if coupled with *ser* emphasizes the following verb:

¡Es que no quiero! But I won't! (French: *C'est que je ne veux pas!*)

¡Es que no se trata de eso!
We are not speaking of such a thing!

¡Si no fuera que teme ser descubierto!
If it were not for his being afraid of discovery!

N.B.—*Que* is very often met with in phrases such as:

El que lo sepa que lo diga, let he who knows tell.

La que lo sabe lo calla, she who knows it does not tell.

Sea el que sea (or *la que sea*), whoever it may be.

Sea el caballero (or *la señora*) *que sea*.

Whatever gentleman (or lady) it may be.

Suceda lo que suceda, whatever may happen.

Yo soy el que lo dice, *It is I who* say it.

Ella es la que lo sabe, *it is she who* knows it.

La casa es la que arde, *it is the house that* is on fire.

Remark.—Finally, *que* being a *weaker* relative is used after *quienquiera*, *cualquiera* (compounds of *quien* and *cual*), which *quien* and *cual* cannot.

Quienquiera (or *cualquiera*) *que lo diga se equivoca*.
Whoever says it makes a mistake.

3. *Quien* (like the Italian *chi*) often corresponds to the English *he who*, *people who*, as:

Hay quien dice*, there are people who say.

Á quien está contento nada le falta.

To him who is satisfied nothing is wanting.

Quien — *quien* is an equivalent for the English *some* —, *some* —, or *the one* — *the other*, as:

Quien lee, quien escribe; some read, some write.

(*Cual* — *cual* is likewise used in this sense.)

* Also in the *plural*, as: *Hay quienes no tienen vergüenza*, there are people who are shameless.

N.B.—*Quien* is also found in phrases referring to persons, and similar to those above (see page 263, *N.B.*), though without the article, as *quien* already means *el que*:

quien lo sepa que lo diga,
sea quien sea,
yo soy quien lo dice.

4. *Cual* (without the article) expresses a *comparison* (see Lesson 26, Part I., page 110, § 4), whilst *el (la) cual* develops the meaning of the preceding sentence. In the former signification, it supposes a preceding *tal*, which, however, may be omitted, as:

Esos hombres no son (tales) cuales se muestran.
 These people are not (such) as they show themselves.

5. *Cuyo*, -a, pl. -os, -as, as a relative pronoun, renders the English *whose*, and, like this, requires a substantive following, with which it agrees in gender and number, as:

La madre cuya hija es tan laboriosa.
 The mother whose daughter is so diligent.

El caballero cuyos amigos han llegado.
 The gentleman whose friends have arrived.

Note.—Sometimes *cuyo* is also separated by the *verb* from the substantive to which it belongs, as:

El caballero cuya era la espada.
 The knight whose sword this was (*i.e.*, to whom this sword belonged).

But, at any rate, it is better, in such a case (*i.e.*, when speaking of persons or personified beings), to use *de quien* instead of *cuyo*.

But if the substantive after the relative *whose* is the *predicate* of the accessory sentence, *cuyo* must be replaced by another relative pronoun. Thus we cannot say:

El niño cuyo tutor él es, the child whose guardian he is, but only: *El niño de quien* or *del cual es tutor*.

Observations.

1. If the relative pronoun is followed by a *numeral* referring to a preceding substantive, as in the sentence: The child looked at its apples, *which* were seven (*i.e.*, apples), *que* is coupled with the corresponding *article* in the nominative case, as:

He counted the dollars in his purse, *which* were eight.
Contó los duros de su bolsillo, los que eran ocho.

2. *Quien* (see p. 264, n° 3) referring to *things*, though met with in ancient writers, is now quite obsolete and must not be imitated.

Es un bálsamo de quien tengo la receta en la memoria.
 (Cervantes.)

It is an ointment whose receipt I have in my memory.
Es un bálsamo cuya receta tengo . . (or del cual tengo la receta . .).

3. *Donde* is used instead of a relative pronoun, provided it denotes a *local circumstance*, as:

La ciudad donde or en donde vivo.
 The town where (or in which) I live.

4. *Cuyo* connects more closely an *apposition* with the word to which it refers, as:

Un porquero tocó un cuerno, á cuya señal se recogen los puercos. (Cerv.)

A swine-herd blew a horn, at which signal the pigs go home.

Vinieron algunas embajadas, por cuyo motivo se detuvo.
 There came several embassies, for which reason he remained longer.

5. It is a peculiarity of the Spanish language to employ *relative* sentences, where the English use *indirect questions* or *exclamations*, as:

No puede V. figurarse el dolor con que recibí esta noticia.

You cannot imagine how much grieved I was to learn this news.

Sé lo bien que me quiere.*

I know how much he loves me.

6. The English *in that . . .* to introduce an explanatory sentence, is rendered by its Spanish equivalent *en que*; but in referring to a *previous* sentence, by *en lo que, en lo cual*. Compare:

() Animals differ from () plants in that they feel and move, or: by their *being capable* of feeling and

* *Querer bien*, to love, lit. *to wish the good* of somebody.
 French: *Le bien qu'il me veut*. Ital. *Il bene che mi vuole*.

moving, or: by *sensation and motion*. (French: *en ce qu'ils sentent et se meuvent*.)

Los animales se diferencian de las plantas en que sienten y se mueven.

Pueden los relativos no sólo reproducir un concepto precedente sino anunciar un concepto subsiguiente; en lo que no se diferencian de los otros demostrativos.

The relative pronouns are not only capable of reproducing a preceding idea, but they can also indicate a following notion, wherein they do not differ from the demonstrative pronouns.

7. If the relative sentence is but a *periphrase* of a substantive in the *nominative* case, the *definite* article *el* should precede *que*, as:

Parecieron estas condiciones duras; ni valió, para hacerlas aceptar, el que Colon propusiese contribuir con la octava parte.

These conditions seemed hard, and it was of no avail Columbus proposing (= Columbus' *proposal* was of no avail) in order to have them accepted, to contribute with the eighth part.

Again, relative sentences which imply an *accusative case* are introduced in this way, as:

No podía yo mirar con indiferencia el que se infamase mi doctrina.

I could not see with indifference *how* they calumniated my doctrine (= *the calumination, detraction, etc.*, of my doctrine).

8. If *which* refers to a *whole* foregoing sentence, it is rendered by *lo que* (French: *ce qui*; It. *il* or *lo che*), as:

Los reos fueron condenados al último suplicio, lo que causó un sentimiento general.

The culprits were condemned to death, *which* caused a general sensation.

9. The exclamative "how" or "how much" is very often *lo . . . que*, and then the *adjective* takes its place between *lo* and *que*. Now it may occur that the adjective is *feminine*, when the pupil might easily be misled to consider the somewhat strange form (*lo . . . a*) incorrect, which is by no means the case. Example:

Así se ve lo generosa que eres.

Thus one sees how generous (*fem.*) you are.

This must be understood thus:

Así se ve lo que (how much) *tú eres generosa.*

Traducción. 10.

1. Yesterday I saw your friends and mine. I cannot at once comply with his wishes and with hers. He wrote a long letter to his relations and to hers. These are his flowers and those are hers. He has had many troubles, because he always had his own way. (See page 262, *N.B.*) Who are the gentlemen that come there? They are the two merchants of whom I spoke to you. I thank you for the kindness with which you have always treated me. Have you read that book I lent you? Yes; the friend you know wants to read it. (See page 263, *N.B.*) To him who is hungry, any meal pleases (*le gusta*). Have you thought of (*en*) what you have promised me? Mr. Silvela lives at the beginning of the street in which the house of (the) General Moya is situated (*fr. hallarse*). You behave like a man (*pronoun*) who knows nothing. He who flatters you, wants (*fr. querer*) to cheat you. (The) one prefers (the) work, the other (the) idleness. (The) one pretends this, the other something else. These people are as you have depicted them to me. The workman whose child is so ill, is (*tr. finds himself*) in the greatest distress. Let him who knows how to do a thing do it, whoever it may be. Whoever may come, tell them that I am not at home. And if it should be that lady? Whatever lady it may be. It is I who say it. Do your duty, whatever may happen.

2. The tulips whose colours are so brilliant, have no smell. The girl whose aunt you saw here yesterday will now live in our house. The boy whose godfather he is, gives him much trouble (*dar disgustos*). He attentively observed the members of the family, who were seven. The little girl joyfully counted her dolls, of which she had received four. The house *where* we live stands in the middle of a beautiful garden. He had to pay seven hundred dollars, *which sum* he could not raise for the moment. She asked her money from him, for *which reason* he resolved to (*á*) sell his house. You cannot imagine with *what great joy* I accepted this proposition. If you knew how much (*lo bien que*) she loves him, you would not doubt (of) her sincerity. Now, one could see how malicious the servant (*f.*) had been. I cannot describe to you how afflicted my mother was at this news.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

Doscientos años hace que comenzaron flamencos, ingleses y franceses á aprender de nosotros el arte de las fábricas, á

sacarlas, tomarlas y llevarlas de España á sus países; y ésta fué la época en que dió principio nuestra decadencia. En el siglo diez y seis daban nuestras fábricas la ley en tres cuartas partes del mundo. En todas ellas tenían factorías nuestros comerciantes españoles. El increíble número de telares que contaba España, es cosa repetida en muchos escritos antiguos y modernos. Pero lo más notable es que con todo el esmero de su esquisita aplicación, aún no han llegado todavía estas industriosas naciones á dar á los bordados, telas de seda, tisúes, y tejidos de oro y plata, aquella perfección, permanencia, solidez y hermosura que, después de doscientos años, todavía se admiran hoy en los nuestros. Los ornamentos de altar que Felipe II donó á la sacristía del Escorial, fabricados en Sevilla, etc., y que se conservan en ella, expuestos á la disposición de quien quiera verlos, responden de esta verdad.

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara. — “*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*”]

Conversación.

- ¿Cuándo principió nuestra decadencia?
 ¿Cuál era el estado de las fábricas españolas en el siglo dieciseis?
 ¿Han llegado Flandes, Inglaterra y Francia á igualar nuestros bordados, etc., de entonces?
 ¿Qué era lo distintivo de aquellos bordados, etc.?
 ¿Dónde pueden probarse esas verdades?

Tenth Lesson.

Adverbs. — Their position. — Affirmations and Negations.

In addition to the treatment of this Subject in Part I. (Lessons 30th, 31st) we further add:

1. Peculiarities of certain Adverbs.

Adverbs of Place.

(a) *Adonde* instead of *donde*, where? is now obsolete. In modern speech it means only *where-to*, as:

El lugar adonde nos encaminamos.

The place *where* we go to;

whereas:

El lugar donde residimos, the place where we live.

(b) *Donde* may be used as a relative or as a conjunction in such sentences as:

La ciudad por donde transitáramos.

The town through which we passed.

Que lo haga, donde no, que le castiguen.

Let him do it, otherwise, let him be punished.

Adverbs of Time.

(a) *Cuando* cannot be a relative, and must be replaced by *en que* to render *when* in sentences such as:

Hay días en que todo sale mal.

There are days *when* everything goes wrong.

N.B.—However, in referring to *another* adverb of time, it renders the English relative *that* in such sentences as:

Ayer fué cuando la vi.

It was yesterday *that* I saw her.

Entonces fué cuando me lo dijo.

It was then *that* she told me.

(b) *Cuando* as a conjunction—*i.e.*:

¿Cómo se lo he de dar cuando no lo tengo?

How can I give it to him if I have not got it.

Adverbs of Manner.

Note the peculiar meaning of the following adverbs.

¿Cómo no se lo dijo V.?

Why did you not tell him?

Es cierto, como que lo vi yo, it is true, *for* I saw it.

Como soy Juan [in strong assertions].

As true as my name is John.

¿A cómo se venden? *How much* do you sell them at?

Eran como unos veinte.

There were *about twenty* of them.

Tráigame V. agua bien caliente.

Bring me some water *very* hot.

Bien se lo decía yo á V., I told you *so*.

Hace V. mal en hacer eso.

You are wrong in doing that.

Mal podrá decirlo, si no lo sabe.

He cannot say it, since he does not know it.

Mejor que mejor, so much the better.

Peor que peor, so much the worse.

¡Así lo maten! I wished they would kill him!

Así lo maten no lo hará.

He will not do it, even if they kill him for it.

Así como así, anyhow.

2. Position of the Adverb.

Regarding the *position* of the adverb, we now add the following rules:

(a) *Proper* adverbs are generally placed *after* the verb and *before* the direct object—*i.e.*, the *accusative* case (see Less. 15, Part II.: **The Direct Object**). Thus:

Mi amigo no ha llegado todavía.

My friend has not yet arrived.

Su amigo de V. ha ganado siempre mucho dinero.

Your friend has always gained a great deal of money.

Observation.—It must be distinctly understood that if the verb is in a *compound tense*, the adverb can *never* be placed *between* the auxiliary and the past participle, but *always* follows the latter. A construction like: *ha siempre ganado*, would therefore be erroneous.

(b) *Adverbial locutions* follow the direct object, as:

He leído su carta de V. con mucha atención.

I have read your letter with great attention.

The above observations are understood of the construction when *regular*. As, however, the Spanish language abounds in *inversions*—*i.e.*, deviations from the regular construction—many exceptions are met with in the works of Spanish authors; for emphasis, euphony, distinctness, and elegance of speech often require another arrangement of the words than that of the regular construction.

3. Affirmations and Negations.

The simplest affirmation is *sí*, yes. *Si* and *no* are seldom used alone, but generally accompanied by *señor*, *señora*, *señorita*, *hijo*, *hija*, *hombre*, *mujer*, *amigo*, etc., according to the degree of respect or familiarity between the speaker and the person spoken to. Instead of *sí*, the word *ya* (already) is also used as an affirmation (like *già* in Italian) if the speaker supposes that the meaning of his answer is already known to the person addressed, as:

Yes, I recollect, *ya me acuerdo*.

The simple affirmation or negation is made more emphatic by the addition of *que*, as:

I say neither Yes nor No.

No digo ni que sí ni que no.

Note.—The student will not forget that, as stated on p. 136, the first negative particle *ni* may be omitted with *neither* — *nor*, as:

No debe V. (ni) decirlo ni escribirlo.

You shall neither tell nor write it.

Observation.—The English student must bear in mind that the English practice of answering simply with "Yes, I do" or "No, I do not," etc., is by no means admissible in Spanish. Here the answer is either simply *Sí, señor*, or *No, señor*, or a complete sentence added to the negative particle, as:

Did you see my brother to-day? Yes, *I did*.

No, *I did not*.

¿Ha visto V. hoy á mi hermano? Sí, señor, le he visto.

No, señor, no le he visto.

Only the verbs *ser*, *estar*, and *hacer* sometimes show a certain resemblance, though only a *sceming* one, with the English construction. Examples:

Are you the mother of this child? Yes, I am.

¿Es V. la madre de este niño? Sí, lo soy.

Are you ready? Yes, I am.

¿Está V. pronto? Sí, estoy pronto.

Did the shoemaker make my shoes? Yes, he did.

¿Hizo el zapatero mis zapatos? Sí, los hizo.

It is easily understood that in Spanish these verbs are not *auxiliaries*, as in English, but *principal* verbs, with predicates or objects of *their own*, which is not the case in English; and therefore the English and Spanish constructions are totally different.

As already stated (Lesson 31, Part I), in Spanish the negations *never*, *nothing*, *none*, *nobody*, etc., may be used with the preceding particle *no*. But this is only the case with the regular construction. As soon as the negation itself begins the sentence (by inversion), *no* is omitted as superfluous; thus:

No como jamás en esta fonda, I never eat at this inn.

Ese vil perezoso no hace nada.

This vile idler does nothing at all.

No verá V. hoy á nadie.

You will not see anybody to-day.

Whereas:

Jamás como en esta fonda.

A nadie le gusta recibir consejos.

Nobody likes to receive advice.

Nada me agrada, nothing pleases me.

Note.—If the English *no* or *not any* is rendered by *ninguno* or *(no) alguno*, the position of these two words should be carefully observed. *Ninguno* always *precedes*, *alguno* follows the *accusative* to which it belongs. Thus:

No le confiaré á V. ningún secreto, or:

» » » » » *secreto alguno.*

I shall not entrust you with any secret.

No more, if the verb has an *accusative* (direct object), is *ya no*, as: *Ya no tengo dinero*, I have no more *money*. If, on the contrary, the verb governs *no* accusative case, it is *no — más*, as: I shall lie (tell a falsehood) no more, *no mentiré más*; or, rendered more emphatic by the addition of *nunca* (never): *ya no mentiré nunca más*.

If *no more* (or *not . . . any more*) means as much as “*not again*,” it may be rendered by *no* with the corresponding tense of *volver* with *á*, as: I shall lie no more, *no volveré á mentir*; do not come to my house any more, *no vuelvas á entrar en mi casa*.

If *only* or *but* refers to a *number*, as: “I have only *six* dollars,” it is translated *no — más que*, as:

I have but (only) ten dollars.

No tengo más que diez duros. (*Je n'ai que . . .*)

In all other cases *but* (or *only*) is *no — sino*, as:

I travel but rarely. *No viajo sino rara vez.*

N.B.—*But* and *only* are also rendered by *solamente*, *sólo*, *meramente*, etc. In exclamations *más que* is also met with, as:

¡*Más que nunca vuelva!*

If he but never returned! (God forbid he should ever return!)

Traducción. 11.

1. Where are you going? Tell me, otherwise I shall not let you go. How can I tell you if I do not know it myself? There are occasions when one does not know what to do. It is now that I do not understand you, as true as I am here. So much the better. Are you here at last? Yes, I

am ready. How do you think about (*tr.* what do you say of) this demand? I say neither Yes nor No, for I do not know whether Mr. Moreno is right or wrong. I never got a letter from you, and I never (have) heard that you had written to me. I never write in twilight, because I am afraid to injure my eyes. Did you write to Mr. Mariño? Yes, I did. Shall you come this evening? Yes, I shall. Are you the tutor of these young gentlemen? Yes, I am. Never shall I forget what you have done for me! Why do these young people not work? They have nothing to do, because you have *not* given them *anything* to do. I saw nobody when I entered the house.

2. Nobody has arrived by (*en*) (the) train. Tell nobody that I have spoken with you. You are a queer fellow, my dear friend; nothing pleases you, you do not feel sympathy with anybody, you treat everyone unkindly, and yet you want everyone to treat you (*tr.* that everyone treat [*Subj.*] you) politely and affectionately. I always avoid intercourse (*el trato*) with a man that has no friends. Have you some wine left (*tr.* still some wine)? I have no more. You have cheated me, therefore I shall not believe you any longer (more). Pardon me, sir, I shall not do it again (*tr.* no more). I had but two hundred dollars. I write only in the morning; in the evening I have no time to write. Have you given him only 12 pesetas? He has not asked for more; if he had asked for more, I should have given him more.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

¿Y España, no es país para fábricas? ¿Puede oírse esto sin compasión? ¿Qué Londres, qué París, qué Nimes, ni qué Lyon han igualado á las fábricas antiguas de Toledo, Granada, Sevilla y Segovia? Si exceden hoy á las actuales (en que no hay controversia) ya se ha indicado el motivo en que consiste: y se dirá más todavía para que en pocos años se queden muy atrás, si se practicare lo que yo propondré en estos apuntes. Damascos ha hecho la piedad del Rey fabricar en Talavera para adornar una capilla del Escorial, que no pueden ceder á ningunos de Europa. ¿Pero qué ha de sucedernos, si cuando más hacemos, quitamos un par de grillos de los pies del comerciante, labrador, fabricante, ó navegante, y en el mismo acto le amarramos por la cintura con una cadena mucho más fuerte? y no obstante decimos: «camina adelante, que ya tienes los pies sueltos.» Él no da paso, ni puede; y luego se dice: «¡ven ustedes que España no es país para esto! . . .» (To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara. — «*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

¿Es España país para fábricas?

Pruébese.

¿Dónde se fabricaban los damascos? ¿Eran notables?

¿Qué sucede pues, y por qué no adelanta España?

Eleventh Lesson.

Prepositions.

As stated in Part I., the Spanish prepositions are either *proper* prepositions, being simply placed before the word to which they refer, as: *sobre los montes*, over the mountains, or they are adjectives, substantives, participles, etc., coupled with a preposition, and thus properly *prepositional locutions*, as *delante de testigos*, before witnesses.

1. Proper Prepositions.

Among these, *á*, *de*, *en*, *para*, and *por* offer the greatest difficulty; we will, therefore, consider each of them separately.

Á, at, in, to, etc.

1. The predominating idea of this preposition is *direction*, aiming at a point, therefore *motion to* or *towards*, as:

Ir al correo, to go to the post.

Tirar al blanco, to shoot at the target.

Volverse al príncipe, to address oneself to the prince.

2. Thus, *action*:

Empezar á andar, to begin to walk.

Ponerse á leer, to begin to read.

Entregarse á los placeres.

To give oneself up to pleasure.

3. Again, it implies the *manner* of an action or state, as:

Á mi modo, in my (own) way.

Á la turca, after the Turkish fashion.

Á lo militar, in a military fashion.

Á sangre fría, coolly, in cold blood.

Cara á cara, face to face.

4. With transitive verbs, to point out the direct object, if a person or a personified thing:

Amar al prójimo, to love the neighbour.

Aborrecer á alguno, to hate someone.

Temer á la muerte, to fear death.

Thus, to distinguish the personal from the impersonal object, as:

Dar una cosa á alguno, to give someone something.

Permitir algo á otro, to allow anyone anything.

5. *Time and place* of an action or state, as:

El mendigo está á la puerta.

The beggar stands at the door.

Á las diez, at ten o'clock.

Al anochecer, at nightfall.

6. The *price* of something, as:

Á dos pesetas kilo, 2 pesetas a kilogram.

7. *Instrument, means, and cause*, as:

Matar á hierro, to kill with the sword (*lit.* iron).

Á fuerza de armas, by force of arms.

Á instancias de sus amigos, at the request of his friends.

8. *Á* with the infinitive replaces an *accessory* sentence beginning with *when* or *if*, as:

Á verla V. diría, if you could see her (*or when you saw her*) you would say. [French: *Á la voir, vous diriez.*]

9. Besides, *á* is met with in a great number of peculiar expressions, mostly adverbial locutions, to be found in every good dictionary. Such are:

Á sabiendas, wittingly, purposely.

Á ojos cerrados, blindfold (*lit.* with closed eyes).

Á salga lo que saliere, at random, at haphazard.

De.

1. *De* is frequently the opposite of *á*. Its predominating idea is *possession, motion* towards the speaker, *material*, and *origin*. Examples:

El jardín de mi tío, the garden of my uncle.

Mi primo viene de Madrid, my cousin comes from M.

Un reloj de oro, a gold watch.

El hijo del capitán, the son of the captain.

2. Again, the end of an action:

Acabar de comer, to finish dinner.

Dejar de estudiar, to leave off studying.

Cesar de llover, to stop raining.

3. With reflective and passive verbs or participles to point out the agent of a reflective or passive action, almost always equivalent to *por* (by, with, at):

Ofenderse de algo, to be hurt (offended) by something.

Querido de sus amigos, loved by his friends.

Sorprenderse de una cosa, to be surprised at something.

4. Thus, the *cause* of an action or state, as:

Ciego de furor, blind with fury.

5. *Extent*:

Este cuarto tiene 12 piés de ancho y 16 de largo.

This room is 12 feet wide and 16 feet long.

6. *Qualities* ascribed to a person under certain circumstances*, as:

Trabajar de sastre, to work as a tailor.

Hacer de intérprete, to officiate as an interpreter.

De is preferred if a peculiar *distinction* of a person or thing is denoted, as:

El hombre del gabán verde, the man with the green coat.

La niña de los ojos azules, the girl with the blue eyes.

Francfort del Main, Frankfort on the Main.

7. After the names of *days*, *months*, *titles*, *dignities*, etc. Examples:

La ciudad de Toledo, the city of Toledo.

El mes de enero, the month of January.

El título de conde, the title of count.

N.B.—With mountains and rivers *de* is only used, if the attribution is a *proper name* or an *appellative noun*, as:

El río de San Lorenzo, the river St. Lawrence.

El río de la Plata, the river La Plata (silver).

If this is not the case, *de* is omitted, as:

El río Duero, the river Duero.

8. It is a peculiarity of the Spanish language** that in *exclamations* a substantive is often joined by *de* to the following *proper name* or *appellative noun* denoting a person, as:

* Chiefly after the verb *estar*, as: *El conde de R. está de embajador en París*, Count R. is ambassador at P.

** In German likewise: „Der Löpel von Rutzger!“ „Das Sammerbild von Menſchen!“ „Der Raſer von Staat!“

- ¡ *El pobre de Rocinante!* Poor R.!
 ¡ *La loca de Elvira!* That foolish E.!
 ¡ *El ladrón del* criado!* That thief of a footman!

9. With *de* are formed a great many locutions, as: *de balde*, gratis; *de miedo*, for fear; *de veras*, in truth; *vestir de verano*, to dress in summer clothes; *de camino*, on the way, etc.

The cases where *de* is coupled with a foregoing adjective, substantive, or verb are so manifold that we refer the pupil to his dictionary. For those who are somewhat acquainted with the language, we recommend the excellent work of *V. Salvá***.

En.

1. The predominating idea of this preposition is *residence* in some place. It therefore denotes a state of *repose*, as:

Estoy en mi cuarto, I am in my room.

En su casa de V., in your house.

Mi primo vive en París, my cousin lives in P.

2. It likewise denotes *direction*, but differs from the synonymous *á* in so far as it also conveys the secondary idea of *penetration into*, as:

El criado entró en mi cuarto.

The footman entered (into) my room.

La piedra cae en el agua.

The stone falls into the water.

3. With verbs of motion, to express the means of conveyance:

Ir en ferrocarril, to go by rail.

Viajar en vapor, to travel by steamer.

But, *á pié*, on foot; *á caballo*, on horseback.

4. Moreover, *en* denotes an *epoch* at or **within** which something happens, as:

En el mes de enero, in (the month of) January.

En el año de 1880, in the year 1880.

En breve, in a short time.

But, *á las diez*, at 10; *por la noche*, in the evening.

* With appellative nouns the article is commonly affixed to *de*.

** The full title of Salvá's Work is, *Gramática de la lengua castellana segun ahora se habla, ordenada por Don Vicente Salvá; París, Garnier Hermanos.*

Note.—*En* is not used, if a demonstrative adjective, a numeral, or the definite article precedes the respective day of the week, the month etc., as:

El diez de octubre, the 10th of October.

¿*Irá V. á ver á mi tío el miércoles?*

Shall you come to see my uncle this Wednesday?

5. Again, *en* denotes the *cause* as well as the *purpose* of an action, as:

Lo hizo en provecho de su patria.

He did it for the benefit of his country.

*Le mató en venganza del ultrage.**

He killed him in revenge of the offence.

Un discurso en memoria del rey.

A speech in memory of the king.

6. With some adjectives denoting skill, superiority, and their contraries:

Hábil en todo, skilful in everything.

Superior en calidad, of a superior quality.

7. The *manner* and *kind* of an occupation, as:

Se ocupa en cazar, he is busy hunting.

Trabajar en plata, en oro, to work in silver, in gold.

Negociar en tabaco, to deal in tobacco.

8. *En* precedes the *infinitive* governed by a *substantive* with *haber* (where the French use *il y a*), as:

Hay dificultad en decirlo.

There is a difficulty in telling it.

9. When before a substantive which occurs *twice*, it denotes *continuation* or *repetition*, as:

De día en día, from day to day.

De hora en hora, from hour to hour.

10. Finally, *en* is used after a great many adjectives and verbs, of which we give those most in use. The adjectives are: *lento* and *tardío*, slow; *versado*, versed, experienced; *exacto*, exact; and the verbs: *comerciar* and *traficar*, to deal, to transact; *insistir*, to insist; *meditar*, to reflect; *pensar*, to think (of something); *perseverar*, to persevere; *tardar*, to tarry; *vacilar*, to stagger, to totter; *alucinarse*, to be mistaken; *emplearse* and *ocuparse*, to occupy oneself; *mezclarse*, to meddle with.

* = "outrage" (French and English).

11. Idioms with *en* are:*En esto*, at this moment.*En voz baja*, in a low voice.*Beber en una taza*, to drink out of a cup (in a cup*) etc.N.B.—*En comiendo*, *se vá*.

No sooner he finishes dinner, he leaves.

En llegando le verá.

I will see him as soon as I arrive.

Con.

It expresses:

1. Accompaniment, co-operation, state, contact:

Ir con alguno, to go with somebody.*Vivir con otro*, to live with someone.*Trabajar con alguno*, to work with somebody.*España confina con Francia*.

Spain lies adjacent to France.

Estar con un constipado, to have a cold.

2. Manner, instrument:

Vivir con economía, to live economically.*Hablar con dulzura*, to speak softly.*Pescar con caña*, to fish with a rod.*Tocar con los dedos*, to touch with the fingers.

3. Disposition towards:

Llevarse bien con otro.

To be on good terms with another.

Afable con los niños, kind to children.N.B.—*Conmigo*, *contigo*, with me, with you (thee).*General Remark*.—A peculiarity possessed in common by the prepositions *á*, *con*, *de*, *en* is that of their being used after verbs beginning with such prepositions—i.e.:*Acercarse á*, to get near to.*Acostumbrarse á*, to get used to.*Combinar una cosa con otra*.

To combine one with another.

Colaborar con otro, to collaborate with another.*Contentarse con algo*.

To be pleased (satisfied) with something.

* French: *boire dans une tasse*.

Depender de las circunstancias.

To depend on circumstances.

Encastillarse uno en su opinión.

To stick to one's opinion.

Traducción. 12.

1. Shall you go (*fut.*) to the theatre to-night? No, I am going to the concert and afterwards to my friend Bastinos's *who gives a ball to-night (baile esta noche)*. The dog stood before the door and barked. At nightfall we arrived at Madrid. It began to rain and did not stop raining. The ladies were dressed after the English fashion. I should like to speak with you (in private) face to face. Allow me to finish dinner. These cherries *are sold (reflect.) (at) one real a pound*. At the prompting (*Á instancia*) of my friends I have bought the house. If one hears him, one thinks that he is right. I should find the way to your house blindfold. Stay with us to supper. He could not move for the cold. This tower is (has) 200 feet high and 40 feet wide. His brother worked long (*tr. much time*) as (a) joiner at Paris. We shall disguise *ourselves (disfrazarse)* as gardeners and go to the ball in this costume. The president's brother is (*estar*) interpreter at the embassy at Athens. The girl with the fair hair has spoken to the gentleman with the brown cloak.

2. In the month of March he obtained the title of Marquis. This rogue of a lawyer (has) made me pay two hundred dollars. In my room you will find ink, pens, and paper. Last year in (the month of) May we travelled to Paris. Ere long (in a short time) I shall write to my cousin (*f.*). On Tuesday there will be (*habrá*) a ball at the count's. It is generous to speak on behalf of the oppressed. You have done it to your own damage. The merchant deals in sugar and coffee, wine and oil. Why will you *give vent (desfogar)* to your anger on me? I did not think of offending you. It was dangerous to speak. There was danger in speaking the truth to a favourite. I am waiting from day to day, but no letter is forthcoming (*no llega carta*). He waited hour after hour (for) the return of his friend. The just man is always slow to punish. It is a disgrace not to be acquainted with (*no estar uno enterado de*) the history of one's country. Do you still think of going (*Infín.*) to Italy? It is sometimes a dangerous thing to meddle with other people's affairs. With whom do you live? Are you coming with me? I am going to fish with rod and line (*hilo y caña*). He is not on good terms with her. He is in bed with a cold. Get near the fireplace, it is cold. No, thanks; I am used to cold weather. Would you be satisfied with that? It would depend on () circumstances.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

La nación española es nación de mucho honor, dócil, fiel, obediente y amantísima de sus Soberanos. Su carácter es vivo, pronto, esforzado, constante, especulativo y penetrante. Por la senda del honor se la conduce hasta lo sumo. Los Reyes Católicos y el famoso Jiménez (por no volver más atrás) que quisieron teólogos, juriconsultos, capitanes, estadistas y políticos, todos los hallaron con superioridad á las demás naciones. Sus obras doy por garantes. Carlos V deseó capitanes y estadistas: jamás vió la Europa un Consejo de Estado como el suyo, y nunca hubo príncipe que tuviese tanto número de generales insignes. Felipe II anheló toda suerte de hombres sobresalientes en todas líneas, y en todas se aventajaron sus vasallos. El Concilio de Trento lo dirá. Felipe III quiso santos, y los altares se poblaron. Felipe IV amó poetas, y el Parnaso se declaró español. La débil complexión de Carlos II no le permitió pensar en nada, y en España nada hubo. El Rey Felipe quiso capitanes y eruditos, y en un instante se formaron de la nada: no digo hasta lo sumo; pero digo hasta más allá de aquel punto que permiten los instantes. ¿Si probarán estas expresiones que todas las cosas dependen de los Gobiernos?

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué clase de nación es la española, y cuál es su carácter?
 ¿Cómo se la puede conducir?
 Pruébese que en cada época ha producido España los hombres que sus Reyes necesitaban.
 ¿Á qué pregunta puede dar origen este hecho?

Twelfth Lesson.

The Prepositions continued.

Por and *para* (i.e., *por á*), on account of their common origin, are sometimes misleading. It will, therefore, be worth stating that *por* denotes *cause*, whilst *para* means *purpose*.

Por.

1. It denotes the *intrinsic motive* or the *criterion* of an action, as:

La mujer lo hizo por vanidad.

The woman did it from vanity.

Lo sé por experiencia, I know it by experience.

N.B.—Where *por* denotes *purpose*, the preposition *para* may be used in its stead, as:

Callaré por (or para) no dar disgusto á V.

I shall be silent, that I may not vex you.

2. A certain *quality* attributed to a person or a thing, as:

Tomar la mar por patria, to take the sea for one's home.

Recibir á uno por maestro, to take one as a tutor.

Tener á uno por docto.

To consider a person to be learned.

3. The *price* of anything, *barter*, or in general an *act of exchange*, as:

¿Cuánto pide V. por este sombrero?

How much do you ask for this hat?

Compré mi casa por 10,000 duros.

I bought my house for 10,000 dollars.

No daré mi lápiz por tu pluma.

I shall not give my pencil for your pen.

Trabajo por mi amigo.

I work in place of my friend (or for my friend's sake).

Trabajo para mi amigo.

I work on behalf of my friend.

4. A certain *place*, *direction*, as well as *repose*, as:

Pasar por la calle, to go through the street.

Fuí por París á Londres.

I went by Paris to London.

Echar por tierra, to throw to the ground.

Perdí mi dinero por esta calle.

I lost my money in this street.

5. *Por* used with the passive voice* indicates the *agent*, and is translated by *by* or *through*, as:

Fué muerto por otro de una puñalada.

He was killed by another by a thrust with a poniard
(he was stabbed).

If the English *passive voice* is rendered by the *reflective verb*, *por* should be used, as:

* Generally speaking, *por* is an equivalent for the French *par*, whereas *para* corresponds to *pour*.

Aquel busto se hizo por un gran escultor.

That bust was made by a great sculptor.

6. Again, *por* denotes *time*, answering to the questions "when?" and "how long?" as:

Por la tarde, la mañana, la noche.

In the afternoon, the morning, the night.

Hemos hablado por una hora.

We talked for an hour.

Le he prestado á V. el libro por una semana.

I lent you the book for a week.

7. Certain parts of anything may be denoted by *por*, as:

Coger por la mano, to seize by the hand.

Asir por el brazo, to seize by the arm.

El perro cogió al toro por la oreja.

The dog seized the bull by the ear.

Lo tomó por el mango, he took it by the handle.

8. *Por* frequently answers to the question *how?* thus implying *manner* or *means*, as:

Por orden alfabético, in alphabetical order.

Por fuerza, on compulsion.

Lo supo por el criado, he knew it from the servant.

Marchar por compañías, to march by companies.

9. *Por* often corresponds to the English *for*, when it means *in favour of*, as:

Combatir por la patria, to fight for one's country.

10. After verbs importing *motion*, as *ir*, *enviar*, etc., *por* indicates the *object* of the motion, as:

Ir por pan, to go for bread.

Enviar por el vidriero, to send for the glazier.

11. Whilst *estar para* implies an *impending futurity*, something about to happen, *estar por* expresses that something has not yet happened, as:

Las peras están por madurar.

The pears are not yet ripe (*i.e.*, must still ripen).

*Las casas están por alquilar**.

The houses must first be let (they are *not* yet let); on the other hand:

* *Estar por* used with the 1st person expresses a desire of this person to do something, as:

Estaba por abofetear al palurdo.

I had a mind to give the impudent fellow a box on the ear.

Las casas están para alquilar.

The houses are to let (they can be had at any moment).

(See under *para* No. 5.)

12. With an *adjective*, *por* corresponds to the English "however," and requires the *subjunctive* of the verb following with *que*, as:

Por hermosa que sea esta señora.

However beautiful this lady may be.

Por grandes que sean los reyes, Dios es superior á ellos.

However great kings may be, God is greater than they.

13. *Por* with the *infinitive* mood is an equivalent for an *accessory* sentence denoting *cause*, as:

Por ser yo tu amigo, as I am your friend (*being y. f.*).

Se le recompensará por haber cumplido con su obligación.

He will be rewarded for *having done* his duty (because he, etc.).

Here, just as in the example under No. 1:

(*Callaré por no dar disgusto á V.*)

por expresses the reason, and its sentence takes the place of a single substantive, as is frequently the case in Spanish. See Lesson 21, n.^o 4, Part II.

Para.

1. To indicate *purpose* and *destination*, *advantage* and *prejudice*, as:

Se come para vivir, one eats in order to live.

Este libro es para V.

This book is for you (destined for you).

Partiré para España, I shall set out for Spain.

La casa está para vender, the house is to be sold.

Lo he hecho para un amigo.

I have done it for (the benefit of) a friend.

Lo hizo para engañarme.

He did it in order to deceive me.

N.B.—After *ir* (to go) *á* should be preferred; after *partir* and *salir*, to depart, to set out, *hacer vela*, to set sail, *á* likewise obtains, but *para* is preferable, as:

Ir á Inglaterra, to go to England.

Salgo para Madrid, I start for Madrid.

Hizo vela para Málaga, he sailed for Malaga.

Partir para (seldom *á*) *Inglaterra*.

To start for England.

2. To denote the *time* when an action will be performed or something will happen, as:

Me pagará V. para San Juan.

You will pay me on St. John's day (Midsummer).

*Para siempre**, for ever.

3. Frequently *para* restrains the meaning of the predicate to a certain subject or object, as:

Tengo para mí, I, for my part, am of opinion.

El general leyó la relación para sí.

The general read the report to himself (in private).

4. "In proportion" or "comparatively" is commonly rendered by *para*, as:

El niño es pequeño para su edad.

The child is small for its age.

N.B.—*Para* should be followed by *con* if the comparison lies between two different *subjects*, as:

¿Quién eres tú para con tu hermano?

What are you in comparison to your brother?

Para con likewise signifies *for* or *towards*, with reference to a person**, as:

No tengo reserva para con mi madre.

For my mother I have no secret.

Era muy paternal su conducta para con Francisco.

To Francis he behaved very much like a father.

If "in proportion" or "proportionally" is not followed by a substantive, but by an accessory sentence, *para lo que* is employed, as:

V. no pagó el sombrero para lo que vale.

You have not paid for the hat in proportion to what it is worth.

5. Coupled with *estar*, the preposition *para* denotes that something is *impending****, as:

Estamos para salir, we shall go out directly.

Estoy para acabar, I shall have done presently.

6. Frequently *para* is joined to an *infinitive* or *participle*, instead of an accessory sentence denoting *condition*, as:

* But also: *Por siempre*.

** Where the French often use *vis-à-vis* and *envers*.

*** In Italian *essere per* or *essere in procinto, sul punto di . . .*

Para decir verdad no le he visto á V.

To speak the truth (= if I shall speak the truth), I have not seen you.

Es difícil para aprendizaje de memoria.

It is difficult to learn by heart.

If *para* with the infinitive does not replace an accessory sentence, it means "in order to," as:

Para escribir es menester . . .

In order to write, it is necessary . . .

Traducción. 13.

1. On *por*. He acted thus from pride and superciliousness. For God's sake (*por amor de . . .*) do not speak in this way! One might think that you said so only from envy. In order to (give) do my friend (a) pleasure, I at once imparted (to) him the news. He may say what he pleases, no matter how much (*por muchoque*) he affirms it, I shall not believe him. The Count has adopted his nephew as [a] son. I sold my library for 800 dollars. I gave him my "Cervantes" for his "Lope de Vega." This morning when I passed (on passing by) the great square, I met my tailor, who had promised (me) to bring my new coat yesterday. Why (did) have you thrown the water on the ground? I did it by accident. The boy was run over (*atropellado*) by a carriage. We were invited to (the) dinner by the aide-de-camp of the prince. The works of this poet are admired by everybody. I have lent him the money for two months. He seized me by the shoulder and pretended that I had taken the money. You must not take the dog by the tail, else he will bite you. With mildness we often obtain more than with severity. I knew of your arrival from my aunt. The soldiers marched by companies. Do you go for wine or for beer? Send for the physician; the child is ill. The house and garden *are* (still) *to be* sold. The linen must still dry. However rich (the) men be, they are seldom satisfied. However nice this child be, it also has its faults. I had a good mind (*Estaba por*) to tell him. As there is [a] *great deal* of (*mucho*) wine in this country, the commerce in this article is very lively.

2. On *para*. Are these flowers for you or for your sister? This garden is not *to be sold* (active voice). Shall you travel to France or to Italy? I do not say the word, *that I may* not betray myself (*tr. me*). Do you go to Toledo or to Madrid? I shall go to Madrid. He has bid me farewell for ever. I shall write to you at Christmas if you are still at Paris then. The girl read the letter by herself. I find that it is little money for (in comparison with) such

great pains (*sing.*). What is the creature in comparison with the Creator? I am a beggar in comparison with that prince of the Exchange. *For* (one's) friends one must not have secrets. What he spends (*gastar*) is little in comparison with what he earns. We were on the point of (leaving) departing by (the) rail (road) when we got your letter. I was on the point of setting out when your aunt arrived. I do as much as I can, in order to gain the esteem of my equals (*mis semejantes.*) For being (*i.e.*, considering it was) sung from memory, the song was very correctly sung. — If I am to speak my mind (*tr.* to speak freely), the comedy did not please me. — In order to please, it is necessary to be amiable and good-natured. He who works for his family is an honest man.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

Cuando las Castillas solas ponían cómodamente cuarenta mil caballos bizarros en campaña, no había las ordenanzas que hoy; pero había libertad, labranza y crianza. Tampoco había caballería andaluza; ésta era batida por la castellana. Los ejércitos de nuestros augustos soberanos no se sirvieron de caballos andaluces hasta el reinado de don Juan II. Alfonso VIII, rey sólo de las dos Castillas, para coronarse de laureles en las Navas de Tolosa, revistó en Toledo 40,000 caballos castellanos, pagados á cinco reales cada uno; 130,000 infantes á tres, sin contar algunos tercios de infantería que aún no habían llegado: y 60,000 carros de provisiones, equipages y bagajes, que ocuparían, á lo menos, 140,000 caballerías; y algunas irían de carga, aunque la historia no lo dice. Á este respecto, no sería mucho creer que la España de entonces, considerada en toda la extensión que domina hoy la corona de Castilla, podría poner hoy en campaña desahogadamente 120,000 caballos, con 400,000 infantes, y 200,000 carros. Y al presente costaría buen trabajo sacar de las Castillas 6,000 caballos, con 50,000 infantes efectivos, y 20,000 carros. Esta cuenta gira sobre el supuesto de que las dos Castillas compongan una tercera parte de las Españas unidas hoy, que no la componen. (To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

¿Cuántos caballos podían poner cómodamente en campaña las dos Castillas?

¿Por qué?

¿Había entonces caballería andaluza?

¿Cuándo empezaron á servirse los Reyes de la caballería andaluza?

¿Qué ejército revistó Alfonso VIII antes de la batalla de las Navas de Tolosa?

Thirteenth Lesson.

Prepositions.

(Conclusion.)

The following are the other *simple* prepositions in their alphabetical order:

1. *Ante*, before—*i.e.*, *in the presence of*, as: *ante el rey*, in the presence of the king; *ante sus ojos*, before his eyes. *Ante* denotes *time* and *order* only in *ante todo* or *ante todas cosas*, before any other thing, before all.

Aquende (obsol.), here, on this side, and *allende*, there, on the other side, are properly *adverbs*, although used as prepositions, as: *Aquende el mar*, on this side of the sea; *allende el río*, on the other side of the river. (*Allende de* is quite antiquated. It means *more than* = *además de*, etc.)

2. *Contra*, against, implies *opposition* or *resistance*, *contact*, as:

No hay remedio contra la muerte.
There is no remedy against death.

Dió contra la pared.
He knocked against the wall.

It rarely refers to *place*, as:

Mi casa está contra el (better frente al) palacio.
My house is situated opposite the palace.

3. *Desde*, from, is the contrary of *hasta* (see 6), and denotes the *point of departure*, as:

Desde París hasta Viena, from Paris to Vienna.

Desde may be used of *time* as well as *place*:

Desde ayer, from yesterday (till . . .).

N.B.—If not the point of departure, but *duration* is intended, *de* may be used instead of *desde*; in which case *to* is rendered by *á*: *e.g.*, from 3 to 4, *de las tres á las cuatro*.

4. *Entre*, among, between, from, denotes *space*, *time*, and *number* (French *parmi*), as:

Entre ayer y hoy, between to-day and yesterday.
Entre doce y veinte, from (between) twelve to twenty.
Entre el jardín y la casa, between the garden and the house.

5. *Hacia*, towards, denotes *direction*, but without the accessory idea of *aim*; also an *approximate time*, as:

Hacia el poniente, towards the west.
Hacia medianoche, towards midnight.

6. *Hasta*, till, as far as, denotes *limit* as to space, time, or number, as:

Hasta el mar, as far as the sea.
Hasta las once, till 11 o'clock.
Tengo hasta 2,000 libros, I have some 2,000 books.

N.B.—When used as an adverb, *hasta* means *even*, as:

Hasta las mujeres pelearon, even the women fought.
Hasta no más signifies *to the utmost*.

7. *Según*, according to, conformably, agreeably, expresses the *conformity* of a circumstance, as:

Según las historias, conformably to the histories.
Según las circunstancias, according to circumstances.
Según factura, as per invoice.

8. *Sin*, without, differs from the English preposition in so far as it may never be used as an adverb:

Sin duda, without doubt.

N.B.—*Tiene otras casas, sin esas*.

He has other houses, besides those.

9. *Só*, under, is now almost obsolete, and occurs in but few locutions, as:

Só capa, só color, só pretexto, under pretext.
Só pena, upon pain of

10. *Sobre*, on, upon, denotes *height* and *superiority* in the proper sense as well as figuratively, as:

Sobre la mesa, on the table.
Sobre todos los vicios, worse than all vices.
Sobre cien duros, more than a hundred dollars.

When used with the names of places, it likewise denotes *vicinity*, as:

Anochecer sobre Valladolid.

To arrive at nightfall near Valladolid.

El rey D(on) Sancho murió sobre Zamora.

King Sancho died before (*i.e.*, at the siege of) Zamora.

Moreover, it expresses the *subject* of a book, an essay, etc., as:

Un libro sobre la inmortalidad del alma.

A book on the immortality of the soul.

A higher *rate* of something, as:

Sobre el salario, over and above the salary.

A *security* or *warrantship*, as:

Creer sobre palabra, to believe upon (one's) word.

A *repetition* with the accessory idea of *reinforcement*, as:

Escribir carta sobre carta, to write letter after letter.

And finally an *approximate time*, as:

Vino sobre las ocho, he came about 8 o'clock.

N.B.—*Sobre ser caro, es malo*, it is bad besides being dear.

11. *Tras*, behind, after, implies *time* and *space*, as:

Tras los montes, behind the mountains.

Tras el verano viene el otoño.

After (behind) the summer comes the autumn.

2. Improper Prepositions.

These were originally either *adjectives* or *substantives* with *prepositions* or *adverbs*. With the only exception of *bajo* (see 3), they all require *de* after them. They are:

1. *Acerca de*, about, relating to, in reference to, concerning. It is only used in referring either to persons or matters, as:

Le hablé acerca de éso, I spoke to him about it.

¿Qué piensa V. acerca de él?

What do you think about him?

2. *Antes*, before, denotes *time* and *order*, as:

Antes del otoño, before autumn.

Antes del día, before daybreak.

Antes del rey, before the king (*e.g.*, marching before the king).

N.B.—*Antes y con antes*, long before.

3. *Bajo*, under, underneath, below, beneath, as:

Bajo protesto, under protest.

Bajo la rodilla, beneath (under) the knee.

N.B.—*Bajo* may be followed by *de*, as:

Bajo del brazo, under the arm.

4. *Delante de . . .*, before (of *space*), but also *in presence of*, as:

Delante de testigos, before witnesses.

Delante de la puerta, before the door.

Vive delante de la iglesia, he lives opposite the church.

5. *Dentro de . . .*, within, as:

Dentro de las murallas, within the walls.

Dentro de sí mismo, within him- (her-, it-) self.

Dentro de ocho días, within a week (8 days).

6. *Después de*, after, behind, imports *time* and *order*, as:

Después de sus días, after his death.

Uno después del otro, one after another; one behind the other.

7. *Encima de*, on, upon; besides, as:

Encima de la mesa, on (upon) the table.

Encima de la carta, above (upon) the letter.

Le regañan y encima le pegan.

They grumble at him and, besides, they beat him.

8. *Fuera*, outside, without, beside, as:

Fuera de la puerta, outside the door.

Fuera de hora, out of time.

Estar fuera de sí, to be beside oneself.

As observed with reference to *para con* (p. 286), a preposition may be coupled with another preposition in order to modify the original idea. Thus:

De á, each of, as: *Dos barriles de á cien libras*, two casks, each of 100 pounds.

De debajo, from under, as: *De debajo de la mesa*, from under the table.

De entre, from between, as: *De entre las piedras*, from between the stones.

De hacia, from, as: *De hacia los montes*, from the mountains (i.e., in the direction from the m.).

Por entre, between, as: *Por entre la reja*, between the trellis or grating (direction).

Por encima de, over, as: *Por encima de la mesa*, (to pass, to throw, etc.) over the table.

Por detrás de, from behind, as: *Por detrás del árbol*, from behind the tree.

Traducción. 14.

1. We are not speaking about that. Concerning that I know nothing. I will see him about it, he spoke about you. Make the payment as per invoice. There are many reasons besides (*tr. without*) that. He dare not (*no se atreve*) (to) appear before my eyes! Before all things (*todo*) I tell you that you are mistaken. The maniac thrust (*dió*) (with) his (*tr. the*) head against the wall. Quinine is an excellent remedy against fever. He has married the lady against the desire of his family. He knocked his head against the wall. I accompanied him from his house to the bridge. We must suffer from the cradle to the grave. Even among robbers there is still a law. There is a great difference between him and his father. There came between (from) 50 to 60 soldiers. The suburb is situated towards [the] west. Go on (*Adelante*)*; there you will find room enough. Towards 9 o'clock I shall come home. We stayed with your brother till 8 o'clock. *To meet soon again!* (*Hasta luego.*) Even the children laughed at the nonsense (which) he told us. One must always act conformably to (the) circumstances. In consequence of the treaty, the town belongs to the king. According to the law, he deserves a severe punishment. Your father *will be* now above 70 years old (*tendrá*). That is insipid beyond [all] measure (*manera*). Vice exercises a great dominion (*dominio*, m.) on (the) man. Is this a book about hunting or about fishing? The church is built on the top of a hill. Besides their salary, the actors sometimes receive a special payment (*i.e.*, gratification) if they perform (*trabajan*). He lent me 10 dollars on my ring.

2. We sent one messenger after another, but he did not come. At last, about 8 o'clock, he appeared, and besides being late he grumbled. Beyond (*tr. behind*) the mountains there are also people, my dear friend. Why do you not shut the door behind you? I have come even (*tr. still*) before the appointed time. Long before. Three pages walked before the duke. The garrison did not surrender on (*tr. under*) such conditions. The soldier was wounded below the elbow. What shall you do before the trellis? He confirmed the truth before witnesses. Do write to me within a fortnight (*tr. 15 days*)! Within my house I am king. After an absence of seven years, I returned (*fr. volver*) to Vienna. After the Po, the Tiber is the greatest river of Italy. Put the books on the chest of drawers! Do you see that little bird on the

* "*¡Adelante con juicio* (= judgment)!" = "Drive on cautiously!" — words of Ferrer, the governor of Milan, to his coachman during the riot (Manzoni, «I Promessi Sposi»).

roof? God be thanked, now we are out of danger! He tugged the dog from under the bed. The thunderstorm came *from the direction* of (*de hacia*) Valencia. The robber stepped forth from behind a column.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

Y para que nadie se admire de esta diferencia de fuerza, sepan todos que, mucho más inmediato á nosotros, en el año de 1563, en la feria de Medina del Campo solamente, se traficaron y giraron en letras de cambio más de 150,000,000 de escudos. En los años anteriores había sido mayor el tráfico. Las ferias consímiles que entonces se celebraban por todo el reino, eran muchas, y muchos los millones de millones que se comerciaban cada año. Cotéjense con las contrataciones de hoy. Y añádase á esto, para convencimiento general de las cosas, tanto de mar cuanto de tierra, el número increíble que á todos consta de las embarcaciones mercantiles que había en solo el puerto de Pontevedra, reducido hoy á cuatro tristes pescadores; y de los millones de fanegas de pan que se cogían en España, y resulta de las tazmías eclesiásticas. Sueños parecen estas realidades . . . D.s siglos ha que está bajando España, y dos siglos ha que están subiendo sobre nuestras caídas, errores y desaciertos, primero Holanda, luego Inglaterra, y despues Francia. ¿Cómo, pues, no han de haber ascendido ellas á la cumbre de la felicidad, y descendido nosotros al abismo de las desdichas? Á la verdad han sabido aprovecharse bien de las ocasiones que les hemos presentado; y en esto merecen elogio . . .

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué hecho explica esta diferencia de fuerza?
- ¿Había muchas ferias entonces? ¿Por cuanto se comerciaba en ellas?
- ¿Cuál era una de ellas?
- ¿Era notable el puerto de Pontevedra?
- ¿Cuál ha sido la causa de la decadencia de España?
- ¿Qué naciones han subido mientras España ha bajado?

Fourteenth Lesson.

Use of Conjunctions.

Connective Conjunctions.

Y (*and*). In a series, between the two last, in reading out numbers, between tens and units; between two words alike to translate the English **after** or **many and many a** in similar cases:

El padre, la madre y el hijo.

The father, the mother, and the son.

Lunes, miércoles y viernes.

Mondays, Wednesdays, and Saturdays.

1900, *mil novecientos*; 891, *ochocientos noventa y uno.*

Horas y horas, hours after hours.

Libros y libros, many and many a book.

At the beginning of sentences, such as:

¿Está V. contento? — Y mucho.

Are you pleased? — Very much indeed.

¡Y qué frío hace! How cold it is!

N.B.—Hablo de él y no de V., or

Hablo de él, que no de V.

I am speaking of him, and not of you.

Ni (*neither, nor*). It may follow a sentence with **no**, or **y no**, or **ni**, or even stand by itself at the beginning of a sentence, but *cannot be followed by no*. In such sequence of compound negations, **no**, **y no** are used only with verbs, whilst **ni** is used with any part of speech:

No le he visto, ni le veré hoy.

I have not seen him, *nor* shall I see him to-day.

Entró, y no me dijo nada, ni yo tampoco.

He came, and did *not* say anything, *neither* did I.

No tiene ni dinero ni salud.

He has *neither* money nor health.

Ni ayer, ni hoy, *neither* yesterday nor to-day.

Ni él, ni yo, *neither* he nor I.

¿Le ha visto V.? — Ni le veré.

Have you seen him? — No, *neither* will I see him.

Ni ella misma sabe lo que quiere.

Not even she herself knows what she wants.

Ni siquiera me ha hablado.

He did not even speak to me.

N.B.—*Ni* may be immediately followed by the negatives *ninguno, nadie, nada, nunca*, as well as follow them, which *no* may not:

No lo sabe ni nunca lo sabrá.

He neither knows it, nor will he ever know.

Ni él ni nadie, neither he nor anybody.

Nadie, ni él; nobody, not even he.

Disjunctive Conjunctions.

Ó (or). Between the last of two or more disjunctive parts of a sentence or clause; or before each of them, if emphasis, distinction, etc., is required, or verbs are introduced, or distribution is implied:

Vendrá hoy ó mañana.

He will come *either* to-day, *or* to-morrow.

¿Se queda V., ó viene?

Are you coming *or* are you going to stay here?

Ó V., ó él, uno de los dos.

Either you *or* he, one of the two.

Ó no lo sabe, ó no lo quiere decir.

Either he does not know *or* will not say.

To denote approximate number:

Tiene veinte ó veintiún años.

She is twenty *or* twenty one.

Había ocho ó diez personas.

There were eight *or* ten (about eight *or* ten) people there.

In conjunction with *sea*, be:

Sea V., ó (sea) él, it may be *either* you *or* he.

N.B.—*Ó lo has hecho tú, ó él.*

Either you have done it *or* he has.

Ó tú, ó él, lo habéis hecho.

Either you *or* he has done it.

Adversative Conjunctions.

Sino (but). To correct a statement by turning a *negative* sentence into an affirmative one. If a verb is introduced in the latter, *sino que* is employed:

La buena crianza no es obra de la naturaleza, sino el fruto de una buena educación (or *sino que es el...*).
Good behaviour is no work of Nature, but the result of a good education.

No lo dijo él, sino ella, or
No lo dijo él, sino que lo dijo ella.
It was not he, but she that said it.

No lo sabe, sino que lo aparenta.
He does not know, he only pretends.

No sólo habla bien, sino que escribe muy elegantemente.
He does not only speak well, but he also writes very elegantly.

No — *sino* corresponds also to the English *but* or *only*, as:

No viene sino raramente.

He comes but seldom (Ital. *Non viene se non raramente*).

No espero sino que te vayas.
I only wait till you are gone.

As seen by these examples, the *principal sentence* should likewise be negative.

Pero (*but*). To introduce distinction without denying a previous statement, which may be either affirmative or negative. **Pero** may be followed by a negative, and be the first word of a sentence, or even stand by itself, which *sino* may not:

Lo dice, pero no lo cree.

He only says it, he does not believe it.

No sabe mucho, pero habla bien.

He does not know much, but talks well.

Pero ¿por qué?, but why?

N.B.—*Es malo, pero malo*, it is very bad indeed.

Mas (*but*). To denote either *opposition* to what immediately precedes, or a consequence differing from that which one might have expected, as:

Lo dice Tácito, mas no convienen con él los otros historiadores.

Tacitus says so, but the other historians do not agree with him.

Mas no porque las ciencias sean el primero, deben ser el único objeto de vuestro estudio.

But although the sciences be the first object of your study, they must not be the only one.

N.B.—*Pero* and *mas* are much the same thing; the former is more used in the colloquial language, the latter in literary style.

Aunque (*though, although, even, in spite of*) in hypothetical sentences is followed by the Subjunctive, as:

Aunque lo sepa, no lo dirá.

Even if he knows, he will not tell.

No lo haga V. aunque él se lo diga.

Do not do it, even if he asks you.

Also *aun cuando*, even if:

Aun cuando lo sepa, no lo dirá.

No lo haga V. aun cuando él se lo diga.

Cuando (*provided, on condition, if; even, though*), also precedes the Subjunctive in hypothetical sentences, as:

Cuando no lo sepa V., pregúntelo.

If you do not know it, ask.

Cuando venga V., tráigalo.

Bring it when you come.

N.B.—However, in speaking of *positive facts*, the *Indicative*, not the Subjunctive, is used:

Aunque lo sabe, no lo dice.

He knows, but does not tell.

Cuando viene, lo trae.

Whenever he comes, he brings it.

No lo hace aun cuando él se lo dice.

He does not do it, although he tells him to.

Adversative conjunctive phrases are:

<i>Sin embargo,</i>	} nevertheless, notwithstanding.
<i>no obstante,</i>	
<i>con todo,</i>	
<i>no por eso,</i>	
<i>solo que,</i>	} only that.
<i>solo si que,</i>	

Conditional Conjunctions.

Si (*if*). It requires the *Conditional* or the *Imperfect* of the Subjunctive if the condition appears only *possible* or *dubious*, as:

Si estudiaras (estudies), te querría mucho más.

If you would study (learn), I should love you (much) more.

Si esto fuera así, yo lo consentiría.

If it were so, I should consent.

In this case the sentence expressing the condition may be *contracted* into an *infinitive* with *á*, as:

Á ser esto así, yo lo consentiría.

If it were so (it being so), I should consent.

N.B.—*Si* with the Present of the Indicative expresses also condition:

Si viene, que espere, if he comes, tell him to wait.

But if the condition rather than such is something considered as *certain* or *universally known*, the Indicative follows, as:

Si aspiras á ser docto, estudia.

Study, if you wish to be learned.

Si hay malos, hay buenos.

If there are wicked people, there are also good.

N.B.—The following are further uses of *si* with the Indicative:

¿*Si lo sabrá?* I wonder if he knows it.

No me ha dicho si lo sabe ó no.

He has not told me whether he knows it, or not.

No lo dirá si le ahorcan.

He will not tell, even if they hang him for it.

Como, when signifying *if*, *unless*, or *I wonder if*, requires the *Subjunctive*; but meaning *as*, or *in questioning*, the *Indicative*, as:

Como aprendas la lección, la sabrás.

If you learn your lesson, you will know it.

No iré como él no venga.

I will not go, unless he comes.

¿*Como no esté malo?*

I wonder if he is ill?

Como está enfermo, no sale.

As he is ill, he does not go out.

Mientras, with the *Indicative*, expresses **positive facts**; with the *Subjunctive*, **condition**:

Mientras más le dan, más quiere.

The more they give him, the more he wants.

Mientras no me lo pierda V., lléveselo.

I will lend it to you, provided you do not lose it.

Causal and Final Conjunctions.

Porque (*because, as, since*), denotes "the reason why," the cause of something, and is used in statements and answers as a correlative of *¿por qué?*

¿Por qué? — Porque sí.

Why? — Because it is so.

Lo haré porque V. me lo pide.

I will do it, because you ask me.

No fui porque llovía.

I did not go, because it rained.

N.B.—At times it expresses a mere wish:

Daría la vida porque ella me quisiese.

I would give up my life that she would love me.

Para que (*that, in order that, so that*) denotes obtainable end, or purpose, and is generally followed by the Subjunctive:

Se lo digo á V. para que lo sepa.

I tell you, that you may know it.

Tráigalo V., para que le conozcamos.

Bring him, that we may know him.

N.B.—When the reason *why* and the purpose are much the same, either *porque* or *para que* may be used:

Lo hago porque (or para que) no se ofenda.

I do it that he might not be offended.

Pues, puesto que* implies "the reason why" as immediate consequence of something understood; whilst **porque**** expresses the reason why as a cause, as:

*Iré contigo, pues*** lo quieres.*

I shall go with you, since you wish it.

No pude asistir á la función, porque estaba ausente.

I could not go to the performance, because I was away.

Very often *pues* corresponds to the English *well, well now, why, only*, etc., with a question or a command, and fre-

* *Puesto que* meaning *if*, and followed by the Subjunctive, is almost obsolete:

Puesto (supuesto) que te favorezcan, muéstrate agradecido.

If they favour you, show yourself thankful.

** French *puisque* and *parce que*. Ital. *poichè* and *perchè*.

*** If *pues* indicates the reason *subsequently*, it is often rendered by *for*, as:

No puedo creer á V. pues ha mentado.

I cannot believe you, for you have told me a falsehood.

quently it expresses *opposition*, being rendered by *yet*, *nevertheless*, etc. Examples:

• *Pues ¿como he de salir?* well, how shall I get out?
¡Pues dígaselo V.! only tell him so!

Dice que no tiene dinero; pues le he dado hoy 10 duros.
 He says that he has no money, yet I gave him 10 dollars to-day.

Con tal que (on condition, provided) requires the *Subjunctive* mood, as:

Diviértete, con tal que cumplas con tu obligación.
 Enjoy yourself, provided you do your duty.

The conjunctions *ya* (*si ya*), *es que*, *si es que*, and *si* must often be paraphrased in English, as a literal translation would be impossible. Ex.:

¡Ya (or *si*) *lo dije!* did not I say so!

¡Si hablé con ella ayer!

I spoke with her but yesterday!

¡Es que se lo dije esta mañana!

Why, this very morning I told him so!

These sentences are all more or less *exclamative*, and either confirm or contradict what has been said before.

Other conjunctions are *á fin de que*, so that, in order that; *así*, so, thus; *así que*, so that, as soon as; *demás de* (*á más de*), besides; *entre tanto*, meanwhile; *luego, con que, por* (*de*) *consiguiente*, therefore, thus; consequently.

Note.—*Luego*, like the Latin *ergo* and the French *donc*, draws a conclusion from what precedes, as:

Pienso, luego existo, I think, therefore I exist.*

*Con que*** and *por consiguiente* express the same idea, but less positively. In conversation, *con que* seldom introduces a proper logical conclusion, but rather sums up what has been said, etc., before, as:

¡Con que, hasta luego! well, then, I hope to see you soon again! [In French, *sur cela, je vous salue!*]

¡Con que, vendré á las ocho!

Well, so I shall come at eight o'clock!

¿Con que, nos deja V.?

So you are leaving us?

* *Cogito, ergo sum.*

** German *also*.

Subordinate Conjunctions.

To these belong *que*, *that*, and *según* with the signification; *as*, *in conformity*, *agreeable*, etc., *as*:

Dice que no quiere venir conmigo.

He says that he will not come with me.

Habla según lo entiende.

He speaks as he understands it.

Remark.—As in Italian, *que* often immediately follows a past participle, in which case it replaces a compound conjunction, like *luego que*, *después que*, etc., the arrangement of words being inverted. Thus:

Dicha que fué esta palabra.

(Ital.: *Detta che fu questa parola.*)

Scarcely had this word been uttered.

The regular order would be:

Luego que esta palabra fué dicha.

In both sentences, *dicha* is feminine, because it must agree with the following subject in gender and number (see *The Passive Voice*).

Again, “when” and “as,” referring to an adverb or adverbial phrase of *time* immediately preceding, are rendered by *que*. In English, the present participle is frequently introduced, the conjunction being omitted, as:

Un día que estuve en una tertulia.

Once (one day) when I was at a party.

» » » being at a party.

Note.—In such a case the conjunction *cuando* is not admissible. If, however, a sentence containing an *adverbial phrase of time* (as: *At 5 o'clock he entered my room*) is turned into a *principal sentence* having the sense of the adverbial phrase, an *accessory clause* introduced by *when*, *cuando* should be used, not *que*. Thus:

At 5 o'clock, etc. = *it might be five o'clock, when he entered my room.*

Serían las cinco, cuando entró en mi cuarto.

Que often replaces phrases formed with *que*, such as *antes que*, *después que*, in order to avoid repetition, as:

Después que el ejército fué desbaratado y que (for después que) el general hubo entrado en la ciudad . . .

After the army was beaten and (after) the general had entered the town.

Before the *Subjunctive*, too, *que* is frequently omitted, as in English. Ex.:

No quiso (que) le alcanzase.

He did not wish (that) he might overtake him.

This is almost always the case with the verbs *rogar*, and *suplicar*, to beg, request, which are never used with the Infinitive, but with the Subjunctive either with or without *que*—e.g.:

Ruego á V. me diga el motivo de su proceder.

I beg you to tell me the reason of your conduct.

Traducción. 15.*

1. I told you that I was at home Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays. Did you wait for (tr. *esperar*) me, then? A long time, indeed; hour after hour. *How* sorry I am! It was in 1897, and then I had no health nor humour. I was never ambitious, and I never thought of *soliciting* (*en solicitar*) official situations. I want sincerity, and no lies and subterfuges. I have not told him, and I shall not tell him. Neither to-day nor to-morrow. Do you want gold or silver? Silver or gold, as you like. We were about ten or twelve friends. It was not I, it was he, and it did not happen on Thursday, but on Monday. He did not know it, he only pretended. I am your friend, but not your servant. You are my beloved sister, but not my mistress. (The) good taste is not the produce of erudition, but an inborn talent of (the) man. I encounter many difficulties in my studies, but I will not let myself *be* (fr. *dejarse*) discouraged (Infin. *acobardar*) by them. You affirm it, but your master affirms the contrary. Not only is he a good painter, but he is also familiar with literature. Though I saw him, I did not speak to him; and even if he asks me, I will not tell; but he must know, for (tr. *when*) he does not ask, and when they speak about her, he does not say even a word. How can you think that I will already go away (now) if I have come only an hour ago? (*si no hace más que una hora que he llegado*). If you had asked me, I should have answered you directly. If you write to me, I shall also write to you. I shall give him the money, because you find the account in order. I am staying here because you wish it. I could not come yesterday because I was ill. If I am told to do such a thing, I shall at once refuse. I shall lend you the money, provided (on

* As the English and Spanish expressions often greatly differ, it is occasionally preferable, for the convenience of the pupil, to write the English so that a literal translation will be good Spanish.

condition) that you give it me back within a month. I do not know whether he knows it or not. I wonder if someone has told him. He will not say a word, even if they hang him for it (use *si*). The more she has, the more she wants; the more money, the less charity (use *mientras*); and provided you flatter her she is happy. Why did you not come? Because it rained. I would give all I have if he would do it (use *porque*). I tell you that you may know it, for I call myself your friend.

2. I told him, but he does not want to do it. He is very obstinate indeed (use *pero*). Have I not (*tr.* But I have) told you to-day that I shall not go to the play? But I brought you the newspaper yesterday evening. You refuse, so we shall (drop the subject) not speak any longer of the matter. You will not pay me, so I shall send the note to your uncle. Well, you come to dine with us [on] Sunday? So you will not come with us to the promenade? So I shall depend upon it (*cuanto con V.*). I tell you so, that you may know it. I declare (you) that I have not deserved these words. As (it) seems to me, you have not done your task. Relate me the accident as it happened (*sucedió*). The field brings fruit according as it is cultivated (reflect. fr. *cultivar*). As soon as (the) supper was over (*tr.* finished), the gentlemen went away. As soon as I shall have paid (*subj.*) my bills, I shall depart. One morning, when I took my chocolate, someone knocked at the door. It might be nine o'clock, when we heard a great noise in the street. As soon as all was put in order and the room shut, we left the house. We feared (lest) our enemies should *be victorious* (*tr.* conquer).

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

La verdadera y física riqueza de España consiste en la abundancia interior de todo género de frutos nacionales; el oro y la plata americana no es buena, sino se hace servir de instrumento para mejorar esta felicidad natural del país.

El dinero en sí no es más que señal, representación ó ficción de ella. España en general está pobre desde que le vino de Indias más dinero; y no es culpa de las Indias. ¿Pues qué es? Es que yendo á las Américas en busca de esta señal de riqueza, abandonamos más la riqueza física y real, que teníamos dentro de casa. ¿De qué sirve labrar y traer mucho dinero de las Indias, si no le labramos ni traemos para nosotros? Nosotros nos fuimos á buscar tesoros en América, y las naciones cultas se vinieron á sacárnoslo de nuestra casa con la venta de los frutos de su industria. Con-

quistamos á las Indias, es verdad; pero nos hicimos tributarios voluntarios de Inglaterra, Francia, Holanda, Génova, Venecia, Hamburgo, etc. Más tributo pagamos á estas naciones que al Rey. De todas las producciones de España y América no nos queda más que el vano y fastuoso honor de tener las naciones ocupadas en servirnos; quiero decir, en chuparnos la sustancia, y despojarnos del comercio, artes, fábricas, manufacturas é industrias.

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

¿ En qué consiste la verdadera riqueza de España?

¿ Son buenos el oro y la plata americanos?

¿ Qué es el dinero en sí?

¿ Desde cuándo está pobre España?

Explíquese por qué.

Al conquistar las Indias, ¿ qué nos hicimos?

¿ Qué nos queda hoy?

Fifteenth Lesson.

The Object of the Verb.

The Direct Object.

The most striking difference between the Spanish and other languages is exhibited by the *direct object* of the verb, as stated in the First Part (see *The Substantives in connection with the Prepositions*, p. 15). There it was stated that the direct object (accusative), when importing a *person* or *personified thing*, seems to be expressed not by the accusative, but by the *dative case*—*i.e.*, by the preposition *á* preceding the noun. Thus: The mother loves *the daughter*, is not: *La madre ama la hija*, but: *La madre ama á la hija*.

To this general rule are now added the following remarks:

1. Not only names of persons, but also names of *countries* and *towns* without *article*, and *personified* ideas, are connected by *á* with the preceding verb, as:

Amar á la patria, to love one's country.

Los franceses conquistaron á España.

The French conquered Spain.

El almirante atacó y saqueó á Nicotera.

The admiral attacked and plundered N.

Note.—The prepos. *á* may be omitted before proper names, if the *accusative* is taken in a *general* sense. Thus:

Aguardar á un criado, to expect a (certain) footman.

Whereas:

Aguardar un criado.

To expect a footman (any person of that class).

This is also the reason why substantives taken in a *general* sense (the French *sens partitif*) are *not* preceded by *á* in the *accusative*, as:

Busco criados.

I am on the look-out for *servants* (Fr. *Je cherche des domestiques*).

Es preciso que el ejército tenga oficiales inteligentes.

The army must have intelligent officers.

No conozco mujer más arrogante.

I do not know a more arrogant woman.

2. If a verb governs *two* direct objects (*i.e.*, *accusative* cases), of which the second is properly the *predicate* of the first, the *former* is rendered by the *dative* case and *follows* the *latter*, as:

He calls his caprice *character*.

Llama carácter á su capricho.

3. If the *accusative* of the *person*, which according to the general rule ought to be expressed with the *dative* case, is followed by *another* attribute with *á*, the first *á* is omitted, as:

¡Envíe V. el jardinero á la plaza!

Send the gardener to the market!

N.B.—If, however, the personal complement is a *proper* name, and the following attribute denotes a *place*, both take *á*, as:

¡Envíe V. á Carlos á la plaza!

Send Charles to the market!

But if *both* complements denote a *person*, the first *á* is dropped, as:

¿Prefiere V. Cervantes á Calderón?

Do you prefer Cervantes to Calderon?

4. If by the use of *á* a misconception could arise, this preposition is omitted, as:

Mi amigo me recomendó el general.

My friend recommended the general (*accus.*) to me.

(*Me recomendó al general*, would be "recommended me [*acc.*] to the general" [*dat.*].)

5. Again, *á* is suppressed before *numerals* (except *uno*, or others if used with a restrictive meaning), as:

Conocí seis señoras de la reunión.

I knew six ladies of the society.

(But:

Conocí á una señora, etc., I knew a lady . . .

Conocí á seis de las ocho que allí había.

I knew six of the eight ladies that were there.)

6. After the verbs to *name*, to *elect*, to *choose*, etc., the *accusative* without *á* is used. Thus:

España ha producido grandes poetas.

Spain has produced great poets.

*El príncipe nombra los empleados.**

The prince appoints the functionaries.

If, however, the personal object is a *proper name*, the *dative* should be used, as:

España ha producido á Cervantes y á Calderón.

Spain has produced Cervantes and Calderon.

Han nombrado Coronel á . . .

They have appointed so and so to be a Coronel.

7. Occasionally the omission of *á* is required by *euphony*. Thus: *Mira aquel hombre*, look at that man, because *Mira á aquel hombre*, would grate on the ear. The latter also, however, is occasionally found; in, fact in the best writers we meet with numerous exceptions

* If another *personal accusative* follows, as: The prince appointed him *general*, this accusative is, as in English, added *without* the article, or with *por* (after to *recognize*, to *acknowledge*, etc.), or else with *como* (after to *consider*, to *depict*, etc.), as:

El príncipe le nombró capitán.

The prince appointed him captain.

Los soldados le reconocieron por general.

The soldiers recognized (acknowledged) him as their general.

Le considero como bribón.

I consider him as a scoundrel.

If these verbs are *passively* used, the accusative case is turned into a *nominative*, as:

Fué nombrado capitán, he was appointed captain.

to the rules given above on the omission of *á* when the object is a person.

8. With some verbs the signification is altered by the omission or the use of *á*. Thus:

<i>robar alguno,</i>	means: to kidnap somebody;
<i>robar á alguno,</i>	> to rob somebody;
<i>dejar alguno,</i>	> to leave behind (a son, etc.);
<i>dejar á alguno,</i>	> to desert somebody;
<i>pierde sus hijos,</i>	> he loses his sons;
<i>pierde á sus hijos,</i>	> he ruins his sons.

9. In Spanish several verbs always govern the *accusative* case without preposition (except names of persons, which take the accusative with *á*), whilst in English they are introduced by prepositions. In English some of them *may* govern the accusative. They follow in alphabetical order:

<i>Acechar,</i> to lie in wait for ...	<i>mirar,</i> to look at.
<i>cortear,</i> to pay one's court	<i>pedir,</i> to beg (of).
to, to render homage to.	<i>rogar,</i> to beg (of).
<i>escuchar,</i> to listen to.	<i>tratar,</i> to treat with.
<i>encontrar,</i> to meet (with).	<i>violentar,</i> to offer violence to,
<i>extrañar,</i> to wonder at.	and many others.
<i>huir,</i> to flee from.	

As these verbs are all *transitive* in Spanish, they may, of course, also be used *passively*, as:

Fuimos escuchados por el juez.

We were listened to by the judge.

If *another object*, denoting a *person*, is added to these verbs, it is rendered by the *dative* of the pronoun or the substantive, thus:

Me pide un favor, he asks me a favour.

Pide un favor al rey, he asks a favour of the king.

10. As stated in p. 122, 3, verbs are often used *reflectively* in Spanish, in order to modify the original idea. In such a case, the *personal* object takes *á*, whereas the direct object importing a *thing* does not, as:

Tragarse, to devour;

Las fieras se tragan á los hombres, the wild beasts devour the men.

Llevarse, to take away;

Se llevó el dinero, he took away the money.

11. As already stated, if, for the sake of greater emphasis, either the direct or indirect object *precedes* the verb, the corresponding personal pronoun should be added.

¿ mí no me lo puedes decir.

To me you cannot say so (for: *no puedes decírmelo*).

Aquellas siete medallas las hallaré.

I shall find those seven medals.

Traducción. 16.

1. If we love our country, we only do our duty. The Greeks conquered Troy after a siege of ten years. He calls his nonsense jokes, and his impertinence witticisms. I (have) sent the footman to the mill and the (maid-)servant into the garden. I prefer Souvestre to Lamartine, and Dante to Petrarca. He recommended me his servant, but I have not taken him. I have known seven or eight wealthy families in that town. Do you know more talented authors than Dickens and Thackeray? The king appointed the Marquis captain-general of the Island of Cuba. The minister appoints the officers, and the king confirms them. I consider everybody an impostor who does not speak the truth in such a case. Napoleon was elected emperor by the French. Germany has produced great philosophers, and France great generals. The city of Mayence produced Gutenberg, the inventor of the art of printing. Look at that lady; what do you think of her beautiful dress? Napoleon the First left a son, the Duke of Reichstadt. If I must leave my country, I am very unhappy.

2. The robbers have stolen (me) my whole fortune. (The) gipsies have often kidnapped children. We should never flatter the great in order to obtain a favour. Thank your father for his great kindness. I have dissuaded your friend from his project. Obey thy parents, if thou wilt become happy. We have prevented the danger in time. I renounce (to) all my claims to (*tr. at*) the estates of that family. I could not resist his entreaties. Help your neighbour on every occasion. Assist the unhappy man, lest he be lost! It is a great misfortune if a young prince is always flattered by his courtiers. I was helped when it (was not too late) still was time. Happily the danger was avoided! I remind you of your promise. The beggar asked me for alms. Ask the peasant the way! What are you doing here? I *am putting on* my boots (*tr. calzarse*). Why do you not *put on* (*tr. ponerse*) the waistcoat which the tailor (has) brought you yesterday? I *shall* read this letter, though you have forbidden it

to me. You cannot deceive *me* (see 11), my dear friend! I know you better than you know yourself!

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

Ya he dicho (y diré mil veces) que las riquezas americanas solo son útiles haciéndolas servir para florecimiento de las producciones naturales de España. Este uso es el que hasta aquí no hemos hecho, y este uso es el que necesitamos hacer si queremos que vuelva España á su antigua felicidad, esplendor y abundancia. Y véis aquí descubierto aquel misterio oscuro que tiene confusos á muchos hombres muy hábiles, sin acertar á comprender cómo florecieron Holanda, Inglaterra y Francia desde que comenzaron á poseer las Indias, y cómo decayó España desde que tuvo Américas. Estas tres ilustres potencias se valieron de aquellas señales de riqueza para fomentar la riqueza real de sus dominios europeos, y España al contrario, se tiró inconsideradamente á las mismas riquezas representativas, abandonando su labranza, su pastoría, sus artes, sus fábricas, sus manufacturas y sus industrias, que formaban la sustancia real y esencial del Estado: ésta fué la desgracia, y este el efecto, contrario al suceso de nuestros vecinos. Más claro os lo diré. Los Gobiernos holandeses, ingleses y franceses miraron siempre sus patrias como parte principal, y sus Indias como parte accesoría, que debía hacer la felicidad de sus estados hereditarios; nosotros al revés, por falta de buenas medidas, venimos en el efecto á mirar las Américas como parte principal de nuestras riquezas, y descuidando los intereses sólidos de la madre, la hicimos como accesoría de sus hijos. Y lo peor es que por tal camino venimos á infelicitar á nuestra España, sin haber hecho felices á nuestras Américas . . .

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿ Con qué condición son útiles las riquezas americanas ?
- ¿ Hemos hecho ese uso ?
- ¿ Qué descubre esto ?
- ¿ En qué consiste ese misterio ?
- Explíquese por qué florecieron Holanda, Inglaterra y Francia desde que tuvieron las Indias, y por qué decayó España desde que tuvo Américas.
- ¿Cuál fué la conducta de los Gobiernos extranjeros, y cuál la de nuestros Gobiernos ?

Sixteenth Lesson.

Remarks on the Spanish Passive Voice and on some Spanish and English Verbs.

1. As already stated, *to be*, when used as an auxiliary to form the passive voice, is rendered by *ser*, as: *to be* loved, *ser querido*. However, the pupil should always bear in mind that the passive voice is much less used in Spanish than in English, the *reflective verb* being commonly used instead.

N.B.—The Spanish passive voice signifies that an action **has been, or not, completed**; and *therefore is* almost always *used in past tenses, in narrative and statements of what is considered to be (or not to be) an accomplished fact.*

Fué muerto de un tiro, he was killed by a shot.

Ha sido enterrado hoy, he has been buried to-day.

Su memoria será respetada siempre.

His memory *will* always be honoured.

Whenever the above is not the case, the English passive voice is rendered in Spanish either by the active voice (in the 3rd pers. plur.) or by the reflective *se* (with the 3rd p. plur. or sing.) or by *se* with a pronominal indirect object.

Le mataron de un tiro.

Se le ha enterrado hoy.

Su memoria se respetará siempre.

Note how the following English Passive forms are rendered in Spanish:

Spanish spoken here, *se habla español.*

No re-admittances given, *no se dan salidas.*

No admittance, *se prohíbe la entrada.*

Apprentice wanted, *se necesita un aprendiz.*

Carriages lent on hire, *se alquilan carruajes.*

It is said, it is feared, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{se dice, se teme.} \\ \textit{dicen, temen.} \end{array} \right.$

If the action or state expressed by the passive voice is represented as *frequently* repeated and therefore *habitual*, the verb *ir* (to go, like *andare* in Italian) is preferred to *ser*, as:

Este verbo va conjugado así.

This verb is conjugated thus.

Note the following among many idioms:

Ser de buen corazón, to be good-hearted.

Ser de buenas piernas, to be a good walker.

Ser de buen comer, to have generally a good appetite.
Ser de muchos años, to be very old.

2. *To become* (sometimes also "to grow") is rendered:

(a) By *ser*, if the state is represented as a *lasting* one, as:

Es menester estudiar mucho para ser sabio.
 One must study much in order to become learned
 (i.e., if a man is learned, he remains so).

Mi hijo será comerciante.
 My son will become a merchant.

(b) *Ponerse*, if the *transition* from one state to another is to be denoted, as:

Se puso triste, he became sorry.
Se ha puesto pálida, she has become pale.

(c) *Volverse*, if the idea of an *alteration* predominates, as:

Volvióse alegre.
 He became merry (i.e., having before been *sad*).
Se ha vuelto muy insolente.
 He has become very insolent.

(d) *Hacerse, salir*, if the stress is laid on the *development* of the action or state, as:

¿Qué se ha hecho de su amigo de V.?
 What has become of your friend?
Se me hace cada día más desagradable.
 He becomes every day more disagreeable to me.
Se hizo soldado, he became a soldier.

Salió un afamado actor.
 He turned out or became a famous actor.

N.B.—The same idea is expressed by *ser de*, as:

¿Qué fué de él?
 What became of him? (Ital. *Che fu di lui?*)

(e) *Llegar á ser, ponerse, meterse (á), venir á ser*, when implying *intention* or *aim*, or *result*, as:

Quiere meterse soldado, he will become a soldier.
Vino á ser infeliz por el descuido de su hijo.
 He became unhappy by the imprudence of his son.
Llegará á ser el primero de todos.
 He will become (he will be) the first of all.

(f) *Ir á parar, venir á parar, parar en . . . , pasar á ser, pasar de (á), salir*, when importing a *final aim*, as:

¿*En qué trá á parar esta cosa?*

What will in the end become of the matter?

¡*No sé en que parará!*

I really do not know what will become of him!

(g) *Quedar*, if the alteration is represented as merely *accidental* or *involuntary*, as:

Á *esta noticia quedó muy afligido.*

At this news he became very sorry.

Observation.—Besides these verbs, there are some others which convey the notion of *development* or *transition*, but with an *accessory idea*, as: *anochecer*, to grow dusk, *enverdecer*, to become green; *empeorarse*, to grow worse, to deteriorate, to degenerate; *envejecer*, to grow old, etc. With these verbs (in the *gerundio*) *estar* is often used, in order to express an *accessory idea of duration*, as:

El ruido está creciendo.

The noise is growing louder and louder.

(See *The Gerundio.*)

3. *To be able, Can*, etc. See Part II., Less. 17, n.^o 15.

4. *To have* with the *accusative* and *past participle* following, as: I shall *have a coat made*, means *hacer hacer* [in French: *faire faire*], as:

Se hizo hacer un sombrero, he had a hat made.

Sometimes in such a sentence, *to have* is not translated, if the person who *performs* the action is not mentioned, as:

He has his books printed at Madrid.

Imprime sus obras en Madrid (= he prints . . .).

5. *To cause, to order*, is *hacer* and sometimes *mandar*, as:

Haga V. entrar al criado.

Order (tell) the footman to come in.

*Mandó al soldado acompañar al prisionero.**

He ordered the soldier to accompany the prisoner.

* If "to order" or "to cause," etc., is followed by the infinitive of the *passive voice*, as in the sentence: He ordered the soldier *to be shot*, the object should be placed after the infinitive of the *active verb*. Thus: *Mandó fusilar al soldado.*

6. **To let**, when meaning "to permit," "to allow," is commonly *dejar*, as:

No me deajo engañar (lit. I do not let me cheat).
I do not let myself be cheated.*

No deja cerrar la puerta.

He does not allow the door to be shut.

Dar likewise occurs in this signification, as:

Déme V. esta carta á escribir, let me write this letter.

Note.—"Let me know" = send me word, is rendered by *hacer saber*, as:

Hágame V. saber si puede venir.

Send me word if you can come.

To be let (= hired) is *alquilar*, as:

This house is to be let, *esta casa está para alquilar.*

7. **To get** is also frequently rendered by *hacer*. Yet this verb has so many other significations in Spanish, that its meaning must be gathered from each peculiar instance—*i.e.*:

¿*Ha recibido V. su dinero?*

Have you got your money (*i.e.*, have you received your money)?

He alcanzado, or *logrado la colocación, ya tengo la colocación.*

I have got (*i.e.*, obtained) the situation.

Ha engordado, se ha puesto (vuelto) gordo.

He has got (*i.e.*, become) fat.

No puedo vencer esta dificultad, etc.

I cannot get over this difficulty = I cannot overcome or conquer this difficulty.

8. **To be obliged, to be compelled, I must**, likewise present some difficulties.

(a) If the *subject* of the sentence is expressed by *one, people*, etc., *es menester, es preciso, es necesario, hay que, conviene*, are used with the *infinitive* and *without* a nominative case; thus:

Es menester (necesario, preciso) trabajar para ganar la vida.

One must work in order to gain one's livelihood.

(*Lit.* It is necessary to work, etc.)

No hay que decirselo, one (you) must not tell him so, etc.

** In Spanish the passive voice cannot be used after the

(b) If, on the contrary, the subject is distinctly expressed, an accessory sentence is introduced by *que*, as:

Es preciso (necesario etc.) que V. trabaje para ganarse la vida.

You must work in order to gain your subsistence.

*Es preciso que las mujeres trabajen para**

Women must work in order

(c) Instead of *es menester*, etc., *deber (de)* or *haber de* may likewise be used, it being immaterial whether a moral necessity or a compulsion by some material force be meant; though in this latter case, *tener que* may be used.

He de estar en mi cuarto, I must stay in my room.

Debe de hacer frío, it must be cold.

Tengo que escribir muchas cartas.

I have many letters to write.

Su hermano de V. ha de estar enfermo.

Your brother must be ill.

Observations.—1. A construction not rarely met with, is the *dative* of the personal pronoun with *es preciso*, followed by the *infinitive*, as:

Me fué preciso hacer eso.

I was obliged to do so. (French: *il me fallut faire celà.*)

2. The English "ought" is likewise rendered by *es menester*, etc., or by *deber*, etc. If this verb is followed by the *Compound infinitive* (as: you ought to have given), it is translated by the *imperfect Indic.* or by the *conditional* of the *Subj.*:

Debía (or debiera) habérmelo dicho.

He ought to have told me so.

Traducción. 17.

1. He was run over by a carriage. He was taken to the hospital. He has been buried to-day. His death will be greatly (*muy*) felt. Listen to me: "English spoken here." "Carriages lent on hire," "apprentice wanted," "it is said," etc., are always rendered (*se traducen*) by *se*. Yes, I understand,

verbs "to permit," "to allow." *Dejar* should always be followed by the *infinitive* of the *active* verb:

Dejó matar (or que matasen) á aquel hombre.

He allowed that man to be killed.

* In French: *Il faut travailler*, and: *Il faut que les femmes travaillent.*

but let us go out this interval. But we cannot. Why? Because "no re-admittances are given." Though he is a very old man, he is a good walker (use *ser de*). Have you (*generally*) a good appetite? What has become of your friend? In order to become clever, it is necessary to have intercourse with clever people. The boy said: "I will become an officer." My sister was (*tr.* became) very glad when she heard this news. At first he was sad (*afligido*), and afterwards he became merry, without any reason. Not every acorn becomes an oak-tree, and not every soldier a general. This man became richer every year. Who will be (become) the first of the class? If you want to become (a) merchant, you must first of all learn order and diligence. You will turn out a spend-thrift if you (go on like that) continue in the same way. Jacob Lafitte was (became) at last a great banker. Tell me, what has become of the servant (whom) you had last year? When we heard this, we were (became) much surprised. (The) spring is coming; the trees are getting green. Do you know that your father is growing rather (*muy*) old? Do not be deceived (*tr.* Do not let yourself deceive) by (the) appearances. Why do you not let the dog come in? Tell the footman to come in. The emperor ordered the culprit to be put into prison.

2. Where do you (*Por quién... see 4*) have your linen washed (*i.e.*, who washes y. l.)? I shall send him word that I am (*estoy*) engaged. It is to be hoped (*tr.* it lets itself hope) that we shall have fine weather. That is easy to assert (*lit.*: it is easy to assert that), but difficult to prove. It is not said (*lit.*: it cannot be said) that you are not right, but yet I do not believe it. Where have you had this coat made? My neighbour will have his house freshly painted. One must always speak the truth. You need* only command (*mandar*), and *it will be done* (*tr.* *hacerse*) directly. The children must go to bed at eight o'clock and get up at six. I must stay at home to-day, for I have yet to do my task. Our friends must be abroad, for their house is shut up. You ought to have waited for me, for you knew for certain (*tr.* certainly) that I should come. You ought not to have done so (it) if you did not wish deeply to afflict your poor father.

* "To need" and "to want" are often rendered as shown by the following examples:

Necesitamos dinero, we want some money.

No hay más que hablar, one only needs to speak.

"Ought" is sometimes translated by *necesitar*, as:

V. hubiera necesitado descansar.

You ought to have reposed.

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

La codicia inconsiderada del oro y plata americana empobreció la riqueza natural de España: oro y plata la despoblaron: oro y plata la convirtieron de industriosa en ociosa: oro y plata destruyeron su labranza, crianza, fábricas, artes é industrias: oro y plata trasmutaron en esterilidad su abundancia, y en carestía la baratura de sus víveres: oro y plata, extraídos del reino, la hicieron pobre. De la pobreza de los particulares resultó la indigencia universal y las necesidades del Erario: de ésta, la ruína de los vasallos y sus pueblos: de sus atrasos, el general de la monarquía; de éste, el de los miembros. Una á otra se dió la mano. Crecieron los gastos, el lujo y las obligaciones de la corona, cuando eran menores los medios de asistirle, fomentarla y auxiliarla. De esta misma indigencia se derivó el aumento de tributos, impuestos y arbitrios, que fué redoblar y remachar el mal. Una carga superior á las fuerzas concluyó en desmayo, abandono y holgazanería. Y de estos antecedentes resultó (y necesitó resultar por consecuencia necesaria) toda la actual que padecemos en todas líneas. En una palabra, nosotros bajamos por aquel principio mismo que hizo subir á los demás, y todo ha provenido de una conducta contraria á la naturaleza del bien; de sistemas, digo, opuestos á la conveniencia del Estado.

(To be continued.)

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué empobreció la riqueza natural de España?
- ¿Qué hicieron el oro y la plata?
- ¿Qué resultó de todo esto?
- ¿Por qué se aumentaron los tributos?
- ¿Y de estos antecedentes que resultó?
- ¿Por qué bajamos?

Seventeenth Lesson.

Peculiarities of some Spanish Verbs.

With some verbs *idioms* are formed which in English must commonly be periphrased with adverbs, etc. Those most in use are:

1. *Acabar*, to finish, to terminate, is commonly rendered by *just*, *just now*, also by *to have done*, as:

Acaban de llegar, they have just arrived.

Acabo de leer, I have done reading.

Sometimes *acabar* corresponds to the English *finally*, *at last*, and *fully*, as:

Acabar de resolverse, to resolve finally, at last.

Acabar de entender, to understand fully, entirely.

Acabar de conocer, to know at last.

No acabar may be rendered in different ways, as:

No acababa de maravillarse.*

Lit.: He could not leave off wondering = he was quite amazed, etc.

Acabar con uno, to kill a person.

2. *Acertar*, to gain, to carry one's point, answers to the English "to be able," as:

No acertó á resolver qué hacer.

He could not determine what to do.

Sometimes it expresses a casualty or contingency and is an equivalent for *to happen*, as:

Acerté á pasar, I happened to pass.

Acertar con alguno cosa means: to guess.

3. *Alcanzar*, to reach, to overtake, has very nearly the same meaning as *acertar*; thus:

No alcancé á persuadirle.

I was not able to (I could not) persuade him.

No alcanzo como pueda ser eso.

I cannot understand how that could be.

4. *Cansarse*, to get tired, when *negatively* employed, implies (like *no acabar*) that an action is *going on*, as:

No se cansaba de hablar.

Literally: He did not grow tired of speaking = He went on or kept speaking.

5. *Dar*, to give, like *echar* (see this verb, 7), expresses the sudden and instantaneous beginning of an action or a state, as:

El niño dió á reir, the child began (suddenly) to laugh.

(Besides, *dar* forms a good many idioms, for which the pupil is referred to the dictionary):

Dar las gracias, to thank.

Dar los buenos días, to wish (one) good morning.

* In French: *Il ne finissait pas de s'émerveiller*.

Dar la enhorabuena, to congratulate.

Dar el pésame, to condole with.

(*Ir á dar un paseo*, to go for a walk.

Dar las doce, to be striking 12.

Dar que decir, to cause people to talk.

Dar de bofetadas.

To give a sound smacking on the face.

Se ha dado á la bebida (*á las diversiones*).

He has taken to drink (to amusements).

6. *Dejar*, to let, joined to the participle, chiefly in commercial style, is equivalent to an auxiliary verb, as:

Dejé acreditado en cuenta, I have credited the account.

(On *dejar*, to let, see the preceding Lesson.)

Dejar dicho, to leave word, to have already stated.

Dejar de hacer una cosa.

To leave off doing something (*i.e.*, not to do it).

No dejar de hacer una cosa.

To go on doing a thing (*i.e.*, to do it).

7. *Echar*, to throw, is often synonymous with *dar* (see 5), as:

Echar á correr, to start running.

Se echó á llorar, he began (all at once) to cry.

Echar de ver means "to behold, to get a sight of"; *echarla de escritor*, to pose as a writer (*Echar*, too, forms a great many idioms).

8. *Estar para*, followed by the *infinitive*, corresponds to the English "to be about," "to be upon the point of," "to be going to," as:

Estaba para decirle.

I was going (I was about) to tell him (see p. 286, n.^o 5).

Note the following, among many idioms:

Estar de cumpleaños, to be one's birthday.

Estar de luto, to be in mourning.

Estar de paseo, to be out for a walk.

Estar en candelero, to be a high wig.

9. *Gustar*, to please, to relish, when *negatively* employed, means "to dislike," as:

No me gusta ese hombre, I dislike that man.

10. *Haber de* (see the preceding Lesson) is sometimes an equivalent for the English "ought," as:

V. *había de saberlo*, you ought to know it.

But: *Ha de saber V. (has de saber)*, know, then!

V. ha de saber que estoy aquí.

Know, then, that I am here.

When used impersonally (*hay — que*), it should be rendered as in the following sentence:

Hay mucho que desear, there is much to be wished for.

Note.—*Haber*, though commonly an auxiliary, is sometimes a principal verb, especially in poetry, as:

Héroes hubieron Inglaterra y Francia.

England and France had their heroes.

Los hijos que de Isabel hubo el rey D. Fernando.

The children that King Ferdinand had from Isabella.

Conviene que se haya como hombre que no sabe ni oye
(Granada).

He must behave like a man who does neither know nor hear.

Also in the expressions *he aquí*, here is, there is, *haber* is an independent verb: *he aquí á nuestro héroe*, here is our hero.

Besides, *haber* is used absolutely in certain *exclamative* expressions, as:

¡Bien haya! happy he who . . .

¡Mal haya! woe to him who . . .

¡Que Dios haya! God give him eternal repose!

11. *Ir á*, like the English "to be going to," denotes impending futurity, as:

Voy á decirle, I am going to tell him.

Vamos á ver, let us see!

Idioms are:

Ir de luto, to be (dressed) in mourning.

Ir de paseo, to go for a walk.

Ir de reunión, to go to a party.

12. *Llegar*, to arrive, like *acabar*, frequently answers to the English "at last," "finally," "in fine," etc., as:

Ha llegado á comprender, at last he understands.

Llegar á oír, *á entender* means: to hear for the first time; *llegar á saber* is "to come to know," "to be informed," "to learn," "to hear," etc.

13. *Llevar*, to bring, to carry, to wear, joined to the *participle*, expresses, like *dejar* (see p. 319, n.^o 6), *past*

time in general, as: *llevar sabido*, to have known; *llevar estudiado*, to have studied, learned; *llevar hecho*, to have done. The pupil must bear in mind that if the past time is expressed by *dejar*, *llevar*, *tener* (see 17) or *traer* (to bring), the past participle should agree in gender and number with the substantive to which it refers:

Le llevo escritas ya cuatro cartas.

I have already written four letters to him.

Lleva mandados tres recados.

He has sent three messages.

14. *Ponerse á, meterse á* correspond to the English "to begin" (French: *se mettre á*), as:

Se puso á escribir, á hablar, á comer.

He began to write, to speak, to eat.

Poner forms a great many idioms:

Poner en duda, to doubt.

Poner en claro, to ascertain.

Poner en limpio, to make a fine copy.

Ponerse (el sol), to set (the sun).

Ponerse colorado (or *encarnado*), to blush.

Poner por escrito, to put down in writing.

Poner miedo, to frighten.

Ponerse en la razón, to be reasonable.

15. *Saber*, to know, to be able, denotes an *acquired* ability, as:

¿Sabe V. hablar castellano?

Can you speak Spanish (i.e., have you learnt it)?

Saber de alguno, to hear from anyone.

Poder, on the contrary, expresses an *innate* faculty, as:

No puede hablar, porque es mudo.

He cannot speak because he is dumb.

16. *Tardar*, is to (tarry) be a long time in . . . , to defer, to delay, as:

Tarda mucho en responder.

He is a long time in answering.

No tardar is commonly rendered by *soon*, as:

No tardará en responder, he will soon answer.*

Note: ¡Cuánto tarda el tren! how late the train is!

¿Cuánto se tarda de aquí allá?

How long does it take from here to there?

* In French: *Il ne tardera pas à répondre.*

17. *Tener*, to have, to hold, as already stated (Part I., p. 10), is commonly used instead of the auxiliary "to have." The difference between *tener* and *haber* has been explained. *Tener* implies the lasting effect of an action, as: *te he dicho*, I told you; but: *te tengo dicho*, I told you once for all. Thus: *he escrito la carta*, I have written the letter, simply denotes the past tense, whereas: *tengo escrita la carta* lays a particular stress on the word *written*. — *Me ha ofendido* is: he has offended me, but *me tiene ofendido*, means: he has offended me, and I still resent the offence. — *La casa que ha comprado*, the house he (has) bought; *la casa que tiene comprada*, the house he has bought and still possesses. — The pupil will notice that the participle used with *tener* agrees in *gender* and *number* with the word to which it refers. — Without an *accusative* following, *tener* seldom occurs with the past participle, as:

Tengo acabado, I have done (see **Participles**).

Tener que . . ., to be obliged, has been mentioned before.

Tener likewise forms a great many idioms:

Tener miedo, to be afraid.

Tener frío (calor), to be cold (warm).

(No) *tener razón*, (not) to be right.

Tener en poco (en mucho), to value (not to value).

Tener que hacer, to have something to do.

18. *Tratar*, to treat, to deal, to purpose, to set about, if emphatically denoting a *design* or *purpose*, is followed by *de*, as:

Los conjurados trataban de asesinar al rey.

The conspirators purposed killing the king.

19. *Venir de . . .* like *acabar*, intimates that an action has just been performed, or that a condition began or ceased *immediately before*; thus:

Viene de verla (or: *acaba de verla*), he has just seen her.

However, *venir de* cannot be used, unless the idea of "to be coming from" is implied.

Venir á ser (or: *llegar á ser*), simply means "to be," "to become."

20. *Volver á . . .*, is an equivalent for *again* or *once more*, as:

Vuelvo á decir á su hermano de V. . . .

I once more (again) tell your brother . . .

Volver without the *infinitive* following is "to return," "to come back," as:

Volveré á las once, I shall be back at 11 o'clock.

N.B.—The *repetition* of an action is often expressed by the prefix *re*—, as:

Animar, to animate; *reanimar*, to reanimate.

Observation.—The cases where *duration*, etc., of an action or a state is expressed by the verbs *andar*, *estar*, *ir*, and *venir* with the *gerundio*, are explained in Lesson 23, "The *Gerund.*"

Traducción. 18.

1. We had just entered the house when we heard her crying. We could not wonder *enough* at his impudence. He will kill (use *finish*) her. I was not able to dissuade him from his project. You have *hit* (guessed) it, my friend! He has taken to drink; he has taken to amusements (see 3. *dar*). I congratulate you. I thank you very much. It is striking one. That will cause people to talk. He left word that you should do it (use *dejar*). When he poses as a writer, I always begin to laugh. It is her birthday, but she does not keep it (*lo celebra*) because she is in mourning. I was on the point of writing to you when I got your letter. I did not wish to speak to him any longer, for he bored me dreadfully. I cannot go out to-day, I must stay at (tr. *guardar*, to watch) the shop. You must send me the book (still) to-day. There is (a good deal more) still much *to be* (tr. *dejarse*) said about your behaviour, but I have no mind to scold any longer.

2. What are you about (to do) there, Charles? I want to open the window, for it is very warm in the room. Have you at last understood that I cannot comply with your request? I have already asked him three times (use *llevar*). He just began to work when his friend came into the room. I doubt it (use *poner*). You are not right; I value your opinion very much (use *tener*). Can you dance? No, I cannot dance, but I can fence and ride. You cannot ride to-day; the horse is ill. You can never get your task done (tr. You always tarry to finish your task). Never mind! I shall soon come back. As I have bought the article, I shall not send it back again. We tell you again that you are wrong in acting thus. Mr. Gayoso has sold the house which he bought two years ago. I would get rid of this disagreeable occupation, but my master told me that he could not *get on* without me. Do not trouble me. You see that I have no time to talk to you. He has insulted me, and I shall never

forgive him again for this insult. I shall not sell the garden again which I bought. I have already dressed myself this morning, and now I must (*es menester*) dress myself once more. I never saw my poor brother again!

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

El carácter de la nación en general no es holgazán; si fuese este su genio y su temperamento, ¿cómo había de haber sido la más industriosa hasta el reinado de Felipe III? Aquel mal es adquirido. Hoy mismo no me señalarán en toda la Europa cinco naciones que amen el trabajo tanto como los Catalanes, Gallegos Vizcaínos, Guipuzcoanos y Montañeses: improbas son sus fatigas . . . Puertas abiertas y puertas cerradas, digo que han sido las dos fuentes de todas nuestras desgracias. Abriéronse las que debieron cerrarse y cerráronse las que debían abrirse. Veis aquí ya el trastorno de toda España. Ésta en realidad, ha sido, es y será, siempre que no se remedie, la surgente de los males políticos que han arruinado al Estado. Carcoma silenciosa, que insensiblemente ha ido royéndole hasta el corazón. Todas nuestras decadencias son hijas de esta lima sorda.

Para restituir la monarquía á su antiguo y debido esplendor, es preciso mudar de estilo. Volver el cuadro al revés: abrir, digo, lo cerrado, y cerrar lo abierto. Véis aquí ya los dos polos de la felicidad pública. Este es el sistema necesario; ni el bien tiene más entrada, ni los males otra cura. Y nada es más conforme al derecho natural que distribuirse y consumirse los productos dentro de la nación misma que los contribuye. Por aquí ha de comenzar sus operaciones el héroe que se propusiere el plan de remediarla. No hay que equivocarse: todo lo demás será pérdida de tiempo, y acaso complemento de la destrucción. Crecerá el mal cada día: bajarán las rentas reales: se empeñará el Real Erario: irán los pueblos á menos, y á más la dificultad. ¡Ojalá sea yo mal profeta!

(To be continued.)

[M. E. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Cómo se prueba que el carácter general de la nación no es holgazán?
- ¿Quiénes pueden señalarse entre los más trabajadores de Europa?
- ¿Cuáles han sido las dos fuentes de todas nuestras desgracias?

- ¿ Por qué?
 ¿ Qué es preciso para restituir la monarquía á su antiguo esplendor?
 ¿ Hay otro sistema?
 ¿ Por qué no lo hay?
 ¿ Todo lo demás que será?

Eighteenth Lesson.

The Moods.

1. The Indicative Mood.

This mood represents an action as *positive* and *beyond all doubt*. In this regard the English and Spanish language offer no remarkable difference. In accessory clauses, no less than in the principal sentence, the Indicative Mood is employed, as:

El criado dice que ya está pronto.

The footman says that he is ready.

Mi amigo me escribió que ya había visto á su primo.

My friend wrote me that he had already seen his cousin.

2. The Subjunctive Mood.

Any action or state that does not appear to be quite *certain*, but is represented as *possible* or *doubtful*, as well as *consequences* resulting, not from any *fact*, but from mere *thought* or *feeling*, should be expressed by the Subjunctive Mood. In Spanish this mood — commonly neglected by the English — is strictly observed and is one of the greatest beauties of the language, as it modifies the expression far more than is possible with the English Subjunctive. For this reason the English verbs *could*, *would*, *should*, *may*, *might*, *must*, etc., are usually not translated, but rendered by the Spanish Subjunctive. The student who is acquainted with the French and Italian languages will find a great analogy between these languages and the Spanish, and will be seldom mistaken in using the Spanish Subjunctive (except the *future* and *conditional*) where he would employ the Subjunctive in French or Italian.

We may distinguish between:

- (1) The *dependent* Subjunctive.
- (2) The *absolute* Subjunctive.

The *dependent* Subjunctive is used:

1. After the conjunctions *antes que*, before, ere; *aunque*, although, though; *cuando*, when; *con tal que*, on condition that; *dado que*, *caso que*, *puesto que*, provided that; *para que*, in order to, so that; *por más que*, however; *si*, if; *como si*, as if; *sin que*, without . . .; and after the exclamation *¡Ojalá!*, God grant it, and a few others. Examples:

Vendré aunque llueva, I shall come, though it may rain.

Haré mi deber, sin que V. me lo recuerde.

I shall do my duty without your reminding* me of it.

Por más que hagas, no te perdonaré.

Whatever you may do, I shall not pardon you.

Note.—If, however, a *fact* admitting of no doubt is stated, the Indicative mood is required even after these conjunctions, as:

He venido aunque llueve, I have come, though it rains.

2. After verbs importing *order*, *fear*, and *apprehension*, *permission*, *desire*, *doubt*, etc., as:

Temo que mi tío no venga.

I am afraid my uncle will not come.

El maestro quiso que yo diese mi libro á mi hermano.

The master wanted me to (= wished that I should) give my book to my brother.

Dudo que cumpla con su palabra.

I doubt if he will keep his word.

N.B.—But after *dudar (de) si . . .* to doubt, the *Indicative* should be used, as:

Dudo (de) si está á su palabra.

I doubt whether he will keep his word.

3. *Decir*, when meaning "to order," "to ask," and *esperar*, when meaning "to hope," govern the Subjunctive mood; when meaning, respectively, "to relate" (to

* We need not add that the English *present participle*, when used, as in the above sentence, instead of *accessory* clauses, should always be rendered by the respective person and tense of the verb with the corresponding conjunction. Thus: without your *reminding* me = without *that* you *remind* me.

tell, speak), or "to wait" ("to expect"), they govern the Indicative, as:

Me dice que venga, he tells (orders) me to come.

Espero que venga V., I hope (that) you will come.

Whereas:

Me dijo que mi tío vendría.

He told me that my uncle would come.

Espero que V. vendrá, I expect that you will come.

4. The Subjunctive is also used in relative sentences if the action, expressed in them, is not meant to imply something as *definite*, but as negative, unknown, doubtful, intended in the future—*e.g.*:

Diga lo que quiera, no le creeré.

He may say what he likes, I shall not believe him.

No encontrarás quien te perdone semejante injuria.

Thou wilt find no one to pardon thee such an insult.

Donde quiera que fueres, haz lo que vieres (Trueba).

Wherever thou mayest be, do what thou seest done.

5. In compound interrogatory sentences meant to be open questions:

¿Hay aquí alguien que lo sepa?

Is there here anyone who knows it?

¿He dicho yo que no tenga razón él?

Did I ever say that he was wrong?

6. After *sin que*:

Lo hizo sin que le viesen.

He did it without anybody seeing him.

Se lo han dado sin que lo pidiera.

They have given it to him without his asking for it.

7. In sentences such as:

Sea el que sea, whoever it may be.

Dijéralo quien lo dijera.

No matter who might have said it.

Que viniese que no viniese, whether he came or not.

Si lo dice, que lo diga, if he says it, let him say.

Si viniese, que venga, if he comes, let him come.

The *absolute* Subjunctive is used:

1. In *exclamations* with *que—viz.*:

¡Que me haya este favor!

If he only would do me this favour!

Note.—*Que* is dropped in such expressions as:

¡*Quiera Dios!* God grant it!

¡*Quiera el cielo!* Please heaven!

2. In requests, exhortations, and commands assuming a negative form, as:

¡*No digas que estoy aquí!*

Do (thou) not say that I am here!

¡*No vengas acá!* do not come here!

¡*No me niegues tu favor!*

Do not deny me your (thy) favour!

Observation.—In sentences of this kind, as well as in those introduced by *que*, a verb importing a wish or desire is understood, so that the construction is properly *elliptical*. The whole phrase would run:

¡(*Quiero*) *Que me haga este favor!*

I wish that he would do me this favour!

¡(*Exijo que*) *No hagas ruido!*

Do (thou) not make a noise! (*i.e.*, I wish that thou do not make a noise!)

3. The Imperative Mood.

It is used:

1. In requests, exhortations, and commands, unless assuming a negative form:

Hacedlo, do it.

No lo hagáis, do not do it.

Díselo, tell him.

No se lo digas, do not tell him.

2. In ironical expressions to show the consequences of an action:

Hazlo, y te pego (lit.: do it, and I will beat you).

If you do it, I will beat you.

Dígalo V., y no le creerán (lit.: say it, and they will not believe you).

Do not say it, because they will not believe you.

Idiomatical Imperative by means of the Infinitive:

¡*A comer*, come to dine; eat!

¡*A vestirte!* get dressed!

Traducción. 19.

1. I (am at) work now, that I may have finished (*haber acabado*) at 6 o'clock. These people looked at me, as if I were a criminal. Before (*i.e.*, sooner than) doing (*tr.* I do) that, I had rather (*tr.* I will) die. I shall come at all events,

even if I have no news from you. I lend you the money on condition that you give it me back soon. In case (that) Mr. Barrera should depart to-day, let me know (tr. *avisar*) by telegraph. I entered the saloon without the others noticing (tr. *notar*) it. God grant that I find my family in good health! I was afraid (that) your mother would not find us at home. I wish you a happy journey (transl. *that you have*). I doubt (very) much that he will come (still) to-day. I (have no doubt, but) do not doubt that every one of your words is the strictest truth. Tell the footman to come (*i.e.*, *that he comes*) directly. I tell you that I have not received your letter. I hope (that) you will send me good news again. I still expect (you to keep) that you will keep the promise which you have made me. Is there anyone here who has seen it? He did it without anybody seeing him. No matter who may say it, it is not true.

2. Do it. Do not do it. Tell him. Do not tell him. Do it, and do not tell him. Get dressed, and come to dine. (*Idiom. Imperat.*) Do come, my dear friend, it is much too cold in this room! Never mind (*tr.* that may not give you trouble), I shall put all to rights! Tell him that I am ready! I am looking for the book in order to give it to you. I seek a footman that may serve me well. God grant (that) it were true! Let him speak out (*tr.* speak) *if* he wishes us to do him the favour. Do not tell your brother that we are here. Do not come here! There is no room for you! Do not tell him the whole truth, that he may not be too much upset. Do speak to me with (*en*) confidence! I shall do all that is in my power! Be patient! I told the servant to tell the physician to come directly! Fear (thou) my wrath! Do (thou) not fear anything! I shall assist you! *Let us take* (*Vamos á dar*) a walk!

Reading Exercise.

Grandeza y decadencia de España. (Continuación.)

Ciérrense, pues, en España las puertas abiertas; ábranse las cerradas: pónganse diques á los ríos de oro y plata que desaguan fuera del reino: piénsese, búsquese, y tómesese por primera diligencia un temperamento equitativo que sirva de equivalente, y aún de grande aumento al Real Erario: rómpanse las cadenas que embarazan los progresos: repruébense los estorbos: quítense á la Nación los grillos que se han fabricado de los yerros de dos siglos: derribense las murallas que quedan señaladas: mírese la libertad del comercio como único fundamento de la felicidad pública: fórmese y dese sistema fijo á todas las partes y ramos de la monarquía, que

vive, ó mejor diré, muere sin él. Un sistema, digo, sabio, prudente, justo y equitativo: un sistema libertador: un sistema combinatorio, que abrace desde el interés y parte más alta del Estado hasta el ramo y partecilla más mínima de la monarquía: un sistema auxiliador, reformador: en una palabra, un sistema sencillo y perfecto, obra ilustre de un rey grande, que sujete á un centro de unión todas las ideas del Gobierno; que reduzca á su punto de vista todos los intereses de la autoridad real, del pueblo y del Erario; que enlace íntimamente la gloria de la majestad con la abundancia y felicidad pública, de tal modo que, unidos estrechamente estos dos objetos (que siempre deben caminar á paso igual), se haga imposible la ventaja del uno sin la mejora del otro, el adelantamiento de éste sin el florecimiento de aquél: y en fin, un sistema dichoso y perpetuo que lleve á la inmortalidad el glorioso nombre del Rey, restablezca la opulencia en España, y haga respetable el crédito de la nación.

[M. A. Gándara.—«*Apuntes sobre el bien y el mal de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿ Qué hay que hacer ?
- ¿ Qué sistema ha de ser ese ?
- ¿ De qué modo se ha de enlazar la gloria de la majestad real con la felicidad pública ?
- ¿ Pueden caminar separados esos dos objetos ?
- ¿Cuál será el resultado de tal sistema ?

Nineteenth Lesson.

The Use of the Tenses. Sequence of Tenses.

Use of the Tenses of the Indicative.

§ 1. Present.

(a) In narratives, instead of the *Definite*; as:

Esta mañana iba yo por la calle, cuando un amigo se me acerca y me dice (se me acerco y me dijo):

This morning I was going along the street, when a friend approached me, and said to me . . .

(b) Likewise in colloquial language to replace the *Future*, as:

Voy (instead of *iré*) *á misa mañana.*

I shall hear mass to-morrow.

Dentro de quince días me vuelvo á Inglaterra.

Within a fortnight I shall return to England.

§ 2. Imperfect.

(a) In descriptions of characters, opinions, states, manners and customs, representing a past action as often repeated, or customary, or progressive, as:

Tenia en su casa un ama que pasaba de los cuarenta, y una sobrina que no llegaba á los veinte, y un mozo de campo que así ensillaba el rocín como tomaba la podadera. (Cervantes: «Don Quijote.»)

He had in his house a housekeeper that was more than forty years old, a niece who had not yet reached her twentieth year, and a farm-hand who used to saddle the nag, as well as to handle the pruner.

Cuando yo era pequeño era muy travieso.

When I was small, I used to be very mischievous.

¿Qué hacía V.? — *Estaba leyendo.*

What were you doing? — I was reading.

(b) When two actions are represented as being performed at, or as lasting, the same time, as:

Mientras yo escribía, mi amigo fumaba.

Whilst I was writing, my friend was smoking.

Él hablaba, pero no le entendían.

He was speaking, but they did not understand him.

N.B.—If one action is interrupted by another, the Imperfect denotes the action that was going on when the other took place; the latter requiring the *Definite*. Ex.:

Mientras yo escribía, él entró en mi cuarto.

Whilst I was writing, he entered my room.

(c) To render the Imperfect auxiliaries *could*, *should*, and *ought*, etc., as:

Debía (or *debiera*) *habérmelo dicho.*

He should have told me so (= He ought to have told me so. See page 315, Observ. 2).

§ 3. Definite.

(a) To represent a past action as occurred on one occasion and entirely elapsed; hence in historical narration. Ex.:

Falleció Napoleon el 5 de mayo de 1821.

Napoleon died the 5th of May 1821.

En la mañana del 8 renovaron el asalto.

On the morning of the 8th they renewed the assault.

Me lo dijeron ayer, they told me yesterday.

Cervantes murió pobre, Cervantes died in poverty.

Colón descubrió la América en 1492.

Columbus discovered America en 1492.

N.B.—The *Definite* may mark duration, but without any reference to another action or state, as:

Napoleon fué un gran general.

Napoleon was a great general.

Pasé mi niñez en Inglaterra.

I passed my childhood in England.

(*b*) Instead of the *Compound perfect* whenever the speaker considers less the action or the state itself than the *final result*, as:

¿Cuándo ha visto V. á mi madre?

When have you seen (did you see) my mother?

La ví esta mañana, I saw her this morning.

Me dió orden de esperarle á él.

He gave me orders to wait for him.

N.B.—For euphony Spaniards very often replace the *Pluperfect* or *2nd Pluperfect* by the *Definite*, if one of these tenses immediately precedes. Thus:

Había admirado las tablas que mi tío compró (for *había* or *hubo comprado*).

I had admired the pictures which my uncle *had* bought.

§ 4. Compound Perfect.

To represent an action perfected some time ago, but whose consequences extend to the present time.* Thus:

(*a*) In referring to a past still present in its results:

Su padre le ha desheredado.

His father has disinherited him.

Yo he viajado mucho.

I have travelled a great deal.

Lope de Vega ha escrito más de 1800 comedias.

Lope de Vega has written more than 1.800 plays.

(*b*) To represent past actions which have occurred within a period of time which we consider as not elapsed:

* It never has the meaning of the English *Perfect* in the sentence: *Mr. Scrooge has been dead these seven years* (Dickens).

Hoy por la mañana ha hecho frío.

This morning it was cold.

Esta semana casi no he salido de casa.

I scarcely have been out of doors this week.

§ 5. Future.

(a) As in English, with the force of an Imperative, as:

¿No callarás? will you not be silent = Be silent!

Darás al momento el dinero á tu tia.

You will at once give the money to your aunt! = Give the money to your aunt at once!

(b) Again, to express a *desire* to do something, as:

¡Con que, tú serás militar!

Well, so you want to be a soldier!

(c) To express *doubt*, *probability*, or strong conviction by means of an indirect question which does not admit of a negation, as:

¿Qué tendrá, que no viene?

I wonder what is the matter with him, that he does not come?

Estará enfermo, probably he may be ill.

¿Habrá amigo mejor que él?

Can there be a better friend than he?

Observation.—After *dicese*, it is said, they say, etc., where in English the *Infinitive mood* follows, preceded by *to*, the *Future* should be used in Spanish, as:

The general is said (expected) to come to-day.

Dicese que el general llegará hoy.

§ 6. Conditional.

This mood presents some difficulties to the foreigner. In Part I., on the *Auxiliaries*, the most important observations may be found. As we shall yet have to speak of the Conditional mood when treating of the *Sequence of tenses* (Lesson 20), we need only add that the *absolute* Conditional of the *Indicative* is often used, in order to express an *approximate* time or number, as well as any *uncertain* assertion whatever, as:

Serían las 5, cuando él llegó.

It was about 5 o'clock when he arrived.

Tendría en aquel tiempo veinticinco años.

She might then have been 25.

¿*No se equivocaría V.?*

But might you not be mistaken?

Also in expressing any *humble request*, question, or wish; and in exclamations to express strong wish:

¿*Tendría V. la amabilidad de . . .?*

Will (or would) you kindly . . .?

¿*Querría V. dar un paseito?*

Would you not come for a short walk?

¿*No tomaría V. un bizcochito?*

Will (or would) you not take a biscuit?

¡*Lo mataría!* I would kill him!

N.B.—With *querer*, in expressing wishes (not requests) the Conditional of the Subjunctive (*-ra*) is preferred:

Quisiera decirle á V. dos palabras.

I wish to speak a few words to you.

The Imperfect, the Definite, and the Compound Perfect compared.

The *Imperfect* refers to continuous or customary actions as viewed from the past, as:

Cuando tenía dinero, tenía muchos amigos.

When I had money, I used to have many friends (**then**).

The *Perfect* to complete actions as not connected with the Present, as:

Perdí el dinero, I lost the money (not now).

The *Compound Perfect* to past actions as still present in their consequence, as:

Solo me ha quedado un amigo.

I have only one friend left (**still**).

Or, compared in a clause:

Cuando tenía dinero, tenía muchos amigos; perdí el dinero, y solo me ha quedado uno.

Traducción. 20.

1. Yesterday I was coming home when a friend of mine stopped me and said (to me): "To-morrow I am going to Paris". (Use the *Present*.) Do you go to the theatre to-night? No, I go to the concert; I went to the theatre last night. Oh, yes, I met you when you were going. Did you come out late? We came out very late. How is it that the perform-

ance ended so late? Because the theatres in Spain begin late, and the intervals are very long. Is it a long time since you bought this house? No, I *bought* it last autumn. This summer I bought a garden; but as it did not please me, I *sold* it. *May* I offer (*fut.*) you a glass of wine? No, thank you, I have (had some) already drunk *some*. Tell your brother that he must pay me. The Lord's Commandment says: "Thou shalt not kill!" When we were in the country, we used to take a walk every day; after breakfast we read or played, and after dinner we took a nap. Napoleon was born in the island of Corsica. The Greeks besieged the city of Troy, and finally took it by assault. I wonder if he is ill. (Use the *Future*.) Go and give him this letter. (Use the *Future*.) Can there be a better man than he?

2. Schiller and Goethe have been the greatest poets of Germany. Did you pay a visit to Mr. Lorenzo Sepúlveda last week? Yes, I was there, but I could not speak to him. Whilst the young gentlemen and ladies danced, the papas and mammas played at cards or looked at the amusements of the young folk. Italy had her greatest poets in the 13th and 15th centuries. For three years I received no news of my brother. The ball lasted till 6 o'clock in the morning. Was the count last year in Italy or in France? How much have you paid for this coat? I do not recollect whether I paid 24 or 26 dollars. When I got your letter, I had already posted the one I sent you. When he had related him all (which) his father had told us, he *grew* (*tr. quedar*) very sad. After I had done the task which the master had (set) given me, I went down into the garden.

3. Do your duty, come what may. If it please God, I shall go to Seville next month. I should give you your money if you had done your duty. If you were less discontented, you would not always be complaining. I should very much like to learn something new. If we do our duty, no one can blame us. I have ordered (*tr. that* you go not out) you not to go out to-day; why have you not obeyed me? He has advised (*tr. that* I may not write) me not to write in the twilight, because my eyes are too weak. I should have asked you to do me this service if I had not known that you were absent. Do you doubt (*de*) that (*que*) I am an honourable man? No, but I doubt that you are able to do what you have promised me. I expect you to tell me the truth. I am waiting for my brother to come, in order to speak to him about (*de*) your proposal. He has told me he cannot do what you wish. I tell you to be quiet (*silent*). Do not speak to your friend about what I have been telling you. Do not stay here. Do not interrupt me

if I speak. Do not trust him with your secrets, he is a prattler. Let us go, that we may be in time (*Ulegar á*).

Reading Exercise.

La Farsa de Ávila.

Incorporados los de la liga con el arzobispo de Toledo en Ávila, determinaron desposeer al rey de una manera tan solemne como audaz y afrentosa. En un llano inmediato á la ciudad hicieron levantar un estrado tan alto que pudiera verse á larga distancia. En él colocaron un trono, sobre el cual sentaron una efigie ó estatua de don Enrique con todas las insignias reales, aunque en traje de luto. Hecho esto, leyeron un manifiesto en que se hacían graves acusaciones contra el rey, por las cuales merecía ser depuesto del trono y perder el título y la dignidad real. En su consecuencia procedieron á despojarle de todas las insignias y atributos de la magestad. El arzobispo de Toledo fué el primero que le quitó la corona de la cabeza; el conde de Plasencia le arrebató el estoque; el de Benavente le despojó del cetro, y don Diego Lopez de Zúñiga derribó al suelo la estatua. Seguidamente alzaron en brazos al jóven príncipe don Alfonso, y le sentaron en el trono vacante, proclamando á grandes voces: «¡Castilla por el rey don Alfonso!» Los gritos de la multitud se confundieron con el ruido de los tambores y trompetas, y los grandes y prelados, y despues el pueblo, pasaron con gran ceremonia á besar la mano al nuevo monarca.

[Lafuente.—«*Historia de España.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué hicieron los de la liga, y cuando lo determinaron?
- ¿Dónde levantaron el estrado? ¿Cómo era? ¿Qué pusieron en él?
- ¿Qué leyeron? ¿Qué contenía el manifiesto?
- ¿Qué hicieron después, y que parte tomó cada uno?
- ¿Qué hicieron con el Príncipe?
- ¿Cómo terminó el acto?

Twentieth Lesson.

The use of the Tenses. Sequence of Tenses.

(Conclusion.)

The Tenses of the Indicative.

Of the tenses of the Indicative mood we have still to consider the *Pluperfect*, the *2nd Pluperfect*, the *Compound Future*, and the *Compound Conditional*.

The *Pluperfect* and the *2nd Pluperfect*, being compounds of the *Imperfect* and the *Definite*, are distinguished in a similar way.

Thus the *2nd Pluperfect* refers to a past action as occurred *immediately* before another already completed or past and with which it is more or less connected. So it must be used in compound sentences, after adverbs and conjunctions denoting *time*, as: *cuando*, *luego que*, *así que*, *apenas* (scarcely) or *apenas . . . (cuando)*, *no bien . . . (cuando)*. Ex.:

Cuando hubo amanecido salí.

When it had grown light, I went out.

Luego que lo hubo dicho se arrepintió.

Así que lo hubo dicho se arrepintió.

Apenas lo hubo dicho (cuando) se arrepintió.

No bien lo hubo dicho (cuando) se arrepintió.

Are all rendered by:

No sooner he said it, he repented.

If, on the contrary, the actions do not appear so closely following on another, and on the other hand are not considered as being connected, the *Pluperfect* should be used. Ex.:

Los israelitas desobedecieron al Señor que los había sacado de la tierra de Egipto.

The Israelites were disobedient to the Lord, who had led them out of the land of Egypt.

Ya lo había dicho cuando se arrepintió.

When he repented, he had already said it (i.e., he repented, but he had already said it).

In these sentences there is no *immediate connection* between the two actions (*desobedecieron* and *había sacado*, and *había dicho* and *arrepintió*).

The *Compound Future* denotes a future action or state, as previous to *another future* action, as:

Véame V. pasados algunos días, quizá le habré procurado una colocación.

Call on me in a few days; perhaps I shall have found you a situation.

Cuando yo llegue, ya se habrá ido (previous future).
He will be gone by the time I get there.

N.B.—No se habrá ido cuando yo llegue (previous future).

He will not be gone, by the time I get there.

For the *Compound Conditional* see **The Conditional** (page 341).

The Tenses of the Subjunctive.

The **Present** of the *Subjunctive* is used:

(a) *Negatively*—*i.e.*, in prohibitions, also in requests, exhortations, and commands made in a negative form, as:

No lo haga V., se lo prohíbo.

Do not do it, I forbid you.

No se vaya V., si es temprano.

Do not go, it is so early.

No se acerquen V.V. al perro, que muerde.

Do not come too near the dog, it bites.

Nunca preste V. libros, porque no se devuelven.

Never lend your books, because books are never returned.

(b) With *que*, in elliptical sentences depending on verbs of command and wish:

¡Que entre! let him come in!

¡Que os divirtáis mucho! enjoy yourselves!

¡Que tengas feliz viaje! happy journey to you!

(c) In exclamations:

¡Sea V. muy bien venido! welcome!

¡Ojalá venga pronto! oh, that he may come soon!

¡Bendito seas! God bless thee!

Sequence of Tenses.

The *Subjunctive* being a **depending Mood**, the theory of the use of its tenses at once comprises the most important rules concerning the *sequence* of tenses—*i.e.*:

1. The *Present* of the *Subjunctive*, preceded by *que*, is used in *subordinate* clauses depending on a *Present, Future, or Imperative* of verbs of *wish, command, fear, and sorrow*, in the *principal sentence* [the same rule as in French], as:

Deseo que lo consiga V., I hope you will succeed.
Desearé que V. se alivie, I hope you will get better.
Teme que no le comprendan.
 He is afraid lest they do not understand him.
Le mando á V. que lo haga, I command you to do it.
Le he dicho que me escriba.
 I told (asked) him to write to me.
¡Cuanto siento que V. se moleste!
 How sorry I am to trouble you!
Sentiré que se ofenda.
 I should be sorry if he feels hurt.

N.B.—If the subject of the two sentences is the same, the *Infinitive, without que*, is used:

Deseo conseguirlo, I wish to succeed.
Temo no comprender I am afraid of not understanding.

2. The *Imperfect* of the *Subj.* (or the *Conditional* in *-ra*), preceded by *que* must be used in *subordinate* clauses depending on a *past tense* in the *principal sentence* [the same rule as in French], as:

Deseaba (deseé, he deseado), que V. lo consiguiese
 (or *consiguiera*).
Temía (temió, había temido) que no le comprendiesen
 (*comprendieran*).
Le mandaba (mandé, he mandado) á V. que lo hiciese
 (*hiciera*).
¡Cuánto sentía (sentí, he sentido) que V. se molestase
 (*molestara*)! (See 1. *N.B.*)

Likewise depending on the *Conditional* of the *Indicative*,

(a) with *que* in the above sentences:

Desearía que consiguiera (consiguiese) V.

(b) with *si* in conditional sentences:

Conseguiría el empleo si tuviese (tuviera) amigos, or
si tuviese (tuviera) amigos, conseguiría el empleo.

He would obtain the situation if he had friends.

3. The *Future* of the *Subj.* in a *subordinate* clause refers to a *Future, Present* of the *Subj.*, or *Im-*

perative in the principal sentence. In English this tense is wanting, being commonly rendered by the Present Subjunctive. Ex.:

Si el cielo diere fuerzas, cantaré aquí el dulce canto.
(Valbuena.)

If Heaven grant me strength, I shall sing here the sweet song

En lo que tocara á defender mi persona, no tendré mucha cuenta con esas leyes.

Concerning the defence of my person, I shall not care much for these laws.

Házlo si pudieres.

Do it, if you can (= if you *will* be able to . . .).

N.B.—Very often the *Future of the Subj.* may be replaced by the *Present of the same Mood*, without any essential alteration of the meaning. Thus we may as well say (in the second of the above sentences): *en lo que toque á . . .*. Only if, as in the first sentence, the *future of the Subj.* is introduced by *si*, this change is not admissible. The student should be careful not to mistake conditional clauses like these for those which admit of the *conditional*. To be quite certain, he need but try whether they may be rendered by the *present* or not. Thus the sentence:

Si ella fuere de tanta hermosura, de buena gana confesaremos la verdad.
(Cervantes.)

If she be so beautiful, we shall willingly confess the truth — might quite as well be expressed:

Si ella es de tanta hermosura

With the *conditional*, however (if she *were* or *would* be, etc.), the sense would be quite different.

With the *Compound Future of the Subjunctive*, which occurs very rarely, the same rules are to be observed as with the simple future in *-re*, of course taking into consideration the correlativeness of the tenses:

Si ella hubiere sido de tanta hermosura, de buena gana confesaríamos (or hubiéramos confesado) la verdad.

4. The *Compound Perfect of the Subj.* is used in a subordinate clause*, if a *Present* or *Future* precedes in the principal sentence [the same rule as in French], as:

* We need not observe that these compound tenses may

Espero que el correo haya llegado para fines de la semana.

I hope the post will have arrived by the end of the week.

5. The *Pluperfect*, as far as this tense is not concerned with the *conditional* (see this), is used in a subordinate clause, if the verb of the principal sentence stands in one of the *past* tenses, [the same rule as in French], as:

Deseaba que lo hubiese (or hubiera) V. conseguido.
I wished you might have succeeded.

Conditional.

In Part I. (on the "Auxiliaries") we gave some general rules as to the uses of the Conditional. We now add further rules, at the same time stating that everything said there concerning the simple tenses must also be understood of the compound forms.

1. Of the Indicative:

(a) *Simple Conditional.* Preceded by *que* follows *any* Past tense (either simple or compound) of the Indicative of verbs of "believing," "saying," "knowing," or "affirming":

Creía que me escribiría V.
I thought you would write.

Dijo V. que lo haría, you said you would do it.

Había escrito que vendrían.
They had written that they would come.

Ya sabía yo que no lo haría.
I knew he would not do it.

Ha prometido que lo mandaría.
He has promised that he would send it.

quite as well be used *absolutely* as the simple tenses (see on the *Subjunctive*), as:

Mañana, haya venido ó no el socorro, ha de capitular la plaza.

To-morrow, though relief may have come or not, the place must surrender.

Or: *El gobernador de la plaza era de opinión que, vintiese ó no el socorro, era necesario rendirse.*

The governor of the place was of opinion that he must surrender, though relief may have come, or not.

It is also used in comparisons, preceded by *como*, and with the verb repeated:

Le hablo á V. como hablaría á un amigo.

I speak to you, as I would speak to a friend.

(b) **Compound Conditional.** It is used in Conditional sentences, the condition either preceding or following — in the Past tenses of the Subjunctive — and being opened by *si*, *aunque*:

Si lo hubiera visto, se lo habría preguntado.

If I had seen him, I should have asked him.

Lo habría dicho, si lo supiese.

He would have told, had he known it.

Aunque lo supiera, no lo habría dicho (or *hubiera dicho*).

Even if he had known it, he would not have told.

Likewise, *aunque lo supiera, no lo diría.*

It may, like the simple Conditional, express either *doubt*, *probability*, or *inclination*, or *intense wish*:

Tal vez no habrían llegado.

Perhaps they had not yet arrived.

Le habría comido á besos al niño.

I could have devoured the child with kisses.

N.B.—The conjunction *si* cannot precede any of the two Conditionals of the Indicative in Conditional sentences, though in other sentences, it may, as:

¡Si lo contaría! I wonder if he has told!

¡Si habría venido, mientras yo salí!

I wonder if he might have come while I went out!

But: *Si hubiera venido, lo hubiera sabido.*

I should have known if he had come.

2. Of the Subjunctive:

(a) The **Conditional** may be used in *all cases* instead of the *Imperfect* of the *Subjunctive*, as:

Deseé que lo consiguiera (or *consiguiese*) *usted.*

I wished that you might succeed.

N.B.—The form in *-ra* (not in *-se*) is used in certain special cases, instead of the Conditional of the Indicative, especially with *deber*, *poder*, *querer*, and *ser*:

Jurara yo que lo sabe, I would swear that he knows it.

Debiera decirlo él, no V.

He should have said it, not you.

¡Quisiera ser rico! I wish I were rich!

Eso fuera fácil de hacer.

That would be an easy thing to do.

(b) Very often the simple *Conditional* replaces the compound, as:

Esta noticia me desazonó tanto como si estuviera (for *hubiera estado*) *enamorado de veras.* (Isla.)

This news exasperated me as much as if I had been indeed in love.

N.B.—Instead of the *Compound Conditional* of the *Indicative*, the *Simple* is sometimes used, chiefly with ancient writers, as:

Pasarían (for *habrían pasado*) *ya tres semanas desde nuestra llegada.*

Three weeks might have elapsed since our arrival.

Further Remarks on the Sequence of Tenses.

1. In a series of sentences depending on a principal verb on any past tense, or on the *Conditional* of the *Indicative*, either the forms in *-ra* and *-se* are found together, or either of them repeated:

Me suplicó que le viera á V. (viese á V.) y se lo dijese (dijera).

He asked me to see you and tell you.

Desearía que viniese V. (viniere V.) para que pasásemos (pasáramos) unos días juntos.

I wish you would come, that we might spend a few days together.

2. The *Conditional* (or the *Imperfect*) of the *Subjunctive*, as well as the *Compound Perfect*, the *Pluperfect*, and the *Compound Conditional* of the same *Mood*, preceded by *como si*, may follow any tense of the *Indicative*—*i.e.*:

Habla como si tuviese razón.

He speaks as if he were right.

Parecía como si le hubiera pasado algo.

He looked as if something had happened to him.

Traducción. 21.

1. I did not yet know that the letter had arrived. The news (which) we had received set us at rest as to (*tr.* on) the fate of the fugitive. Scarcely had I entered the drawing-

room, when he took my arm and began to talk to me. As soon as the bear *had been seen* (tr. *dejarse ver*) in the forest, they resolved to give him a general chase. As soon as we had heard (*sabido*) that your cousin had arrived, we went to pay him a visit. The general reconquered (tr. *recuperar*) all the fortresses of the country which the enemy had taken. When you have done your duty, you may quietly await what then will happen. The judge wants the witness to speak the truth. Ask him to pay (tr. ask that he pay) you your money. He will be here by the time the letter arrives, do not write to him. Oh, that he may come soon!

2. The judge wanted the witness to speak the truth. I have not said that you had written to me; it was my footman who told your father so. The colonel permitted the soldiers to give a ball at the barracks. You would work more easily if you studied more carefully. You *may do* (subj. pr.) what you please, I shall not obey you. You will tell me all (which) he will impart to you. Whatever it may be, I do not believe that he has told a falsehood. Cost what it may, I shall revenge myself. I hoped you would call on us more frequently (*más á menudo*). He did not know that we waited for him, otherwise he would have come. My uncle wished (tr. that) his son should at once set out for Paris.

3. I want to do it, and I told my friend to recommend you, because I wish you to succeed. I should be sorry to trouble you. I was afraid of not getting it. I thought you would recommend me to him, because he said you would do it. I knew he would not do it, though he told you that he was speaking to you as a friend. Had I known it, I should not have relied upon him. I wish you would not believe everything they tell you. But he spoke as though he spoke sincerely.

Reading Exercise.

Á Don Pedro Fernandez de Castro, Conde de Lemos.

Aquellas coplas antiguas que fueron en su tiempo tan celebradas, que comienzan: *Puesto ya el pié en el estribo*, quisiera yo no vinieran tan á pelo en esta mi epístola, porque casi con las mismas palabras la puedo comenzar diciendo:

Puesto ya el pié en el estribo,
Con las ansias de la muerte,
Gran Señor, esta te escribo.

Ayer me dieron la Extrema-unción, y hoy escribo ésta: el tiempo es breve, las ansias crecen, las esperanzas menguan, y con todo esto llevo la vida sobre el deseo que tengo de vivir; y quisiera yo ponerle coto, hasta besar los piés á V. E., que podría ser fuese tanto el contento de ver á V. E. bueno

en España, que me volviese á dar la vida. Pero si está decretado que la haya de perder, cúmplase la voluntad de los Cielos, y por lo menos sepa V. E. este mi deseo, y sepa que tuvo en mí un tan aficionado criado de servirle que quiso pasar aún más allá de la muerte, mostrando su intención. Con todo esto, como en profecía, me alegro de la llegada de V. E.: regocijome de verle señalar con el dedo, y realégrome de que salieron verdaderas mis esperanzas, dilatadas en la fama de las bondades de V. E. Todavía me quedan en el alma ciertas reliquias y asomos de la *Semana del jardín*, y del *famoso Bernardo*. Sí á dicha, por buena ventura mía, que ya no sería ventura sino milagro, me diese el Cielo vida, las verá, y con ellas el fin de la Galatea, de quien sé está aficionado V. E.; y con estas obras continuado mi deseo. Guarde Dios á V. E. como puede. De Madrid á 19 de Abril de 1616 años.

Criado de vuestra Excelencia

Miguel de Cervantes.

Twenty-first Lesson.

The Infinitive Mood.

I. The Absolute Infinitive.

The Infinitive, when called absolute, is used as a *substantive*, and appears *with* or *without* the article. Though considered a noun, this mood does not lose its verbal character, and may therefore govern a grammatical object as such a verb. In English the absolute Infinitive is rendered either by the Infinitive mood or, more frequently, by the *present participle*. The absolute Infinitive appears:

1. As a *substantive* with the article, as:

El escribir, writing; *el hablar*, speaking.

2. Likewise as a substantive, but *without* the article, and as a *predicate*, as:

El reino de Dios no es comer ni beber, mas paz y justicia. (Granada.)

The kingdom of God is neither eating nor drinking, but peace and justice.

3. With *adjectives* and *adverbs*, as:

El hablar bien, to speak well.

El vivir mto, my life (*lit.* living).

El levantarse temprano, to rise early, rising early.

4. With a grammatical object like the personal forms of the verb. These objects may be either *direct* or otherwise (*i.e.*, English). Ex.:

El comer manjares exquisitos, to eat choice food.

El murmurar las fuentes, the babbling of the springs.

With an *adverbial object*, as:

El escribir con atención, to write with attention.

Observations.—1. It is a peculiarity of the Spanish language that the Infinitive very rarely governs the *genitive case*, as the present participle (“the babbling”) does in English in the above example (“the babbling of the springs”), where the genitive has properly the value of a *nominative* (*who* babbles? the *springs*, *nom.*). Whenever in English such a genitive occurs with the present participle, it must be placed *after* the *infinitive* as a *nominative*, as: At the entering (entrance) of the foreigner (*who* enters? — *the* foreigner, *nom.*) *al entrar el extranjero*. The eclipse (darkening) of the sun (*who* darkens? — *the* sun, *nom.*), *el eclipsarse el sol*.

Whenever in Spanish the Infinitive governs the *genitive case*, this is to be considered as an irregularity which must not be imitated, as:

El murmurar de las fuentes.

Al alborear del 3 de julio.

2. Though infinitives have no plural, however, the infinitive appears with the plural termination when it has entirely lost its *verbal* character and become a *real substantive*. Such are:

Los placeres, the pleasures; *los dares y tomares*, things given and taken; *los Cantares*, Solomon’s Song, etc.

Note.—The infinitive *with the article* preceded by the preposition *á* imports *simultaneousness*, whereas the infinitive with *á* *without* the article expresses a *condition*, as:

Al ceñirle la espada, whilst girding on his sword.

But: *Á saber yo*.

If I knew, or: If I had known.

Á oírle, if one hears him.

Á no ser que esté dotado de . . .

If he is not endowed with . . .

(Trueba.)

II. The Dependent Infinitive.

The Infinitive when depending on another word is used either *with* or *without* a preposition.

1. *Without* a preposition after those verbs which take their object likewise without a preposition. Such are: *alegrarse*, *gustar*, to be glad; *deber*, to be obliged, must; *dejar*, to let; *desear*, to desire, to wish; *dignarse*, to deign; *figurarse*, to imagine; *esperar*, to hope, to expect; *hacer*, to make, to cause to be done; *llamarse*, to be called; *oir*, to hear; *mandar*, to order; *parecer*, to seem; *pensar*, to think; *poder*, to be able; *proponer*, to propose; *procurar*, to endeavour; *querer*, to be willing; *saber*, to know; *sentir*, to feel, to resent; *ser*, to be; *servirse*, to have the kindness, to please; *soler*, to use; *temer*, to fear; *ver*, to see, etc. Ex.:

Le veo salir, I see him go out.

Penso salir, I have a mind to go out.

¡Déjame dormir! let me sleep!

Quiero imitar al pueblo en el vestido,

En las costumbres sólo á los mejores.

(Rioja.)

In (my) dress I'll imitate the people,

In manners (I shall imitate) only the best.

N.B.—Frequently the infinitive with *que* is used *elliptically*, *nada* or *algo* being understood, as:

Déme V. que comer (= *algo que comer*).

Give me something to eat.

Aquí no hay que ver (= *nada que ver*).

Here is nothing to be seen.

2. The Infinitive with *de* is used after those verbs, adjectives, etc., which take likewise this preposition, as:

Luego que fueron capaces de amar.

As soon as they were able to love.

No dejaba el príncipe de lograr alguna ocasión.

The prince did not omit (forget) to avail himself of any opportunity.

Es tiempo de irse, it is time to be gone.

Remark.—(a) The locutions with *acabar* and *venir de*, mentioned Less. 17, Part II., fall under the same rule, but it must be born in mind that *venir de* cannot be used unless motion is implied. Ex.:

Vengo de hacerlo.

I have done it just now (I am coming from doing it).

Acaban de dar las 8, it has just struck 8 o'clock.

(b) *De* is also used after *deber*, *haber*, and *ser*, with the signification "must," "ought," "to be obliged," etc. Ex.:

Debe de estar enfermo, he must be ill.

Es de presumir, it is to be presumed.

He de verle, I must (shall) see him.*

(After *deber*, however, *de* may also be omitted without altering much the signification, i.e., *debe estar enfermo*.)

(c) If *después* (after) precedes an infinitive, it should be followed by *de*, as:

Después de haber escrito la carta.

After having written the letter.

3. The Infinitive with *á* is used (besides the cases mentioned when speaking of this preposition, see Lesson 11, Part II.), after such verbs as to *teach* or to *learn*, to *begin*** , to set oneself, as:

Aprende á escribir, he learns writing.

Comienza á nevar, it begins to snow.

Se puso á reir, he began laughing.

Echaram á correr, they started running.

Este ministro se dedicó á dar á E. una enseñanza. (Isla.)

This minister tried to give E. an education.

Remark.—As before mentioned, the Infinitive with *á* is used after *ir*, in order to express a *future, close at hand*, as:

Voy á oír misa, I shall go to (hear) mass.

The Infinitive with *á* is used after words implying *exclusion*, like *solo*, *último*, *primero*, etc. Ex.:

Fuí el solo á hablar.

I was the only one to speak.

* *Haber de . . .* followed by an Infinitive very often expresses *futurity*. In all Romance languages this tense is nothing else but the *Infinitive* coupled with the Latin verb *habere*, to have, and contracted with it into one word. Thus:

Spanish:	<i>amaré</i> = <i>amar-he</i> ,	literally: I have to love =	I shall love.
Italian:	<i>sentiro</i> = <i>sentir-ho</i> ,	» I have to feel =	I shall feel.
French:	<i>parlerai</i> = <i>parler-ai</i> ,	» I have to speak =	I shall speak.
Portuguese:	<i>partirei</i> = <i>partir-het</i> ,	» I have to divide =	I shall divide.

** If, on the contrary, the *starting point* of an action or its *final point* is indicated (the latter with *acabar*), the prepos. *por* should be used, as:

Comenzó por decirme, he began by telling me (= *first* he told me).

Acabó por decirme, he finished by telling me.

4. The Infinitive with *por* is often used instead of an *accessory* sentence beginning with *porque*, because, as, etc. Ex.:

Por ser pobre esta muchacha.

As the girl is poor (in lieu of *porque esta muchacha es* etc.).

N.B.—1. For *por* with *dejar*, *estar*, and *quedar*, as well as *para* after *estar*, see Lesson 12, Part II.

2. It sometimes occurs that a whole accessory sentence is inserted *between* the *infinitive* and its *preposition*, as:

Tenia una tropa de caballeria de respeto para, en caso que perdiese la jornada, poderse salvar. (Herrera.)

He held a troop of cavalry in reserve, that he might save himself in case he should lose the battle.

Traducción. 22.

1. Writing and drawing are useful accomplishments. Too much sleeping is quite as injurious as too much eating or drinking. Rising early is very good for the health. We heard the babbling of the rivulets and the singing of the birds in the wood. Reading bad books is a very bad thing (*tr.* very prejudicial) for young people. On the entrance (*infin.*) of the (*nom.*) monarch, the whole assembly rose. At daybreak (to break, *rayar*), the enemy began to bombard the fortress. The sowing of the grain takes place in (the) autumn, after the harvest. You must not tell your brother that I (have been) was here to-day. I wish to speak to your uncle; is he at home? Let me eat in peace! When I shall have had my dinner (*tr.* after having eaten), I shall tell you everything you want to know. Please (*tr. servirse*) walk in, sir! Why do you not let (go) out the dog?

2. I saw the footman entering (in) the house, but I do not know whether he is still there. Come, children, it is time to go to bed! The intention to do one's duty is not sufficient, for we do not judge the intention (*infin. querer*), but the action (*tr. the doing*). What o'clock is it? It has just struck 9 o'clock. The king had just arrived when the cannonade began. A priest must be adorned with all (the) virtues. I have nothing to do. Do give me something to do! I had still to write three letters when the servant told me that the post had already gone. After having read the novel, I forgot to send it to my sister. After having shut the door, he forgot to take the key out. Does the child begin to speak? Who teaches him singing? When he began to sing, they started laughing. He began by calling the footman a thief,

and finished by giving him a box on the ear. As he is an impostor, he will be punished. He has been punished for having been an impostor.

Reading Exercise.

Lope Félix de Vega Carpio.

Hijo de una familia de conocida nobleza, nació en Madrid en 1562. Anunciáronse ya en su más tierna infancia sus agigantadas disposiciones. Poeta desde la cuna, con una facilidad extraordinaria componía versos, cuando aquellos á quienes la naturaleza trató menos pródigamente, empiezan á articular palabras. Á los doce años había estudiado las Humanidades. Habiendo perdido á sus padres en tan tierna edad, se habrían acaso malogrado los talentos de este *mónstruo de la naturaleza*, como le llama Cervantes, si en su orfandad no hubiera encontrado un apoyo en D. Gerónimo Manrique, obispo de Ávila, que le recibió en clase de familiar suyo. Estudió la filosofía en Alcalá, vino después á Madrid y sirvió de Secretario al Duque de Alba. Casóse con D^a. Isabel de Urbina, y por un lance de honor en que hirió gravemente á su adversario, tuvo que andar por algunos años desterrado. A su regreso perdió á su esposa, y parte obligado por la necesidad, y parte aburrido por las desgracias, tomó servicio en la aciaga expedición naval de Felipe II contra Inglaterra, cuando nuestra *Invencible* quedó vencida. Disgustado sin duda de esta carrera, volvió de nuevo á su patria, y casóse segunda vez; pero habiendo también perdido á su esposa, abrazó el estado eclesiástico. La consideración que le dió esta nueva situación, y el sosiego de que la acompañaba, contribuyeron mucho á multiplicar sus obras y extender sus relaciones y celebridad. Llegó ésta á tal término que el Papa Urbano VIII, nada amigo de Felipe IV ni de España, y mas apasionado del jesuita Santarella que de Homero ni Virgilio, le escribió de su puño confiriéndole el título de Doctor en teología y el hábito de S. Juan, y nombrándole Fiscal de la Cámara Apostólica. Colmado de honores, lleno de aplausos, y en el seno de la abundancia vivió Lope de Vega hasta que, en 1635, terminó sus días de edad de setenta y tres años, recibiendo un suntuoso entierro por dirección y á costa de su testamentario el Duque de Sesa.

[P. Mendibil y M. Silvela. — «*Biblioteca Selecta Española.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿De quién era hijo Lope de Vega?
- ¿Dónde y cuando nació?
- ¿Demostró pronto sus disposiciones? Dése una prueba.
- ¿Cómo le llama Cervantes?

¿Quién le protegió? ¿Cómo?
 ¿Dónde estudió Lope de Vega?
 ¿Cuántas veces se casó? ¿Con quién la primera vez?
 ¿Por qué estuvo desterrado?
 ¿Qué hizo después de haber perdido á su primera esposa?
 ¿Y qué después de perder á la segunda?
 Consecuencias de su nuevo estado.
 Prueba de su celebridad.
 ¿Cómo murió, y cuándo?

Twenty-second Lesson.

The Infinitive. (Conclusion.)

III. The Infinitive taking the place of an accessory sentence.

As the Infinitive specifies neither person nor number, it is peculiarly suited for the forming of such *contracted* accessory sentences where the references to person and number are so evident as not to need to be expressed. These contracted sentences are introduced:

1. When both the *principal* and the *accessory* sentence have *the same subject* (the same as in French), as:

Figurabase ver á Enrique ya en el trono.

Lit. He fancied he saw Henry already on the throne.

(Without contraction: *He* fancied that *he* saw etc.)

2. When the subject of the subordinate clause stands in the principal sentence as a *dative* or *accusative* case:

Castigué al niño, por haberme dicho una mentira.

I punished the child for having told me a falsehood.

(Without contraction: I punished *the child* because *it* had told me, etc.)

Here the subject of the subordinate clause (*it*) occurs as an *accusative* (*the child*) (in Spanish *al niño*) in the principal sentence.

N.B.—After the verb *decir*, to say, to tell, the direct form is used, just as in English; thus:

Dice que ha visto á tu primo en el teatro (and not *haber visto*, etc.).

He says he has seen your cousin at the theatre.

Remark.—It must be well understood that the contraction of a subordinate sentence by means of the Infinitive is not *imperative*; and that the speaker wishing to lay a greater stress on the accessory idea may do so by employing the direct form. Thus the phrase: *He did not know whom to apply to*, may be translated:

No supo á quién volverse,

or, in a direct form:

No supo á quién debía volverse.

He did not know to whom he *should* apply.

3. When the subordinate sentence is practically but the Subject of the principal one—*i.e.*:

Es notorio ser este hombre un pícaro.

This man is known to be a rogue.

(A misconception cannot arise in such a case, because the contracted subordinate clause has its own subject: *este hombre*.)

4. With other subordinate sentences the contracted form is also possible, even when the subject of the accessory sentence stands only indirectly in the principal one; but not if any misconception could arise. *Ex.*:

Su misantropía proviene de no haber tenido nunca un verdadero amigo.

His misanthropy is caused by his never having had a true friend.

Here the subject of the principal sentence “misanthropy,” could not possibly be considered as the subject of the contracted accessory sentence.

If, however, a misconception could arise, the subject of the subordinate sentence ought to be added to the Infinitive, as in 2 (see above); thus:

Antes de salir yo, llegó mi amigo.

Before I went out, my friend arrived.

(*Antes de salir llegó mi amigo*, before going out, my friend arrived, would suggest that it was the friend who went out.)

N.B.—After *antes* (before), and *después* (after) the Infinitive should be preceded by *de*, as:

Después de haber pesado bien las razones

After having well weighed the reasons

Antes de hacer algo, hay que pensarlo bien.

Before doing anything, one must think it over.

Traducción. 23.

(The subordinate sentences are to be rendered by the Infinitive.)

1. I gave (have given) the gardener a tip, *because* he *has* taken my letter to the post. I do not know how *I shall* get rid of this tedious company (how *to get* . . .) My poor friend, you never know how to spend your time! I know my brother too (*muuy*) well, to think he could have done such a thing. Did you not tell me yesterday, that your cousin (*f.*) had gone to England? I have told you that you must be quiet. The footman affirmed *that he had* not seen his master (all day long) the whole day. You will do well *if you (en) do* not send him more money than he wants for his journey. It is well known (*admitido*) *that* Cervantes and Calderon *are* the greatest Spanish writers (*or*: C. and C. are known to be . . .). When I arrived in Paris, I did not know which of my relations *I should* go to see first. Bring me something to drink! Is there anything to be seen in this church? Before *I have* received his letter, I cannot go away. Before *my* uncle has arrived, I cannot start.

2. After having arrived, we visited the cathedral, the museum, and the public gardens of the town. As (*por*) the rain *was* so heavy, my friend lent me his umbrella. By (*con*) always doing our duty, we gain the esteem of people. *If (á) you take (tomar)* this way, you will attain your end. *If (á) one hears him*, he knows everything better than other people. *If (á) I had* not seen it with my own eyes, I should not believe it. *It is not enough that he (sobre)* does not work, he also wants to be paid better than the others. *If (para) one wishes* to attain one's end, one must carefully examine every circumstance. After having teased me long, he finally desisted from his request. It is enough for me that I know it. Before the physician arrived, the patient had died. You have offended me *too much** for me to (*para*) forgive you.

Reading Exercise.

Retrato del Duque de Wellington.

Representaba Wellington cuarenta y cinco años, y esta era su edad, la misma exactamente que Napoleón, pues ambos nacieron en 1769, el uno en mayo, y el otro en agosto. El sol de la India y el de España habían alterado la blancura de su color sajón. Era la nariz, como antes he dicho, larga y un poco bermellonada; la frente, resguardada de los rayos del sol por el sombrero, conservaba su blancura y era her-

* *Too much* with *that* following is simply translated *muuy* or *mucho*.

mosa y serena como la de una estatua griega, revelando un pensamiento sin agitación y sin fiebre, una imaginación encadenada y gran facultad de ponderación y cálculo. Adornaba su cabeza un mechón de pelo ó tupé que no usaban ciertamente las estatuas griegas, pero que no caía mal, sirviendo de vértice á una mollera inglesa. Los grandes ojos azules del general miraban con frialdad, posándose vagamente sobre el objeto observado, y observaban sin aparente interés. Era la voz sonora, acompasada, medida, sin cambiar de tono, exacerbaciones, ni acentos duros, y el conjunto de su modo de expresarse, reunidos el gesto, la voz y los ojos, producía grata impresión de respeto y cariño.

[B. Pérez Galdós.—«*La Batalla de los Arapiles.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué edad tenía Wellington? ¿La representaba?
 ¿Había mucha diferencia de edad entre él y Napoleón?
 ¿Por qué?
 ¿Cuál es en general el color de la raza sajona? ¿Lo era el de Wellington? ¿Por qué no?
 Describese la fisonomía de Wellington.
 Describese su modo de mirar y de hablar.
 ¿Cuál era el resultado de este conjunto?

Twenty-third Lesson.

The Gerund.

§ 1. This *invariable* form either replaces an accessory sentence introduced by one of the conjunctions *because, as, whilst, if, etc.*, or corresponds exactly to the English *present participle**. It commonly *refers to the subject of the principal sentence*, and expresses an action *simultaneous* with that of the principal sentence. At the same time it loses nothing of its *verbal* character and may, therefore, govern an *object*. If we consider the following sentence:

Los cabreros, tendiendo por el suelo unas pieles de ovejas, aderezaron su rústica cena.

The goat-herds, spreading on the ground some sheepskins, prepared their simple supper.

* Or, rather, to the English gerund, commonly misnamed "Present participle," because it has the same form.

we observe:

1. that the *gerundio tendiendo* (spreading) refers to the subject, *los cabreros* (the goat-herds);

2. that the action expressed by *tendiendo* is simultaneous with that which the principal sentence, *Los cabreros aderezaron su rústica cena*, imports;

3. that the *gerundio* has retained its *verbal* character, and thus governs its own object, *unas pieles* (some sheep-skins).

It must be distinctly understood that the Spanish *Gerund* cannot take the place of the English present participle if this latter be* employed as an equivalent for an *adjective*, as in the sentence:

He sent four parcels *containing* 20 pieces of cloth.

It is true that Spaniards likewise often say:

Envió cuatro fardos conteniendo veinte piezas de paño, exactly as in English, but this mode of speaking is incorrect and must be considered a *Gallicism*. The relative *que* should be used instead:

Envió cuatro fardos que contenían

§ 2. Where no misconception can possibly arise, the Spanish *Gerund* may quite as well refer to the *accusative case***, especially if this accusative is a *personal pronoun* and not a *substantive*. Thus:

Le hallaron durmiendo, they found him sleeping.

Here "sleeping" can by no means refer to the subject "they," but only to "him," *i.e.*, the accusative case, and thus any misconception is impossible.

§ 3. If the Spanish *Gerund* is used instead of an *accessory* sentence whose subject is a *substantive*, this substantive should be added to the *gerundio*, as:

Faltándoles los víveres, los sitiados se rindieron á discreción.

As *provisions* were wanting, the *besieged* surrendered unconditionally.

(Here the subordinate clause: as provisions, etc., has its own subject, which is therefore added to the *gerundio*.)

* No gerund, but a participle.

** The Spanish *Gerund* often does refer to the accusative in Spanish, whilst in Italian such constructions (see our *Italian*

§ 4. If the *Gerund* refers to the *subject* (*nominative*), it takes its place *before* the verb; when referring to the *accusative*, it *follows* the verb, as:

Saliendo me dijo.

Going out, he told me (*saliendo* refers to the *nominative él* [he], suppressed in *dijo*).

Whereas:

Le oigo hablando con un hombre desconocido.

I hear him speaking with an unknown man (*hablando* refers to the *accusative le* [him]).

Note.—In the latter case, however (*i.e.*, where the *Gerund* refers to the *accusative case*), the *Infinitive* is preferred, provided no peculiar stress be laid on the *duration* of the action (see 8).

§ 5. Commonly the Spanish *Gerund* is used instead of the *Infinitive* with verbs of “*seeing*,” “*hearing*,” “*feeling*,” etc. But it cannot be used with these verbs if the verb of the *principal* sentence is in a *past tense*, or if the *accusative* is a *substantive* (see § 2). Thus:

La ví escribir* (and not *la ví escribiendo*).

I saw her writing (*Ví* is a *past tense*).

Oigo hablar á mi hermano (and not *oigo hablando á...*).

I hear my brother speaking. (The *accusative my brother* is a *substantive*.)

§ 6. Sometimes the *Infinitive* conveys another meaning than the *Gerund*: the former being *passive* (and therefore *never taking an object*), the latter *active* (sometimes, *with an object*). Thus:

Le ví dibujando (una cosa).

I saw him drawing (something).

Le ví dibujar, I saw him as he was drawing.

§ 7. The English *Participles* (both *Present* and *Past*) are often preceded by a *preposition*, as: *On* seeing him; *whilst* reflecting; *after* having said; *when* born, etc. In Spanish *en* precedes the *Gerund* if it is to be meant

Grammar, 5th edit.: *On the Gerund*) are carefully avoided, being now quite obsolete. — In English the present participle frequently refers to the *accusative*, as in the above sentence: They found him sleeping.

* If the *duration* is to be emphasized with a *past tense*, the corresponding tense of *estar* is coupled with the *gerundio* of the *principal* verb (see 8).

that the action imported by the principal sentence is subsequent to, and closely connected with the action expressed by the *Gerund*, otherwise, *al* with the Infinitive is employed. Ex.:

En llegando, le verá.

As soon as I arrive, I shall see him.

Lo primero que en naciendo hacemos, es llorar.*

The first thing we do, on being born, is to cry.

Al verle, le abrazó, on seeing him, he embraced him.

N.B.—In no case, but the above, is a Spanish preposition used with the *Gerund*:

Practicándolo, el lector lo aprenderá.

By practising it, the reader will learn it.

§ 8. In order to express *duration*, the verbs *andar*, *estar*, *ir*, *ser*, and *venir* are joined to the *Gerund*; if the continuation of the action is to be emphasized, *caminar*, *continuar*, and *seguir* are used in the same way. Ex.:

*Le aconsejaba redoblase su ternura para ir dispo-
niendo el corazón de Blanca.*

He advised him to redouble his tenderness, in order to soften Blanca's heart.

La grave enfermedad que le iba consumiendo.

The severe illness by which he was consumed (which was consuming him).

Los grandes del reino están aguardando vuestras órdenes.

The grandees of the kingdom are awaiting your orders.

Se va haciendo tarde, it is growing late.

El ave vino volando, the bird flew hither.

Siguieron durmiendo.

They slept on (they continued sleeping).

Poco á poco fué haciéndose rico.

Little by little he became rich.

§ 9. A peculiarity of the Spanish *Gerund* is that it receives — in a very few cases — the masculine diminutive ending, as: *corriendito*, *callandito*. These *Ge-*

** In Italian the *gerundio* with *in* only occurs in ancient writers. Thus:

Se l'ardor fallace.

Durò molt'anni in aspettando un giorno. (Petrarca, Son. 21.)

runds have lost their signification as *verbs* and are simply *adverbs*.

Note the following:

Hágalo V. volando, do it *this very moment*.

Vuelva V. corriendo, come back *at once*.

Calladito, que hay enfermos.

Keep (or come in) *very quietly*, somebody is ill here.

Matarlas callando, to do things *on the quiet*.

¿Cómo sigue V.? — Pasando.

How are you getting on? — *Middling*.

Remark.—In modern Spanish, the Gerund, which by its nature can only express a time *preceding* to, or *simultaneous* with, the time of the *principal* sentence, is also sometimes *erroneously* employed in such cases where the action denoted by the Gerund must be logically considered as *following* that implied by the principal sentence. If we analyse the sentence:

Las tropas se hicieron fuertes en un convento, teniendo pronto que rendirse, despues de una vigorosa resistencia

The troops entrenched themselves in a convent, *being* soon *obliged* to surrender, after a vigorous resistance

it may be easily seen that the action of "entrenching themselves" must be *previous* to the action of "surrendering." The gerund *teniendo que* is therefore incorrect. A logical construction of the sentence would be:

Las tropas, que se habian hecho fuertes en un convento, tuvieron pronto que rendirse, despues de una vigorosa resistencia.

Traducción. 24.

1. Handing me the letter, he requested me to read it and send it at once (*adverbial gerund*) to you. *Whilst* uttering these words, she began to sob. I found him smoking his cigar. Alfonso XII. died after having said these significant words: "*What a responsibility!*" These people spend their nights (in) gambling. *Whilst* we were (*estar*) talking, we heard an alarm of fire. By always speaking the truth, we obey the voice of our conscience. *If* you *study* (*ger.*) with zeal, you will soon make great progress in anything. As he *entered* (*infin.*), he told me to shut the window. I saw him talking to your aunt. This is your father's portrait; I saw him sitting for it. Yesterday the painter was in this drawing-

room; I saw him painting. Yesterday I heard the new singer singing. Whilst (*miéntras*) I listened to the singer (*f.*) [tr. Whilst I heard (with *estar*) the singer singing], the footman entered (in) the room.

2. This man is a sluggard; in order to avoid working [tr. for (*para*) not working (*infin.*)], he will (tr. *ir*) sell (*ger.*) all (*cuanto*) he possesses. The agent is (tr. *andar*) running about the town all day long. By following his advice, I have sustained a great loss. On leaving the room, he went out (use *irse*); I saw him shutting (*inf.*) the door. After having read the letter to the end (tr. *acabar*, preposit. gerund), he gave it back, saying: "As soon as I get (tr. *llegar*) to the office, I will see to (tr. *ocuparse de*) this business." As the singer (*m.*) is ill to-day, the opera cannot be performed. Speaking thus to me (tr. *al* with *infin.*), he gave me his (the) hand. I looked everywhere (*ir* with *ger.*) for my hat, but I could not find it. I have been (fr. *estar*) waiting for you three hours, but you did not come. What are you doing there (tr. *estar*)? I am waiting for my master. It kept on raining the whole (*seguir* with *gerund*) night. The heat is increasing (*ir* with *ger.*) from hour to hour. Let us go; it is growing (tr. *irse haciendo*) night. Do it this very moment (*gerund*) and come back at once (*gerund*). How is the invalid? Middling (*gerund*); come in quietly (*gerund*), he is asleep (*gerund*) now.

Reading Exercise.

Facia.

No era antipática, ciertamente, la cara de aquella sirvienta, y hasta se hallaban en ella vestigios de haber sido hermosa en su juventud. Respondía con agrado á las preguntas que me arriesgué á hacerla, por hablar de algo y alegrar un poco el tedioso colorido de mis ideas. Así supe que se llamaba Facia; que desde muy jóven servía en casa de mi tío, y que en ella pensaba morir, si esa era la voluntad de su amo, á quien quería y respetaba como á padre y señor, y aun con eso no le pagaba bastante los grandes beneficios que le debía. Él y su señora la habían recogido huérfana y desamparada, dándola desde entonces buena enseñanza y poco trabajo, pan abundante, y lo que vale más que eso, cariño y sombra. Todo esto me lo iba declarando como á la descuidada, en periodos cortados y sin mirarme á la cara, pero reflejando en la suya cierta expresión de dulzura melancólica que la hacía muy interesante, mientras se movía lentamente de acá para allá, poniendo aquí un plato después de pasarle con un lienzo blanquísimo, y allí un vaso ó tenedor.

[José M.^a de Pereda.—«Peñas Arriba.»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué era Facia, y cómo era su cara?
 ¿Había sido hermosa? ¿Cómo se conocía?
 ¿Por qué la habló?
 ¿Qué supo?
 ¿Cómo fué declarando todo aquello Facia?
 ¿Qué hacía Facia entretanto?

 Twenty-fourth Lesson.

Past Participle.

In Lesson 11, Part I., we have already treated the *Present* as well as the *Past Participle*. We now add a few remarks as to the use of the latter.

§ 1. As stated in Lesson 9, Part I., the past participle coupled with *haber* is always *invariable**, as:

He visto una hermosa comedia.

I have seen a fine comedy.

Les he referido el suceso y no me lo han creído.

I have informed them of the event, and they have not believed me.

Las cerezas que he comprado son buenas.

The cherries which I have bought are good.

§ 2. On the contrary, joined to *ser* or *estar*, or to one of the auxiliaries *dejar*, *llevar*, *quedar* (see Part II, Lesson 17), it becomes an *adjective*, and must therefore agree with the substantive in *gender* and *number*, as:

La casa fué edificada en 1901.

The house was built in 1901.

La carta está acabada, the letter is finished.

Los asesinos fueron muertos.

The murderers were killed.

Yo quedé muy agradecida á sus beneficios.

I (*f.*) was very thankful for his kindness.

* In ancient Spanish, however, examples are met with where the past participle, coupled with *haber*, agrees with its foregoing object, as in French and Italian. Thus:

Ayquellas (= *aquellas*) *lees* (= *leyes*) *que habemos* (= *hemos*) *fechas* (= *hechas*).

These laws which we have made.

(*Partidas del rey D. Alfonso X.*)

§ 3. If the participle is coupled with *tener* instead of *haber*, it likewise agrees in *gender* and *number* with its object, as:

Tengo leída la carta.

I have *already* read the letter.

Tengo comprados algunos libros.

I have bought some books.

§ 4. *Tener* may be used with a participle that governs *no* accusative; in which case the participle is *invariable*, as:

Les tengo escrito largamente sobre esta materia.

I have written them in full about this matter.

Note.—The student should be well aware, that in such a case *tener* may only be used with verbs that are not generally *neuter*, but which are only *used* as such, so that the *direct object* of the verb is understood from the context. In the above sentence, the *direct object* of *tengo escrito* would be *lo que era menester*, that which was necessary, or *lo que convenia*, or something similar. As this *object* is not a *word*, but a subordinate *sentence*, the participle cannot, of course, agree with it. The whole sentence would be properly:

Les tengo escrito largamente sobre esta materia lo que era menester.

Neuter verbs do not admit of the construction with *tener*, as such verbs can *never* govern a direct object. Thus it would be utterly impossible to say: *Tengo sido cónsul en Hamburgo*, I have been Consul at Hamburg, or *tenían enfermado de la epidemia reinante*, they were taken ill with the prevailing epidemic; the only correct rendering of which would be: *He sido cónsul, etc.*, and *habían enfermado*.

Note.—Nor is the construction with *tener* admissible with *reflective* verbs. Thus we may say: *Les tiene instruidos*, he has instructed them, but never: *Él se tiene instruido*, he has instructed *himself*. The sentence may only be: *Él se ha instruido*.

§ 5. Very often the participle replaces an *accessory sentence* (the Latin *Ablativus absolutus*). In such a case the *participle* agrees in *gender* and *number* with the word to which it refers, and the auxiliary is *omitted*, but the *participle* must always precede. Ex.:

Recobrados los espíritus, volvió Blanca en sí.*

After having recovered her senses, Blanca came again to herself.

* Properly: *habiendo* recobrado, etc.

Abrusada esta idea, quedó un poco más tranquilo.

After having taken this resolution, he became a little more tranquil.

§ 6. Very often these participles are preceded by *después de* (less frequently by *antes de*, before and *luego de*, as soon as), for the sake of greater emphasis, as:

La hija de aquel Manfredo, á quien después de vencido y muerto el padre, había tratado con una barbarie sin ejemplo

The daughter of that Manfred whom, after having conquered and killed her father, he had treated with a barbarity without example

Antes de dada la órden, before the order was given.

Luego de acabada la misa, as soon as mass was over.

Again, the *personal* pronoun in the *nominative* case sometimes occurs with such participles, though, in the modern language, it must follow the participle, as:

Después de yo muerta (i.e., *de muerta yo*).

(Santa Teresa.)

When I shall be dead.

§ 7. Constructions like: *Tomado que fuese uno de ellos* (i.e., *castillos*, as soon as one of them would have been taken) have been explained in Lesson 14, Part II. ("On the *Subordinate Conjunctions*"). It must be distinctly understood, that this is not an instance of an *absolute* participle, like those mentioned under 5, but simply of an *inversion*, where *que* is used instead of a *compound* conjunction. The ordinary construction of the above sentence would be:

Luego que uno de ellos fuese tomado etc.

Finally, we add now a further list of the participles mentioned on p. 191, Part I, which, besides their *passive* form, have an *active* signification, and are therefore adjectives most frequently used with *ser*:

<i>Acomodado</i> , comfortable	and well-to-do.
<i>atrevido</i> , dared	» bold.
<i>avisado</i> , advised	» cautious.
<i>callado</i> , (having) been silent	» taciturn.
<i>cansado</i> , fatigued, tired	» tiresome.
<i>cenado</i> , supped	» having supped.
<i>comido</i> , eaten	» having eaten.
<i>comedido</i> , measured	» prudent.
<i>desarreglado</i> , disarranged	» careless.

<i>desconfiado</i> , mistrusted	and mistrustful (person).
<i>desesperado</i> , despaired	» desperate.
<i>determinado</i> , resolved	» very resolute.
<i>disimulado</i> , concealed	» malignant.
<i>distinguido</i> , distinguished	» distinguished (person).
<i>entendido</i> , understood	» intelligent.
<i>esforzado</i> , encouraged	» bold.
<i> fingido</i> , feigned	» fallacious.
<i>(bien) hablado</i> , spoken	» eloquent.
<i>leído</i> , read	» learned, well-read.
<i>medido</i> , measured	» cautious.
<i>mirado</i> , looked	» circumspect.
<i>moderado</i> , moderated	» moderate, temperate.
<i>necesitado</i> , needed	» a poor, indigent person.
<i>ocasionado</i> , caused	» causing . . .
<i>ordenado</i> , ordered	» methodical person.
<i>osado</i> , dared	» daring, dauntless.
<i>parado</i> , arrested	» slow, lazy.
<i>parecido</i> , seemed	» similar, seeming.
<i>pausado</i> , paused	» deliberate.
<i>pesado</i> , weighed	» tiresome, a bore.
<i>porfiado</i> , persisted, quarrelled	» stubborn.
<i>precavido</i> , taken care or heeded	» cautious.
<i>preciado</i> , appreciated	» vain, affected.
<i>presumido</i> , presumed	» presuming, haughty.
<i>recatado</i> , concealed	» chaste, modest, cautious.
<i>sabido</i> , known	» intelligent, prudent.
<i>sacudido</i> , hit, hurt, etc.	» harsh, audacious.
<i>sentido</i> , felt	» sensible.
<i>sufrido</i> , suffered	» hardy.
<i>valido</i> , esteemed	» beloved, favourite.
<i>versado</i> , versed	» very conversant.

N.B.—With ancient authors, and even now sometimes in poetry, some verbal adjectives derived from *intransitive* verbs, like *nacido*, born; *muerto*, died, dead; *ido*, gone; *venido*, come; *vuelto*, come back, returned; *llegado*, arrived, occur with the auxiliary *ser*. The difference is exactly as in English. *Ex.*:

Son idos, they are gone; *han ido*, they have gone.

Es vuelto, he is returned (a good while); *ha vuelto*, he has returned.

Es muerto, he is dead; *ha muerto*, he has died.

Son llegados, they are arrived; *han llegado*, they have arrived.

Further Remarks on the use of the Past Participle.

1. Some denoting *state, condition*, cannot be used with *estar*, but are replaced by the corresponding adjective:

<i>Se ha alegrado,</i>	but <i>está alegre</i> , he is pleased.
<i>se ha calentado,</i>	> <i>está caliente</i> , he is hot, warm.
<i>ha enfriado (el día),</i>	> <i>está frío</i> , it is cold.
<i>se ha entristecido,</i>	> <i>está triste</i> , he is sad.
<i>ha enviudado,</i>	> <i>está viuda (viudo)</i> , she (he) is a widow(er).

And such others as *flaco* (*thin*), *gordo* (*fat*), *mudo* (*dumb*), *pobre* (*poor*), *rico* (*rich*), *seco* (*dry*), *sordo* (*deaf*), *sucio* (*dirty*), *turbio* (*stirred*), *húmedo* (*damp*), and *libre* (*free*), the corresponding participles of which are *enflaquecido*, *engordado*, *enmudecido*, *empobrecido*, *enriquecido*, *ensordecido*, *ensuciado*, *enturbiado*, *humedecido*, and *librado*.

2. Some others susceptible of an active meaning (see Lists pages 191, 362), and therefore *used with ser*, may also be used with *estar* when referring to a peculiar case, moment, or circumstance—*i.e.*:

Aunque es tímido, ha estado muy osado hoy.

Although timid, he has behaved very daringly to-day.

¡Qué presumida estaba porque todos la miraban en el baile!

How haughtily she behaved, because all were looking at her at the dance.

3. *Ser* and *estar* are never followed by their own participles, which are used with *haber*; thus:

He sido acusado injustamente.

I am accused unjustly.

El niño no viene porque está castigado (or ha sido castigado).

The child does not come, because he is being punished.

4. Verbs with two past participles have one of them irregular, in a contracted form, with the force of an adjective (sometimes with a meaning different to that of the regular participle), and used with *estar*; such are, among others:

<i>Absorber,</i>	<i>absorbido</i> , absorbed;	<i>absorto</i> , astonished.
<i>bendecir,</i>	<i>bendecido</i> , blessed;	<i>benedito</i> , blessed, holy.

<i>completar,</i>	<i>completado,</i> completed;	<i>completo,</i> complete.
<i>confundir,</i>	<i>confundido,</i> confounded;	<i>confuso,</i> confused.
<i>contentar,</i>	<i>contentado,</i> pleased;	<i>contento,</i> happy.
<i>desnudar,</i>	<i>desnudado,</i> undressed;	<i>desnudo,</i> naked.
<i>despertar,</i>	<i>despertado,</i> awoken;	<i>despierto,</i> awake.
<i>expedir,</i>	<i>expedido,</i> sent; despatched;	<i>expedito,</i> free, cleared (of roads).
<i>fijar,</i>	<i>fijado,</i> fixed;	<i>fijo,</i> fixed, immovable.
<i>juntar,</i>	<i>juntado,</i> joined;	<i>junto(s),</i> together.
<i>limpiar,</i>	<i>limpiado,</i> cleaned;	<i>limpio,</i> clean, neat.
<i>llenar,</i>	<i>llenado,</i> filled;	<i>lleno,</i> full.
<i>maldecir,</i>	<i>maldecido,</i> cursed;	<i>maldito,</i> cursed.
<i>matar,</i>	<i>matado,</i> killed;	<i>muerto,</i> dead.
<i>prender,</i>	<i>prendido,</i> caught; fastened;	<i>preso,</i> (put) in prison.

5. The contracted forms of the following — among others — *are* used as:

(a) Adjectives that do not join *estar*:

<i>Abstraer,</i>	<i>abstraído,</i> abstracted; absorbed;	<i>abstracto,</i> abstract.
<i>concretar,</i>	<i>concretado,</i> concreted (not abstracted);	<i>concreto,</i> special (as of a case).
<i>expresar,</i>	<i>expresado,</i> manifested;	<i>expreso,</i> express.
<i>extender,</i>	<i>extendido,</i> prolonged;	<i>extenso,</i> large.

(b) Substantives:

<i>Extraer,</i>	<i>extraído,</i> extracted;	<i>un extracto,</i> an abstract.
<i>favorecer,</i>	<i>favorecido,</i> favoured;	<i>el favorito,</i> the favourite.
<i>impeler,</i>	<i>impelido,</i> impelled;	<i>el impulso,</i> the impulse.
<i>permitir,</i>	<i>permitido,</i> permitted;	<i>el permiso,</i> the consent.

(c) Participles, or in adverbial phrases:

<i>Exceptuar,</i>	<i>exceptuado,</i> excluded;	<i>excepto hoy,</i> but to-day.
<i>improvisar,</i>	<i>improvisado,</i> improvised;	<i>de improviso,</i> suddenly.
<i>salvar,</i>	<i>salvado,</i> saved;	<i>salvo mañana,</i> but to-morrow.
<i>ver,</i>	<i>visto,</i> seen;	<i>por lo visto,</i> undoubtedly.

Traducción. 25.

1. Have you read the letter (which) my sister wrote (has written) to me? No, I have not yet read it. The apples which the (maid-) servant has bought are finer than those which you have bought. Is the new church already consecrated? No, it will be consecrated next Sunday. At these words he became (tr. *quedar*) very sad. The enemies were pursued to the very ramparts of the fortress. Have you read the book which I (have) sent you by the footman? No, I have bought several new novels which I shall read before I begin (*infin.*) reading your book. He has spoken much with my father about the matter, but I do not know what he has resolved. *After supper was (part.) over*, we all went home. *After the king had died (part.)*, his son ascended the throne. *When I was informed* of this accident, I at once departed for Paris. *After (después de . . .) having* satisfied his curiosity, he repented of what he had done.

2. The town *having been* conquered, the daring defenders were put in prison. *Though we are* forsaken by all our friends, we shall nevertheless do our duty. Tormented by remorse, the criminal at last confessed his guilt. It is difficult to reconcile people offended (hurt) in their vanity. Ill-bred children are the hardest punishment of their parents. *After (the) peace had been* re-established, the troops returned to their homes. *Scarcely had* the word *been* spoken when the whole assembly broke forth into an enormous uproar. Have you spoken to the judge? I spoke (have spoken) to him to-day, but he gave me little hope for the prisoner. *After having* paid the bill, I told the waiter to send my trunk to the station. *After these preparations had been* made, we went to (meet) the company.

3. He *has been* very pleased, but she is not pleased. Is it true that she *has become* a widow? Yes, she is a widow. Come near the fire, the day has turned cooler. No, thanks; I got warm walking, and I am warm now. How thin she *has become!* She is thin, because she does not eat. Do you not think she is very timid? Timid? She has behaved very daringly on many occasions. I have been told that they have caught the murderer. Yes, he is in prison; but the man is not dead. Oh! I thought he had killed him. I am speaking of a special case, but *undoubtedly* (partic. used adverbially) you do not understand me.

Reading Exercise.

Cartas de mi Sobrino.

22 de Marzo.

Querido tío y venerado maestro: Hace cuatro días que llegué con toda felicidad á este lugar de mi nacimiento, donde he hallado bien de salud á mi padre, al señor vicario y á los amigos y parientes. El contento de verlos y de hablar con ellos, después de tantos años de ausencia, me ha embargado el ánimo y me ha robado el tiempo, de suerte que hasta ahora no he podido escribir á usted.

Usted me lo perdonará.

Como salí de aquí tan niño y he vuelto hecho un hombre, es singular la impresión que me causan todos estos objetos que guardaba en la memoria. Todo me parece más chico, mucho más chico, pero también más bonito que el recuerdo que tenía. La casa de mi padre, que en mi imaginación era inmensa, es sin duda una gran casa de un rico labrador, pero más pequeña que el Seminario. Lo que ahora comprendo y estimo mejor es el campo de por aquí. Las huertas, sobre todo, son deliciosas. ¡Qué sendas tan lindas hay entre ellas! Á un lado, y tal vez á ambos, corre el agua cristalina con grato murmullo. Las orillas de las acequias están cubiertas de hierbas olorosas y de flores de mil clases. En un instante puede uno coger un ramo de violetas.

[J. Valera.—«*Pepita Jimenez.*»]

Conversación.

- ¿Qué fecha tiene la carta?
 - ¿Á quién la escribe?
 - ¿Cuánto tiempo hace que llegó?
 - ¿Qué le ha embargado el ánimo y le ha robado el tiempo?
 - ¿Cuál es la razón de sus singulares impresiones?
 - ¿Qué le parece todo? Cítese un ejemplo.
 - ¿Qué es lo que comprende y estima mejor?
 - ¿Describase el campo?
-

Poesías.

Oda moral.

¡Qué descansada vida
la del que huye el mundanal ruido,
y sigue la escondida
senda por donde han ido
los pocos sabios que en el mundo han sido!

Que no le enturbia el pecho
de los soberbios grandes el estado,
ni del dorado techo
se admira, fabricado
del sabio moro, en jaspes sustentado.

No cura si la fama
canta con voz su nombre pregonera,
ni cura si encarama
la lengua lisonjera
lo que condena la verdad sincera.

¿Qué presta á mi contento
si soy del vano dedo señalado?
si en busca de este viento
ando desalentado,
con ansias vivas, con mortal cuidado?

¡Oh monte, oh fuente, oh río,
oh secreto seguro, deleitoso!
roto casi el navío,
á vuestro almo reposo
huyo de aqueste mar tempestuoso.

Un no rompido sueño,
un día puro, alegre, libre quiero;
no quiero ver el ceño
vanamente severo
de á quien la sangre ensalza ó el dinero.

Despiértente las aves
 con su cantar sabroso no aprendido;
 no los cuidados graves,
 de que es siempre seguido
 el que al ajeno arbitrio está atenido.

Vivir quiero conmigo,
 gozar quiero del bien que debo al cielo,
 á solas, sin testigo,
 libre de amor, de celo,
 de odio, de esperanzas, de recelo.

Del monte en la ladera
 por mi mano plantado tengo un huerto,
 que con la primavera
 de bella flor cubierto,
 ya muestra en esperanza el fruto cierto.

Y como codiciosa,
 por ver y acrecentar su hermosura,
 desde la cumbre airosa
 una fontana pura
 hasta llegar corriendo se apresura.

Y luego, sosegada,
 el paso entre los árboles torciendo,
 el suelo de pasada
 de verdura vistiendo,
 y con diversas flores va esparciendo.

El aire el huerto orea,
 y ofrece mil olores al sentido,
 los árboles menea
 con un manso ruido,
 que del oro y del cetro pone olvido.

Ténganse su tesoro
 los que de un falso leño se confían;
 no es mío ver el lloro
 de los que desconfían
 cuando el cierzo y el ábrego porfían.

La combatida antena
 cruje, y en ciega noche el claro día
 se torna, al cielo suena
 confusa vocería,
 y la mar enriquecen á porfía.

Á mí una pobrecilla
 mesa, de amable paz bien abastada,
 me basta, y la vajilla

de fino oro labrada
sea de quien la mar no teme airada.

Y mientras miserable-
mente se están los otros abrasando
con sed insaciable
del peligroso mando,
tendido yo á la sombra esté cantando.

Á la sombra tendido,
de hiedra y lauro eterno coronado,
puesto el atento oído
al són dulce, acordado,
del plectro sábiamente meneado.

[Fr. Luis de León.]

Epístola Moral.

Fabio, las esperanzas cortesanas
prisiones son do el ambicioso muere,
y donde al más astuto nacen canas;

y el que no las limare ó las rompiere,
ni el nombre de varón ha merecido,
ni subir al honor que pretendiere.

El ánimo plebeyo y abatido
elija en sus intentos temeroso,
primero estar suspenso que caído:

Que el corazón entero y generoso
al caso adverso inclinará la frente,
antes que la rodilla al poderoso.

Más triunfos, más coronas dió al prudente,
que supo retirarse, la fortuna,
que al que esperó obstinada y locamente.

Esta invasión terrible é importuna
de contrarios sucesos nos espera
desde el primer sollozo de la cuna.

Dejémosla pasar, como á la fiera
corriente del gran Bétis, cuando airado
dilata hasta los montes su ribera.

Aquel entre los héroes es contado
que el premio mereció, no quien le alcanza
por vanas consecuencias del Estado.

Peculio propio es ya de la privanza,
cuanto de Astrea fué, cuanto regía
con su temida espada y su balanza.

El oro, la maldad, la tiranía
del inicuo procede, y pasa al bueno:
¿qué espera la virtud, ó en qué confía?

Vén y reposa en el materno seno
de la antigua Romúlea, cuyo clima
te será más humano y más sereno.

Adonde por lo ménos, cuando oprima
nuestro cuerpo la tierra, dirá alguno:
blanda le sea, al derramarla encima:

Donde no dejarás la mesa ayuno
cuando te falte en ella el pece raro,
ó cuando su pavón nos niegue Juno.

Busca, pues, el sosiego dulce y caro,
como en la oscura noche del Egeo
busca el piloto el eminente faro:

Que si acortas y ciñes tu deseo,
dirás, lo que desprecio he conseguido,
que la opinión vulgar es devaneo.

Más precia el ruiseñor su pobre nido,
de pluma y leves pajas, más sus quejas
en el bosque repuesto y escondido,

Que agradar lisonjero las orejas
de algún príncipe insigne, aprisionado
en el metal de las doradas rejas.

¡Triste de aquel que vive destinado
á esa antigua colonia de los vicios,
augur de los semblantes del privado!

Cese el ansia y la sed de los oficios;
que acepta el don, y burla del intento
el ídolo á quien haces sacrificios.

Iguala con la vida el pensamiento,
y no le pasarás de hoy á mañana,
ni quizá de un momento á otro momento.

Casi no tienes ni una sombra vana
de nuestra antigua Itálica: ¿y esperas?
¡Oh error perpétuo de la suerte humana!

Las enseñas grecianas, las banderas
del senado, y romana monarquía
murieron, y pasaron sus carreras.

¿Qué es nuestra vida más que un breve día
do apenas sale el sol, cuando se pierde
en las tinieblas de la noche fría?

¿Qué es más que el heno, á la mañana verde,
seco á la tarde? ¡Oh ciego desvarío!
¿será que de este sueño me recuerde?

¿Será que pueda ver que me desvío
de la vida viviendo, y que está unida
la cauta muerte al simple vivir mío?

Como los rios en veloz corrida
se llevan á la mar, tal soy llevado
al último suspiro de mi vida.

De la pasada edad ¿qué me ha quedado?
¿Ó qué tengo yo, á dicha, en la que espero,
sin ninguna noticia de mi hado?

¡Oh si acabase, viendo como muero,
de aprender á morir, ántes que llegue
aquel forzoso término postrero!

¡Antes que aquesta miés inútil siegue
de la severa muerte dura mano,
y á la común materia se la entregue!

Pasáronse las flores del verano,
el otoño pasó son sus racimos,
pasó el invierno con sus nieves cano:

Las hojas que en las altas selvas vimos,
cayeron: ¡y nosotros á porfía
en nuestro engaño inmóviles vivimos!

Temamos al Señor que nos envía
las espigas del año y la hartura,
y la temprana lluvia y la tardía.

No imitemos la tierra siempre dura
á las aguas del cielo y al arado,
ni la vid cuyo fruto no madura.

¿Piensas acaso tú que fué criado
el varón para el rayo de la guerra,
para sulcar el piélagó salado,

para medir el orbe de la tierra,
y el cerco donde el sol siempre camina?
¡Oh, quien así lo entiende, cuánto yerra!

Esta nuestra porción, alta y divina,
á mayores acciones es llamada,
y en más nobles objetos se termina.

Así aquella, que al hombre sólo es dada,
sacra razón y pura me despierta,
de esplendor y de rayos coronada;

y en la fría región dura y desierta
de aqueste pecho enciende nueva llama,
y la luz vuelve á arder que estaba muerta.

Quiero, Fabio, seguir á quien me llama,
y callado pasar entre la gente,
que no afecto los nombres ni la fama.

El soberbio tirano del Oriente,
que maciza las torres de cien codos
del cándido metal, puro y luciente,

apenas puede ya comprar los modos
de pecar; la virtud es más barata,
ella consigo misma ruega á todos.

Pobre de aquel que corre y se dilata
por cuantos son los climas y los mares,
perseguidor del oro y de la plata.

Un ángulo me basta entre mis lares,
un libro y un amigo, un sueño breve
que no perturben deudas ni pesares.

Esto tan solamente es cuanto debe
naturaleza al parco y al discreto
y algún manjar común, honesto y leve.

No, porque así te escribo, hagas conceto
que pongo la virtud en ejercicio:
que aún esto fué difícil á Epiteto.

Basta, al que empieza, aborrecer el vicio,
y el ánimo enseñar á ser modesto,
después le será el cielo más propicio.

Despreciar el deleite no es supuesto
de sólida virtud, que aún el vicioso
en sí propio le nota de molesto.

Mas no podrás negarme cuán forzoso
este camino sea al alto asiento,
morada de la paz y del reposo.

No sazona la fruta en un momento
aquella inteligencia, que mensura
la duración de todo á su talento:

Flor la vimos primero hermosa y pura,
luego materia acerba y desabrida,
y perfecta después, dulce y madura.

Tal la humana prudencia es bien que mida,
y dispense y comparta las acciones
que han de ser compañeras de la vida.

No quiera Dios que imite estos varones
que moran nuestras plazas macilentos,
de la virtud infames histriones:

Esos inmundos trágicos, atentos
al aplauso común, cuyas entrañas
son infaustos y oscuros monumentos.

¡Cuán callada que pasa las montañas
el aura respirando mansamente!
¡Qué gárrula y sonante por las cañas!

¡Qué muda la virtud por el prudente!
¡Qué redundante y llena de ruido
por el vano, ambicioso y aparente!

Quiero imitar al pueblo en el vestido,
en las costumbres sólo á los mejores,
sin presumir de roto y mal ceñido.

No resplandezca el oro y los colores
en nuestro traje, ni tampoco sea
igual al de los dóricos cantores.

Una mediana vida yo posea,
un estilo común y moderado,
que no lo note nadie que lo vea.

En el plebeyo barro mal tostado
hubo ya quien bebió tan ambicioso
como en el vaso múrico preciado:

Y alguno tan ilustre y generoso
que usó, como si fuera plata neta,
del cristal trasparente y luminoso.

¿Sin la templanza viste tú perfeta
alguna cosa? ¡Oh muerte, vén callada
como sueles venir en la saeta!

No en la tonante máquina preñada
de fuego y de rumor; que no es mi puerta
de doblados metales fabricada.

Así, Fabio, me muestra descubierta
su esencia la virtud, y mi albedrío
con ella se compone y se concierta.

No te burles de ver cuánto confío,
ni al arte de decir vana y pomposa
el ardor atribuyas de este brío.

¿Es por ventura ménos poderosa
que el vicio la virtud? ¿Es ménos fuerte?
no la arguyas de flaca y temerosa.

La codicia en las manos de la suerte
se arroja al mar: la ira á las espadas,
y la ambición se ríe de la muerte:

¿Y no serán siquiera tan osadas
las opuestas acciones, si las miro
de más ilustres genios ayudadas?

Ya, dulce amigo, huyo y me retiro
de cuanto simple amé: rompí los lazos:
vén y verás al alto fin que aspiro,
antes que el tiempo muera en nuestros brazos.

[Francisco de Rioja.]

El Silencio.

(Armonia nocturna.)

El Llobregat corría
con movimiento blando
á mis piás murmurando;
yo no sé qué decía
desde su oscuro lecho,
sólo sé que su voz sonó en mi pecho
con vaga y melancólica armonía.

Aun el beso fugaz siento del aura
que el ánimo restaura,
y el olor de los pinos solitarios
que coronan los montes,
límite de serenos horizontes;
oigo el débil quejido
del pájaro nocturno
en las breñas perdido,
y su sordo aleteo;
y el insecto que zumba;
y aun hoy la luna veo,
cual lámpara colgada ante la tumba
que un sér amado encierra,
bañando las profundas soledades
del cielo y de la tierra.

Pero no, este silencio no es lo muerte
helada, inmóvil, muda,
la que el alma sin fé sueña y advierte:
Desde la dura piedra

que el musgo cubre y la amorosa hiedra,
 hasta la peña colosal desnuda;
 la quietud de los campos, y la sombra;
 el lucero; la nube
 (gracioso y casto velo
 tras el cual centellea);
 el Monserrat, que sube
 soberbio escalonándose hasta el cielo,
 pilar robusto aquél, y éste corona
 de la santa patrona
 que al pueblo catalán tiende su manto,
 forman todos el canto
 sublime del silencio,
 con palabras sin voz, de poder tanto
 que el alma las entiende,
 y, embriagado por ellas,
 su movimiento el corazón suspende.

¡Oh noche! ¡Oh soledad! ¡Oh gran concierto
 que oye sólo el espíritu despierto,
 y no el torpe sentido!
 á tu conjuro misterioso, vuelve
 á ser, y se levanta lo que ha sido;
 las dormidas memorias,
 los días y los años,
 fantasmas de dolores y de glorias,
 de placer, de esperanza y desengaños.

Aquí, el hogar paterno,
 templo de la alegría
 que iluminaba el sol de medio día,
 ó el rayo de la luna;
 y en un rincón la cuna,
 ayer tranquila nave
 que arrulló la niñez de un inocente,
 á quien hoy arrebata la corriente
 en los revueltos mares de la vida,
 por furiosas tormentas combatida.

Allá, la verde alfombra
 del valle solitario;
 el árbol, fiel amigo
 que fruta daba y sombra;
 el viejo campanario,
 que la oración cantaba
 con acento monótono y profundo,
 y el tránsito de un alma á mejor mundo,
 ó bien desde la aurora

las fiestas celebraba
del pueblo, y de la patria vencedora.

Por aquí bulle inquieta
la alegre romería; y en los huecos
de la colina escueta
y el espacioso llano,
repiten, alejándose, cien ecos
del tamboril los rústicos sonidos
con cantares y danzas confundidos.

Y en faz dulce, halagüeña,
como niño que suena con las hadas,
ó con su madre y con el cielo sueña,
van pasando, en su féretro acostadas,
reinas de otros festines ¡ay! hermosas,
que vivieron la vida de las rosas;
y pasan allá lejos . . . , allá lejos . . . ,
donde la luna apenas da reflejos,
al triste suspirar del bosque umbrío
y el sollozo del río.

En el aire y el cielo
hay ojos que nos miran,
y bocas que suspiran,
y manos que nos llaman,
y genios invisibles que nos aman;
y de la selva oscura
por la intrincada y lóbrega espesura,
de su paso veloz sin dejar huellas,
fantásticas visiones cruzan bellas,
quizá recuerdos pálidos de amores,
formas, tal vez, de sueños seductores,
de nuestro corazón, tal vez, pedazos,
tendiéndonos los brazos,
y virginal sonrisa
mandándonos en alas de la brisa.

En tanto, por el piélago infinito
de esos mundos que en letras de luz tienen
de Dios el nombre escrito,
su alto vuelo el espíritu desplega;
ansioso de luz llega,
y, abismándose en él, ve más cercana
la majestad de Dios, y compadece
la pequeñez de la grandeza humana.

[*Ventura Ruiz Aguilera.*]

La Duda.

A mi querido amigo el distinguido Poeta

Don Antonio Hurtado.

Desde esta soledad en donde vivo,
y en la cual de los hombres olvidado
ni cartas ni periódicos recibo;
donde reposo en apacible calma,
lejos, lejos del mundo que ha gastado
con la del cuerpo la salud del alma;
antes de que el torrente desbordado
de la ambición con ímpetu violento
me arrebate otra vez; desde la orilla
donde yace encallada mi barquilla,
libre ya de las ondas y del viento,
como recuerdo de amistad te escribo.

¡Ay! Aunque salvo del peligro, siento
la inquietud angustiosa del cautivo,
que rompiendo su férrea ligadura,
traspasa fatigado á la ventura
montes, llanos y selvas, fugitivo.
El rumor apagado que levantan
las hojas secas que á su paso mueve,
las avecillas que en el árbol cantan,
el aire que en las ramas se cimbrea
con movimiento reposado y leve,
el río que entre guijas serpentea,
la luz del día, la callada sombra
de la serena noche, el eco, el ruido,
la misma soledad ¡todo le asombra!
Y cuando ya de caminar rendido
sobre la yerta piedra se reclina
y le sorprende el sueño y le domina,
oye en torno de sí, medio dormido,
vago y siniestro son. Despierta, calla,
y fija su atención despavorido;
las tinieblas le ofuscan, se incorpora
y el rumor le persigue.—¡Es el latido
de su azorado corazón que estalla!—
Y entonces ¡ay! desesperado llora.
Porque es la libertad don tan querido,
que en el humano espíritu batalla,
más que el placer de conseguirla, el miedo
de volverla á perder.

Yo que no puedo
 recordar sin espanto la agonía,
 la dura y azarosa incertidumbre
 en que mi triste corazón gemía
 sometido á penosa servidumbre,
 cuando, arista á merced del torbellino,
 sin elección ni voluntad seguía
 los secretos impulsos del destino,
 y en ese pavoroso desconcierto
 de la social contienda, consumía
 la paz del alma ¡la esperanza mía!
 hoy que la tempestad arrojó al puerto
 mi navecilla rota y quebrantada,
 temo ¡infeliz de mí! que otra oleada
 la vuelva al mar donde mi calma ha muerto.

Para vencer su furia desatada
 ¿qué soy yo? ¿qué es el hombre? Sombra leve,
 partícula de polvo en el desierto.
 Cuando el *simún* de la pasión le mueve,
 busca el átomo al átomo, y la arena
 es nube, es huracán, es cataclismo.
 Gigante mole los espacios llena,
 bajo su peso el mundo se conmueve,
 oscurece la luz, llega al abismo
 y al sumo Dios que la formó se atreve.
 Vértigo arrollador todo la arrasa;
 pero después que el torbellino pasa
 y se apacigua y duerme la tormenta,
 ¿qué queda? Polvo mísero y liviano
 que el ala frágil del insecto aventa,
 que se pierde en la palma de la mano.
 ¡Oh grata soledad, yo te bendigo,
 tú que al naufrago, al triste, al pobre grano
 de desligada arena das abrigo!

Muchas veces, Antonio, devorado
 por ese afán oculto que no sabe
 la mente descifrar, me he preguntado,
 —cuestión á un tiempo inoportuna y grave—
 ¿qué busco? ¿á dónde voy? ¿porqué he nacido
 en esta Edad sin fe?—Yo soy un ave
 que llegó sola y sin amor al nido.
 Á este nido social en que vegeta,
 mayor de edad, la ciega muchedumbre,
 al infortunio y al error sujeta
 entre miseria y sangre y podredumbre.

Comtéplala, si puedes, tú que al cielo
 con tus radiantes alas de poeta
 tal vez quisiste remontar al vuelo,
 y si este el mundo que soñaste ha sido
 nunca el encanto de tu dicha acabe . . .
 ¡Ay! pero tú también eres un ave
 que llegó sola y sin amor al nido.

Desde la altura de mi siglo, tiendo
 alguna vez con ánimo atrevido,
 mi vista á lo pasado, y removiendo
 los deshechos escombros de la historia,
 en el febril anhelo que me agita
 sus ruinas vuelvo á alzar en mi memoria.
 Y al través de las capas seculares
 que el aluvión del tiempo deposita
 sobre columnas, pórticos y altares;
 del polvo inanimado con que cubre
 la loca vanidad del polvo vivo,
 que arrebatá á su paso fugitivo,
 como el viento las hojas en Octubre;
 mudo de admiración y de respeto
 busco la antigüedad—roto esqueleto
 que entre la densa lobreguez asoma—
 y ofrecen á mi absorta fantasía
 sus dioses Grecia, sus guerreros Roma,
 sus mártires la fe cristiana y pía,
 el patriotismo su grandeza austera,
 sus mónstruos la insaciable tiranía,
 sus vengadores la virtud severa.
 Y llevado en las alas del deseo
 que anima mi ilusión, á veces creo
 volver á aquella Edad.—En la espesura
 del bosque, en el murmullo de la fuente,
 en el claro lucero que fulgura,
 en el escollo de la mar rujiente,
 en la espuma, en el átomo, en la nada,
 Apolo centellea, alza su frente
 de luminoso lauro coronada.
 Por él la luna que entre sombras gira,
 la luz que en rayos de color se parte,
 la ola que bulle, el viento que suspira,
 todo es Dios, todo es himno, todo es arte.
 ¡Ay! ¿No es verdad que en tus eternas horas
 de desaliento y decepción, recuerdas
 esa dorada Edad, y que te inspira
 el coro de sus musas voladoras,

que murmuran y gimen en las cuerdas
de la ya rota y olvidada lira?
Aunque las llares, no vendrán; ¡han muerto!
la voz del interés grosera y ruda
anuncia que el Parnaso está desierto
y la naturaleza triste y muda.

Que en este siglo de sarcasmo y duda
sólo una musa vive. Musa ciega,
implacable, brutal. ¡Demonio acaso
que con los hombres y los dioses juega!
La Musa del análisis, que armada
del árido escalpelo, á cada paso
nos precipita en el obscuro abismo
ó nos asoma al borde de la nada.
¿No la ves? ¿No la sientes en tí mismo?
¿Quién no lleva esa víbora enroscada
dentro del corazón? ¡Ay! cuando llena
de noble ardor la juventud florida
quiere surcar la atmósfera serena,
quiere aspirar las auras de la vida,
esa Musa fatal y tentadora
en el libro, en la cátedra, en la escena
se apodera del alma y la devora.
¡Si á veces imagino que envenena
la leche maternal! En nuestros lares,
en el retiro, en el regazo tierno
del amor, hasta al pié de los altares
nos persigue ese aborto del infierno.

¡Cuántas noches de horror, conmigo á solas,
ha sacudido con su soplo ardiente
los tristes pensamientos de mi mente
como sacude el huracán las olas!
¡Cuántas, ay, revolcándome en el lecho
he golpéado con furor mi frente,
he desgarrado sin piedad mi pecho,
y entre visiones lúgubres y extrañas,
su diente de reptil, áspero y frío,
he sentido clavarse en mis entrañas!
¡Noches de soledad, noches de hastío
en que, lleno de angustia y sobresalto,
se agitaba mi sér en el vacío
de fe, de luz y de esperanza falto!
¿Y quién mantiene viva la esperanza
si donde quiera que la vista alcanza
ve escombros nada más? Por entre ruínas
la humanidad desorientada avanza;

hechos, leyes, costumbres y doctrinas
 como edificio envejecido y roto
 desplomándose van; sordo y profundo
 no sé qué irresistible terremoto
 moral, conmueve en su cimiendo el mundo.

Ruedan los tronos, ruedan los altares:
 reyes, naciones, genios y colosos
 pasan como las ondas de los mares
 empujadas por vientos borrascosos.
 Todo tiembla en redor, todo vacila.
 Hasta la misma religión sagrada
 es moribunda lámpara que oscila
 sobre el sepulcro de la edad pasada.
 Y cual turbia corriente alborotada,
 libre del ancho cauce que la encierra,
 la duda audaz, la asoladora duda
 como una inundación cubre la tierra.
 —¡Es que el manto de Dios ya no la escuda!—
 No la defiende el varonil denuedo
 de la fe inexpugnable y de las leyes,
 y el dios de los incrédulos, el miedo,
 rige á su voluntad pueblos y reyes.
 Él los rumores bélicos propala,
 él organiza innúmeras legiones
 que buscan la ocasión, no la justicia.
 Mas ¿qué podrán hacer? No se apuntala
 con lanzas, bayonetas ni cañones,
 el templo secular que se desquicia.
 En medio de este caos, como un arcano
 impenetrable, pavoroso, obscuro,
 yérguese altivo el pensamiento humano
 de su grandeza y majestad seguro.
 Y semejante al árbol carcomido
 por incansable y destructor gusano,
 que cuando tiene el corazón roído,
 desenvuelve su copa más lozano,
 al través del social desasosiego
 cruza la tierra en su corcel de fuego,
 hasta los cielos atrevido sube,
 pone en la luz su vencedora mano,
 el rayo arranca á la irritada nube
 y horada con su acento el Oceano.
 ¡Mas, ay, del árbol que frondoso crece
 sostenido no más por su corteza!
 Tal vez la brisa que las flores mece
 derribará en el polvo su grandeza.

— ¡Tal vez! ¿Lo sabes tú? ¿Quién el misterio
logra profundizar? Esta sombría
turbación, esta lóbrega tristeza
que invade sin cesar nuestro hemisferio,
¿es acaso el crepúsculo del día
que se extingue, ó la aurora del que empieza?
¿Es ¡ay! renacimiento ó agonía?
Lo ignoras como yo. ¡Nadie lo sabe!
Solo sé que la dulce poesía
va enmudeciendo, y cuando calla el ave
es que su obscuridad la noche envía.
Oigo el desacordado clamoreo
que alza doquier la muchedumbre inquieta
sin freno, sin antorcha que la guíe;
ando entre ruínas, y espantado veo
cómo al sordo compás de la piqueta
la embrutecida indiferencia ríe.

— También en Roma, torpe y descreída,
la copa llena de espumoso y rico
licor, gozábbase desprevenida,
hasta que de improviso por la herida
que abrió en su cuello el hacha de Alarico
escapósele el vino con la vida.—
Todo el cercano cataclismo advierte;
pero en esta ansiedad que nos devora
ninguno habrá que á descifrar acierte
la gran transformación que se elabora.

¿Y qué más da? Resurrección ó muerte,
vespertino crepúsculo ó aurora,
los que siguen llorando su camino
por medio de esta confusión horrenda,
con inseguro paso y rumbo incierto,
¿dónde levantarán su débil tienda
que no la arranque el raudo torbellino
ni la envuelva la arena del desierto?
En otro tiempo el ánimo doliente,
atormentado por la duda humana,
postrábase sumiso y penitente
en el regazo de la fe cristiana,
y allí bajo la bóveda sombría
del templo, el corazón desesperado
se humillaba en el polvo y renacía.
Cristo en la cruz del Gólgota clavado
extendía sus brazos, compasivo,
al dolor sublimado en la plegaria,
y para el pobre y triste fugitivo

del mundo, era la celda solitaria
puerto de salvación, sepulcro vivo,
anulación del cuerpo voluntaria.

¡Ay! En aquella paz santa y profunda
todo era austero, reposado, grave.
La elevación de la gigante nave,
la luz entrecortada y moribunda,
la sencilla oración de un pueblo inmenso
uniéndose á los cánticos del coro,
la armonía del órgano sonoro,
las blancas nubes de quemado incienso,
el frío y duro pavimento, fosa
común, perpetuamente renovada,
de la cual cada tumba, cada losa
es doble puerta que limita y cierra
por debajo el silencio de la nada,
por encima el tumulto de la tierra;
aquella majestad, aquel olvido
del siglo, aquel recuerdo de la muerte,
parecían decir con infinita
dulzura al corazón desfallecido,
al espíritu ciego, al alma inerte:

Ego sum via, et veritas et vita.

Aquí en su pequeñez el hombre es fuerte.—
Mas ¿dónde iremos ya? Torpes y oscuros
planes hallaron en el claustro abrigo,
y Dios airado desató el castigo
y con el rayo derribó sus muros.
¿Dónde posar la fatigada frente?
¿Dónde volver los afligidos ojos,
cuando ha dejado el corazón creyente
prendidos en los ásperos abrojos
su fe piadosa y su interés mundano?
¿Dónde?

¡En tí, soledad! Yo te bendigo,
porque al náufrago, al triste, al pobre grano
de desligada arena das abrigo.

[*Gaspar Nuñez de Arce.*]

Consuelo celestial.

Dime, Padre común, pues eres justo,
¿por qué ha de permitir tu providencia,
que, arrastrando prisiones la inocencia,
suba la fraude á tribunal augusto?

¿Quién da fuerzas al brazo, que robusto
 hace á tus leyes firme resistencia?
 ¿Y que el celo, que más las reverencia,
 gima á los piés del vencedor injusto?

Vemos que vibran victoriosas palmas
 manos inicuas; la virtud gimiendo
 del triunfo en el injusto regocijo.

Esto decía yo, cuando riendo
 celestial ninfa apareció, y me dijo:
 ¿Ciego, es la tierra el centro de las almas?

[*Argensola.*]

Prosa.

Armas y Letras.

Quitenseme delante los que dijeren que las letras hacen ventaja á las armas, que les diré, y sean quien se fueren, que no saben lo que dicen: porque la razón que los tales suelen decir, y á lo que ellos más se atienen, es que los trabajos del espíritu exceden á los del cuerpo, y que las armas sólo con el cuerpo se ejercitan; como si fuese su ejercicio oficio de ganapanes, para el cual no es menester más de buenas fuerzas; ó como si en esto, que llamamos armas los que las profesamos, no se encerrasen los actos de la fortaleza, los cuales piden para ejecutallos mucho entendimiento; ó como si no trabajase el ánimo del guerrero que tiene á su cargo un ejército, ó la defensa de una ciudad sitiada, así con el espíritu, como con el cuerpo. Si no, véase si se alcanza con las fuerzas corporales á saber y conjeturar el intento del enemigo, los designios, las estratajemas, las dificultades, el prevenir los daños que se temen, que todas estas cosas son acciones del entendimiento en quien no tiene parte alguna el cuerpo. Siendo pues así, que las armas requieren espíritu con las letras, veamos ahora cual de los dos espíritus, el del letrado ó el del guerrero, trabaja más: y esto se vendrá á conocer por el fin y paradero á que cada uno se encamina, porque aquella intención se ha de estimar en más, que tiene por objeto más noble fin. Es el fin y paradero de las letras (y no hablo ahora de las divinas, que tienen por blanco llevar y encaminar las almas al cielo, que á un fin tan sin fin como este ninguno otro se le puede igualar), hablo de las letras humanas, que es su fin poner en su punto la justicia distri-

butiva, y dar á cada uno lo que es suyo, entender y hacer que las buenas leyes se guarden: fin por cierto generoso y alto, y digno de grande alabanza; pero no de tanta como merece aquel á que las armas atienden, las cuales tienen por objeto y fin la paz, que es el mayor bien que los hombres pueden desear en vista vida: y así las primeras buenas nuevas que tuvo el mundo y tuvieron los hombres, fueron las que dieron los ángeles la noche que fué nuestro día, cuando cantaron en los aires: *Gloria sea en las alturas, y paz en la tierra á los hombres de buena voluntad*: y la salutación que el mejor Maestro de la tierra y del cielo enseñó á sus allegados y favorecidos, fué decirles que cuando entrasen en alguna casa dijese: *Paz sea en esta casa*; y otras muchas veces les dijo: *Mi paz os doy, mi paz os dejo, paz sea con vosotros*: bien como joya y prenda dada y dejada de tal mano, joya que sin ella en la tierra ni en el cielo puede haber bien alguno: Esta paz es el verdadero fin de la guerra, que lo mismo es decir armas que guerra. Prosupuesta pues esta verdad, que el fin de la guerra es la paz, y que en esto hace ventaja al fin de las letras, vengamos ahora á los trabajos del cuerpo del letrado, y á los del profesor de las armas, y véase cuales son mayores. De tal manera y por tan buenos términos iba prosiguiendo en su plática Don Quijote, que obligó á que por entonces ninguno de los que escuchándole estaban le tuviesen por loco: ántes, como todos los más eran caballeros, á quien son anexas las armas, le escuchaban de muy buena gana, y él prosiguió diciendo: digo pues, que los trabajos del estudiante son estos: principalmente pobreza, no porque todos sean pobres, sino por poner este caso en todo el extremo que pueda ser; y en haber dicho que padece pobreza, me parece que no había que decir más de su mala ventura, porque quien es pobre no tiene cosa buena: esta pobreza la padece por sus partes, ya en hambre, ya en frío, ya en desnudez, ya en todo junto; pero con todo eso no es tanta que no coma, aunque sea un poco más tarde de lo que se usa, aunque sea de las sobras de los ricos; que es la mayor miseria del estudiante esto que entre ellos llaman andar á la sopa, y no les falta algún ageno brasero, ó chimenea que si no calienta, á lo ménos entibie su frío, y en fin la noche duermen muy bien debajo de cubierta. No quiero llegar á otras menudencias, conviene á saber, de la falta de camisas y no sobra de zapatos, la raridad y poco pelo del vestido, ni aquel ahitarse con tanto gusto cuando la buena suerte les depara algún banquete. Por este camino que he pintado, áspero y dificultoso, tropezando aquí, cayendo allí, levantándose acullá, tornando á caer acá, llegan al grado que desean; el cual alzando á muchos, hemos visto que habiendo pasado por estas Sirtes, y por estas Scilas y Caribdis, como

llevados en vuelo de la favorable fortuna, digo que los hemos visto mandar y gobernar el mundo desde una silla, trocada su hambre en hartura, su frío en refrigerio, su desnudez en galas, y su dormir en una estera en reposar en holandas y damascos: premio justamente merecido de su virtud; pero contrapuestos y comparados sus trabajos con los del milite guerrero, se quedan muy atrás en todo.... Pues comenzamos en el estudiante por la pobreza y sus partes, veamos si es más rico el soldado, y veremos que no hay ninguno más pobre en la misma pobreza, porque está atendido á la miseria de su paga, que viene ó tarde ó nunca, ó á lo que garbear por sus manos con notable peligro de su vida y de su conciencia: y á veces suele ser su desnudez tanta, que un colete acuchillado le sirve de gala y de camisa, y en la mitad del invierno se suele reparar de las inclemencias del cielo, estando en la campaña rasa, con solo el aliento de su boca, que como sale de lugar vacío, tengo por averiguado que debe de salir frío contra toda naturaleza. Pues esperad que espere que llegue la noche, para restaurarse de todas estas incomodidades en la cama que le aguarda, la cual si no es por su culpa, jamás pecará de estrecha, que bien puede medir en la tierra los piés que quisiere, y revolverse en ella á su sabor sin temor que se le encojan las sábanas. Lléguese pues á todo esto el día y la hora de recibir el grado de su ejercicio: lléguese un día de batalla, que allí le pondrán la borla en la cabeza, hecha de hilas para curarle algun balazo que quizá le habrá pasado las sienes, ó le dejará estropeado de brazo ó pierna: y cuanda esto no suceda, sino que el cielo piadoso le guarde y conserve sano y vivo, podrá ser que se quede en la misma pobreza que ántes estaba, y que sea menester que suceda uno y otro reencuentro, una y otra batalla, y que de todas salga vencedor para medrar en algo; pero estos milagros vense raras veces. Pero decidme, señores, si habéis mirado en ello: ¿cuán menos son los premiados por la guerra, que los que han perecido en ella? Sin duda habéis de responder que no tienen comparación, ni se pueden reducir á cuenta los muertos, y que se podrán contar los premiados vivos con tres letras de guarismo. Todo esto es al revés en los letrados, porque de faldas, que no quiero decir de mangas, todos tienen en que entretenerse: así que, aunque es mayor el trabajo del soldado, es mucho menor el premio. Pero á esto se puede responder que es más fácil premiar á dos mil letrados, que á treinta mil soldados; porque aquellos se premian con darles oficios que por fuerza se han de dar á los de su profesión, y á estos no se pueden premiar sino con la misma hacienda del señor á quien sirven, y esta imposibilidad fortifica más la razón que tengo. Pero dejemos esto aparte, que es labe-

rinto de muy dificultosa salida, sino volvamos á la preeminencia de las armas contra las letras: materia que hasta ahora está por averiguar según son las razones que cada una de su parte alega. Y entre las que he dicho, dicen las letras que sin ellas no se podrían sustentar las armas, porque la guerra tambien tiene sus leyes y está sujeta á ellas, y que las leyes caen debajo de lo que son letras y letrados. Á esto responden las armas que las leyes no se podrán sustentar sin ellas, porque con las armas se defienden las repúblicas, se conservan los reinos, se guardan las ciudades, se aseguran los caminos, se despojan los mares de corsarios; y finalmente, si por ellas no fuese, las repúblicas, los reinos, las monarquías, las ciudades, los caminos de mar y tierra estarían sujetos al rigor y á la confusión que trae consigo la guerra el tiempo que dura, y tiene licencia de usar de sus privilegios y de sus fuerzas: y es razón averiguada que aquello que más cuesta, se estima y debe de estimar en más. Alcanzar alguno á ser eminente en letras, le cuesta tiempo, vijilias, hambre, desnudez, vaguido de cabeza, indigestiones de estómago, y otras cosas á estas adherentes, que en parte ya las tengo referidas; mas llegar uno por sus términos á ser buen soldado, le cuesta todo lo que á el estudiante, en tanto mayor grado, que no tienen comparación, porque á cada paso está á pique de perder la vida: ¿Y qué temor de necesidad y pobreza puede llegar ni fatigar al estudiante, que llegue al que tiene un soldado que hallándose cercado en alguna fuerza y estando de posta ó guarda en algún rebellín, ó caballero, siente que los enemigos están minando hácia la parte donde él está, y no puede apartarse de allí por ningún caso, ni huir el peligro que de tan cerca le amenaza? Sólo lo que puede hacer, es dar noticia á su capitán de lo que pasa para que lo remedie con alguna contramina, y él estarse quedo temiendo y esperando, cuando improvisamente ha de subir á las nubes sin alas y bajar al profundo sin su voluntad; y si este parece pequeño peligro, veamos si se le iguala ó hace ventaja el de embestirse dos galeras por las proas en mitad del mar espacioso, las cuales enclavijadas y trabadas, no le queda al soldado más espacio del que conceden dos piés de tabla del espolón; y con todo esto, viendo que tiene delante de sí tantos ministros de la muerte que le amenaza, cuantos cañones de artillería se asestan de la parte contraria, que no distan de su cuerpo una lanza, y viendo que al primer descuido de los piés iría á visitar los profundos senos de Neptuno, y con todo esto, con intrépido corazón, llevado de la honra que le incita, se pone á ser blanco de tanta arcabucería, y procura pasar por tan estrecho paso al bajel contrario: y lo que más es de admirar, que apénas uno ha caído donde no se podrá levantar

hasta el fin del mundo, cuando otro ocupa su mismo lugar, y si este tambien cae en el mar que como á enemigo le aguarda, otro, y otro le sucede, sin dar tiempo al tiempo de sus muertes: valentía y atrevimiento el mayor que se puede hallar en todos los trances de la guerra. ¡Bien hayan aquellos benditos siglos que carecieron de la espantable furia de aquestos endemoniados instrumentos de la artillería, á cuyo inventor tengo para mí que en el infierno se le está dando el premio de su diabólica invención, con la cual dió causa que un infame y cobarde brazo quite la vida á un valeroso caballero, y que sin saber como ó por donde, en la mitad del coraje y brío que enciende y anima á los valientes pechos, llega una desmandada bala, disparada de quien quizá huyó y se espantó del resplandor que hizo el fuego al disparar la maldita máquina, y corta y acaba en un instante los pensamientos y vida de quien la merecía gozar luengos siglos!

[Cervantes.]

El castellano viejo.

Ya en mi edad pocas veces gusto de alterar el orden que en mi manera de vivir tengo hace tiempo establecido; y fundo esta repugnancia en que no he abandonado mis lares ni un solo día para quebrantar mi sistema, sin que haya sucedido el arrepentimiento más sincero al desvanecimiento de mis engañadas esperanzas. Un resto, con todo eso, del antiguo ceremonial que en su trato tenían adoptado nuestros padres, me obliga á aceptar á veces ciertos convites á que parecería el negarse grosería, ó por lo menos ridícula afectación de delicadeza.

Andábame días pasados por esas calles á buscar materiales para mis artículos. Embebido en mis pensamientos, me sorprendí varias veces á mí mismo riendo como un pobre hombre de mis propias ideas y moviendo maquinalmente los labios; algún tropezón me recordaba de cuando en cuando que para andar por el empedrado de Madrid no es la mejor circunstancia la de ser poeta ni filósofo; más de una sonrisa maligna, más de un gesto de admiración de los que á mi lado pasaban, me hacía reflexionar que los soliloquios no se deben hacer en público; y no pocos encontrones que al volver las esquinas di con quien tan distraída y rápidamente como yo las doblaba, me hicieron conocer que los distraídos no entran en el número de los cuerpos elásticos, y mucho menos de los seres gloriosos é impasibles. En semejante situación de mi espíritu, ¡qué sensación no debería producirme una horrible palmada que una gran mano, pegada (á lo que por entonces entendí) á un grandísimo brazo, vino á descargar sobre uno

de mis hombros, que por desgracia no tienen punto alguno de semejanza con los de Atlante!

No queriendo dar á entender que desconocía este enérgico modo de anunciarse, ni desairar el agasajo de quien sin duda había creído hacermele más que mediano dejándome torcido para todo el día, traté sólo de volverme por conocer quién fuese tan mi amigo para tratarme tan mal; pero mi castellano viejo es hombre que, cuando está de gracias, no se ha de dejar ninguna en el tintero. ¿Cómo dirá el lector que siguió dándome pruebas de confianza y cariño? Echóme las manos á los ojos, y sujetándome por detrás, ¿quién soy? gritaba, alborozado con el buen éxito de su delicada travesura. ¿Quién soy? — Un animal, iba á responderle; pero me acordé de repente de quién podría ser, y sustituyendo cantidades iguales: — *Braulio eres*, le dije. Al oirme, suelta sus manos, rie, se aprieta los ijares, alborota la calle, y pónenos á entrambos en escena. — ¡Bien, mi amigo! ¿Pues en qué me has conocido? — ¿Quién pudiera sino tú . . .? — Has venido ya de tu Vizcaya? — No, Braulio, no he venido. — Siempre el mismo genio. — ¿Qué quieres? es la pregunta del español. — ¡Cuánto me alegro de que estés aquí! ¿Sabes que mañana son mis días? — Te los deseo muy felices. — Déjate de cumplimientos entre nosotros; ya sabes que yo soy franco y castellano viejo; el pan pan, y el vino vino; por consiguiente, exijo de ti que no vayas á dárme los, pero estás convidado. — ¿Á qué? — Á comer conmigo. — No es posible. — No hay remedio. — No puedo, insisto ya temblando. — ¿No puedes? — Gracias. — ¿Gracias? Vete á paseo; amigo, como no soy el duque de F., ni el conde de P. — ¿Quién se resiste á una sorpresa de esta especie? ¿Quién quiere parecer vano? — No es eso, sino que . . . — Pues si no es eso, me interrumpes, te espero á las dos; en casa se come á la española; temprano. Tengo mucha gente: tendremos al famoso X., que nos improvisará de lo lindo; T. nos cantará de sobremesa una rondaña con su gracia natural; y por la noche, J. cantará y tocará alguna cosilla. — Esto me consoló algún tanto, y fué preciso ceder: un día malo, dije para mí, cualquiera lo pasa; en este mundo para conservar amigos es preciso tener el valor de aguantar sus obsequios. — No faltarás, si no quieres que riñamos. — No faltaré, dije con voz exánime y ánimo decaído, como el zorro que se revuelve inútilmente dentro de la trampa donde se ha dejado coger. — Pues hasta mañana; y me dió un torniscón por despedida. Víle marchar como el labrador ve alejarse la nube de su sembrado, y quedéme discurrendo cómo podían entenderse estas amistades tan hostiles y tan funestas.

Ya habrá conocido el lector, siendo tan perspicaz como yo lo imagino, que mi amigo Braulio está muy lejos de pertenecer á lo que se llama gran mundo y sociedad de buen tono; pero no es tampoco un hombre de la clase inferior, puesto que es un empleado de los de segundo orden, que reúne entre su sueldo y su hacienda cuarenta mil reales de renta, que tiene una cintita atada al ojal y una crucecita á la sombra de la solapa; que es persona, en fin, cuya clase, familia y comodidades de ninguna manera se oponen á que tuviese una educación más escogida y modales más suaves é insinuantes. Mas la vanidad le ha sorprendido por donde ha sorprendido casi siempre á toda ó la mayor parte de nuestra clase media, y á toda nuestra clase baja. Es tal su patriotismo, que dará todas las lindezas del extranjero por un dedo de su país. Esta ceguedad le hace adoptar todas las responsabilidades de tan inconsiderado carño: de paso que defiende que no hay vinos como los españoles, en lo cual bien puede tener razón, defiende que no hay educación como la española; en lo cual bien pudiera no tenerla; á trueque de defender que el cielo de Madrid es purísimo, defenderá que nuestras manolas son las más encantadoras de todas las mujeres; es un hombre, en fin, que vive de exclusivas, á quien le sucede poco más ó menos lo que á una parienta mía, que se muere por las jorbas sólo porque tuvo un novio que llevaba una excrescencia bastante visible sobre entrambos omoplatos.

No hay que hablarle, pues, de estos usos sociales, de estos respetos mutuos, de estas reticencias urbanas, de esa delicadeza de trato que establece entre los hombres una preciosa armonía, diciendo sólo lo que debe agradar y callando siempre lo que puede ofender. Él se muere *por plantarle una fresca al lucero del alba*, como suele decir, y cuando tiene un resentimiento se le *espeta á uno cara á cara*: como tiene trocados todos los frenos, dice de los cumplimientos que ya sabe lo que quiere decir *cumplo y miento*; llama á la urbanidad hipocresía, y á la decencia monadas; á toda cosa buena le aplica un mal apodo; el lenguaje de la finura es para él poco menos que griego: cree que toda la crianza está reducida á decir *Dios guarde á ustedes* al entrar en una sala, y añadir *con permiso de usted* cada vez que se mueve; á preguntar á cada uno por toda su familia, y á despedirse de todo el mundo; cosas todas que así se guardará él de olvidarlas como de tener pacto con franceses. En conclusión, hombre de estos que no saben levantarse para despedirse, sino en corporación con alguno ó algunos otros; que han de dejar humildemente debajo de una mesa su sombrero, que llaman *su cabeza*, y que cuando se hallan en sociedad, por desgracia, sin un socorrido bastón, darian cualquier cosa por no tener manos ni

brazos, porque en realidad no saben en dónde ponerlos, ni qué cosa se puede hacer con los brazos en una sociedad.

Llegaron las dos, y como yo conocía ya á mi Braulio, no me pareció conveniente acicalarme demasiado para ir á comer: estoy seguro de que se hubiera picado: no quise, sin embargo, excusar un frac de color y un pañuelo blanco, cosa indispensable en un día de días en semejantes casas: vestíme, sobre todo, lo más despacio que me fué posible, como se reconcilia al pié del suplicio el infeliz reo, que quisiera tener cien pecados más cometidos que contar para ganar tiempo; era citado á las dos, y entré en la sala á las dos y media.

No quiero hablar de las infinitas visitas ceremoniosas que antes de la hora de comer entraron y salieron en aquella casa, entre las cuales no eran de despreciar todos los empleados de su oficina, con sus señoras y sus niños, y sus capas y sus paraguas, y sus chanclos y sus perritos; déjome en blanco los necios cumplimientos que dijeron al señor de los días; no hablo del inmenso círculo con que guarnecía la sala el concurso de tantas personas heterogéneas, que hablaron de que el tiempo iba á mudar, y de que en invierno suele hacer más frío que en verano. Vengamos al caso: dieron las cuatro, y nos hallamos solos los convidados. Desgraciadamente para mí, el señor de X., que debía divertirnos tanto, gran conecedor de esta clase de convites, había tenido la habilidad de ponerse malo aquella mañana: el famoso T. se hallaba oportunamente comprometido para otro convite; y la señorita que también había de cantar y tocar, estaba ronca en tal disposición que se asombraba ella misma de que se la entendiese una sola palabra, y tenía un panadizo en un dedo. ¡Cuántas esperanzas desvanecidas!

Supuesto que estamos los que hemos de comer, exclamó D. Braulio, vamos á la mesa, querida mía. — Espera un momento, le contestó su esposa casi al oído: con tanta visita yo he faltado algunos momentos de allá dentro y . . . — Bien, pero mira que son las cuatro . . . — Al instante comeremos. — Las cinco eran cuando nos sentábamos á la mesa.

— Señores, dijo el anfitrión al vernos titubear en nuestras respectivas colocaciones: exijo la mayor franqueza: en mi casa no se usan cumplimientos. ¡Ah Fígaro! quiero que estés con toda comodidad: eres poeta, y además estos señores, que saben nuestras íntimas relaciones, no se ofenderán si te prefiero; quítate el frac, no sea que le manches. — ¿Qué tengo de manchar? le respondí mordiéndome los labios. — No importa, te daré una chaqueta mía: siento que no haya para todos. — No hay necesidad. — ¡Oh, sí, sí, mi chaqueta! Toma, mírala: un poco ancha te vendrá. — Pero, Braulio . . . — No hay remedio; no te andes con etiquetas. — En esto

me quita él mismo el frac, *velis nolis*, y quedo sepultado en una cumplida chaqueta rayada, por la cual sólo asomaba los pies y la cabeza, y cuyas mangas no me permitirían comer probablemente. Dile las gracias; al fin el hombre creía hacerme un obsequio.

Los días en que mi amigo no tiene convidados se contenta con una mesa baja, poco más que banquetea de zapatero, porque él y su mujer, como dice, ¿para qué quieren más? Desde la tal mesita, y como se sube el agua del pozo, hace subir la comida hasta la boca, adonde llega goteando después de una larga travesía; porque pensar que estas gentes han de tener una mesa regular, y estar cómodos todos los días del año, es pensar en lo excusado. Ya se concibe, pues, que la instalación de una gran mesa de convite era un acontecimiento en aquella casa; así que se había creído capaz de contener catorce personas que éramos, una mesa donde apenas podriamos comer ocho cómodamente. Hubimos de sentarnos de medio lado, como quien va á arrimar el hombro á la comida, y enablaron los codos de los convidados íntimas relaciones entre sí con la más fraternal inteligencia del mundo. Colocáronme por mucha distinción entre un niño de cinco años, encaramado en unas almohadas, que era preciso enderezar á cada momento, porque las ladeaba la natural turbulencia de mi joven *ad látere*, y entre uno de esos hombres que ocupan en el mundo el espacio y sitio de tres, cuya corpulencia por todos lados se salía de madre de la única silla en que se hallaba sentado, digámoslo así, como en la punta de una aguja. Desdobláronse silenciosamente las servilletas, nuevas á la verdad, porque tampoco eran muebles en uso para todos los días, y fueron izadas por todos aquellos buenos señores á los ojales de sus fraques, como cuerpos intermedios entre las salsas y las solapas.

— Ustedes harán penitencia, señores, exclamó el anfitrión una vez sentado, pero hay que hacerse cargo de que no estamos en Genieys; frase que creyó preciso decir. Necia afectación es ésta, si es mentira, dije yo para mí; y si es verdad, gran torpeza convidar á los amigos á hacer penitencia. Desgraciadamente no tardé mucho en conocer que había en aquella expresión más verdad de lo que mi buen Braulio se figuraba. Interminables y de mal gusto fueron los cumplimientos con que para dar y recibir cada plato nos aburrimos unos á otros. — Sírvase usted. — Hágame usted el favor. — De ninguna manera. — No lo recibiré. — Páselo usted á la señora. — Está bien ahí. — Perdone usted. — Gracias. — Sin etiqueta, señores, exclamó Braulio, y se echó el primero con su propia cuchara. Sucedió á la sopa un cocido surtido de todas las sabrosas impertinencias de este engorrosísimo,

aunque buen plato: cruza por aquí la carne; por allá la verdura; acá los garbanzos; allá el jamón; la gallina por derecha; por medio el tocino; por izquierda los embuchados de Extremadura: siguióle un plato de ternera mechada, que Dios maldiga, y á éste otro, y otros, y otros: mitad traídos de la fonda, que esto basta para que excusemos hacer su elogio; mitad hechos en casa por la criada de todos los días, por una vizcaína auxiliar tomada al intento para aquella festividad, y por el ama de la casa, que en semejantes ocasiones debe estar en todo, y por consiguiente suele no estar en nada.

— Este plato hay que disimularle, decía ésta de unos pichones; están un poco quemados. — Pero, mujer . . . — Hombre, me aparté un momento, y ya sabes lo que son las criadas. — ¡Qué lástima que este pavo no haya estado media hora más al fuego! — Se puso algo tarde. — ¿No les parece á ustedes que está algo ahumado este estofado? — ¿Qué quieres? una no puede estar en todo. — ¡Oh, está excelente! exclamábamos todos dejándonoslo en el plato, excelente! — Este pescado está pasado. — Pues en el despacho de la diligencia del fresco dijeron que acababa de llegar: ¡el criado es tan bruto! — ¿De dónde se ha traído este vino? — En eso no tienes razón, porque es . . . — Es malísimo. — Estos diálogos cortos iban exornados con una infinidad de miradas furtivas del marido para advertirle continuamente á su mujer alguna negligencia, queriendo darnos á entender entrambos á dos que estaban muy al corriente de todas las fórmulas que en semejantes casos se reputan finura, y que todas las torpezas eran hijas de los criados, que nunca han de aprender á servir. Pero estas negligencias se repetían tan á menudo, servían tan poco ya las miradas, que le fué preciso al marido recurrir á los pellizcos y á los pisotones; y ya la señora, que á duras penas había podido hacerse superior hasta entonces á las persecuciones de su esposo, tenía la faz encendida y los ojos llorosos. — Señora, no se incomode usted por eso, le dijo el que á su lado tenía. — ¡Ah! Les aseguro á ustedes que no vuelvo á hacer estas cosas en caso: Ustedes no saben lo que es esto; otra vez, Braulio, iremos á la fonda y no tendrás . . . — Usted, señora mía, hará lo que . . . — ¡Braulio! ¡Braulio! — Una tormenta espantosa estaba á punto de estallar; empero todos los convidados á porfia probamos á aplacar aquellas disputas, hijas del deseo de dar á entender la mayor delicadeza, para lo cual no fué poca parte la manía de Braulio y la expresión concluyente que dirigió de nuevo á la concurrencia acerca de la inutilidad de los cumplimientos, que así llama él al estar bien servido y al saber comer. ¿Hay nada más ridículo que estas gentes que quieren pasar por

finas en medio de la más crasa ignorancia de los usos sociales? ¿que para obsequiarle le obligan á usted á comer y beber por fuerza, y no le dejan medio de hacer su gusto? ¿Por qué habrá gentes que sólo quieren comer con alguna más limpieza los días de días?

Á todo esto, el niño que á mi izquierda tenía, hacía saltar las aceitunas á un plato de magras con tomate, y una vino á parar á uno de mis ojos, que no volvió á ver claro en todo el día; y el señor gordo de mi derecha había tenido la precaución de ir dejando en el mantel, al lado de mi pan, los huesos de las suyas, y los de las aves que había roído; el convidado de enfrente, que se preciaba de trinchador, se había encargado de hacer la autopsia de un capón, ó sea gallo, que esto nunca se supo; fuese por la edad avanzada de la víctima, fuese por los ningunos conocimientos anatómicos del victimario, jamás parecieron las coyunturas. — ¡Este capón no tiene coyunturas! exclamaba el infeliz sudando y forcejeando, más como quien cava que como quien trincha. ¡Cosa más rara! En una de las embestidas resbaló el tenedor sobre el animal como si tuviese escama, y el capón, violentamente despedido, pareció querer tomar su vuelo como en sus tiempos más felices, y se posó en el mantel tranquilamente como pudiera en un palo de un gallinero.

El susto fué general, y la alarma llegó á su colmo cuando un surtidor de caldo, impulsado por el animal furioso, saltó á inundar mi limpiezísima camisa: levántase rápidamente á este punto el trinchador con ánimo de cazar el ave prófuga, y al precipitarse sobre ella, una botella que tiene á la derecha, con la que tropieza su brazo, abandonando su posición perpendicular, derrama un abundante caño de Valdepeñas sobre el capón y el mantel; corre el vino, auméntase la algarazara, llueve la sal sobre el vino para salvar el mantel, para salvar la mesa se ingiere por debajo de él una servilleta, y una eminencia se levanta sobre el teatro de tantas ruinas. Una criada toda azorada retira el capón en el plato de su salsa; al pasar sobre mí hace una pequeña inclinación, y una lluvia maléfica de grasa desciende, como el rocío sobre los prados, á dejar eternas huellas en mi pantalón color de perla: la angustia y el aturdimiento de la criada no conocen término; retirase atolondrada sin acertar con las excusas; al volverse tropieza con el criado, que traía una docena de platos limpios y una salvilla con las copas para los vinos generosos, y toda aquella máquina viene al suelo con el más horroroso estruendo y confusión. ¡Por San Pedro! exclama dando una voz Braulio, difundida ya sobre sus facciones una palidez mortal, al paso que brota fuego el rostro de su esposa. — Pero sigamos, señores, no ha sido nada, añade volviendo en sí.

¡Oh honradas casas, donde un modesto cocido y un principio final constituyen la felicidad diaria de una familia! Huid del tumulto de un convite de días. Sólo la costumbre de comer y servirse bien diariamente puede evitar semejantes destrozos.

¿Hay más desgracias? ¡Santo cielo! ¡Si las hay para mí, infeliz! Doña Juana, la de los dientes negros y amarillos, me alarga de su plato y con su propio tenedor una fineza, que es indispensable aceptar y tragar; el niño se divierte en despedir á los ojos de los concurrentes los huesos disparados de las cerezas; D. Leandro me hace probar el manzanilla exquisito, que he rehusado, en su misma copa, que conserva las indelebles señales de sus labios grasientos; mi gordo fuma ya sin cesar y me hace cañón de su chimenea; por fin ¡oh última de las desgracias! crece el alboroto y la conversación; roncas ya las voces piden versos y décimas, y no hay más poeta que Figaro. — Es preciso. — Tiene V. que decir algo, claman todos. — Désele pié forzado; que diga una copla á cada uno. — Yo le daré el pié: *Á don Braulio en este día.* — ¡Señores, por Dios! — No hay remedio. — En mi vida he improvisado. — No se haga usted el chiquito. — Me marcharé. — Cerrad la puerta. — No se sale de aquí sin decir algo. Y digo versos por fin; y vomito disparates; y los celebran, y crece la bulla, y el humo, y el infierno.

Á Dios gracias logro escaparme de aquel nuevo *Pandemonio*. Por fin, ya respiro el aire fresco y desembarazado de la calle; ya no hay necios, ya no hay castellanos viejos á mi alrededor.

¡Santo Dios! Yo te doy gracias, exclamo respirando, como el ciervo que acaba de escaparse de una docena de perros y que oye ya apenas sus ladridos; para de aquí en adelante no te pido riquezas, no te pido empleos, ni honores; librame de los convites caseros y de días de días; librame de estas casas en que es un convite un acontecimiento; en que sólo se pone la mesa decente para los convidados; en que creen hacer obsequios cuando dan mortificaciones; en que se hacen finezas; en que se dicen versos; en que hay niños; en que hay gordos; en que reina, en fin, la brutal franqueza de los castellanos viejos. Quiero que, si caigo de nuevo en tentaciones semejantes, me falte un *roast-beef*, desaparezca del mundo el *beef-steak*, se anonaden los timbales de macarrones, no haya pavos en Perigueux, ni pasteles en Perigord, se sequen los viñedos de Burdeos, y beban, en fin, todos, menos yo, la deliciosa espuma del Champagne.

Concluída mi deprecación mental, corro á mi habitación á despojarme de mi camisa y mi pantalón, reflexionando en

mi interior que no son unos todos los hombres, puesto que los de un mismo país, acaso de un mismo entendimiento, no tienen las mismas costumbres ni la misma delicadeza, cuando ven las cosas de tan distinta manera. Vistome y vuelvo á olvidar tan funesto día entre el corto número de gentes que piensan, que viven sujetas al provechoso yugo de una buena educación libre y desembarazada, y que fingen acaso estimarse y respetarse mutuamente para no incomodarse, al paso que las otras hacen ostentación de incomodarse, y se ofenden y se maltratan, queriéndose y estimándose tal vez verdaderamente.

[Mariano José de Larra.]



Alphabetical List of the Irregular Verbs.

N.B.—The verbs printed in *bolder type* are entirely irregular. *Excluded* are the verbs with *double* participles, enumerated at the end of Part I.

A.

- Abastecer*, to supply with provisions, to victual (a ship); conjug. 159.
abnegar, to deny oneself 148.
abolir, to abolish 192.
aborrecer, to abhor 159.
abrir, to open 187.
absolver, to absolve 153, 187.
abstenerse, to abstain 35.
abstraer, to abstract 179, 188.
abuñolar, to puff out 153.
acaecer, to happen 159, 192.
acertar, to guess 145
aclocar, to brood 153.
acollar, to earth up 153.
acontecer, to happen 159, 192.
acordar, to agree; —*se*, to re-collect 153.
acornar, to gore 153.
acostar, to convey to bed; —*se*, to go to bed 153.
acrecentar, to increase 148.
adestrar, to direct, to put to rights 148.
adherir, to adhere 167.
adolecer, to fall ill 159.
adormecer, to lull to sleep 159.
adormecerse, to fall asleep 159.
adormir, to lull 176.
adquirir, to acquire 148.
aducir, to bring about 160.
advertir, to inform, to warn 167.
aferrar, to grapple 148.
aflaquecerse, to get thin 159.
afluir, to run into 168.
afollar, to blow against, to breathe at 153.
aforar, to enfeoff, to rent 153.
agorar, to foretell 153.
agradecer, to be grateful 159.
aguerrir, to train in war 169.
alborecer, to dawn 125, 159.
alebrarse, to crouch 148.
alentar, to breathe 148.
aliquebrar, to break a wing 148.
almorzar, to breakfast 153.
amanecer, to dawn 125, 159.
amoblar, to furnish 153.
amoliar, to grind, to sharpen 153.
amortecer, to benumb 159, 192*.
andar, to go, to walk 172.
aneblar, to get foggy 125, 148.
anochecer, to grow dark 125, 159.
anteceder, to foresay 173.
anteponer, to prefer, to place before 178.
antojarse, to covet, to fancy 192.
apacentar, to graze, to pasture 148.
aparecer, to appear 159.
apetecer, to desire 159.
aporcar, to cover with earth 153.
aportar, to go ashore 153.
apostar, to bet 153.
apretar, to press together 148.
aprobar, to approve 153.
argüir, to argue 168.
arrecirse, to become numb 192*.
arrendar, to lease, to rent 148.
arrepentirse, to repent 167
ascender, to ascend 148.
asentar, to set 148.

asentir, to consent 167.
aserrar, to saw 148.
asestar, to aim (hit) 148.
asir, to seize 172.
asolar, to destroy, to desolate 153.
asoldar, to hire 153.
asonar, to accord, to chime in 153.
atañer, to appertain 164, 192.
atender, to wait 148.
atentar, to grope, to fumble 148.
aterecerse, to grow stiff with cold 159, 192*.
aterrar, to fling down 148.
atestar, to fill with 148.
atraer, to attract 179.
atravesar, to perforate, to bar, to block 148.
atribuir, to attribute 168.
atronar, to make a great noise 153.
aventirse, to agree 180.
aventar, to fan, to kindle; —*se*, to run away 148.
avergonzar, to shame 153.
azolar, to work with the axe 153.

B.

Benedicir, to bless 173, 174.
bienquerer, to esteem 178, 188.
blanquecer, to blanch coin 153.
bruñir, to polish 164.
bullir, to bustle 164.

C.

Caber, to be contained (there is room for it in smthg.) 172.
caer, to fall 173.
calentar, to warm 148.
carecer, to want, to lack 159.
cegar, to blind, to dazzle 148.
ceñir, to gird 163, 164.
cerner, to bolt (meal) 148.
cerrar, to shut 148.
cimentar, to cement, to lay the foundation 148.
circuir, to surround 168.
clarecer, to dawn 125, 159.
clocar, to cluck 153.
cocer, to cook 153, 156, 159*.
colar, to filter, to bestow 153.
colegir, to gather (infer) 163.
colgar, to hang, to suspend 153.

comedirse, to moderate oneself 163.
comenzar, to begin 148.
compadecer, to pity 159.
comparecer, to appear 159.
competir, to emulate 163.
complacer, to please 159.
complañir, to take pity 164.
componer, to compose 178, 187.
comprobar, to prove 153.
concebir, to conceive 163.
concernir, to concern 167, 192***.
concertar, to arrange; —*se*, to concert 148.
concluir, to finish 168.
concordar, to accord, to agree 153.
condescender, to condescend 148.
condoler, to condole, to pity 153.
conducir, to lead 160.
conferir, to confer 167.
confesar, to confess 148.
confluir, to meet (of rivers) 168.
conmover, to touch, to stir 153.
conocer, to know 159.
conseguir, to succeed 163.
consentir, to consent 167.
consolar, to console 153.
consonar, to accord 153.
constituir, to constitute 168.
constreñir, to constrain 163, 164.
construir, to build 168.
contar, to count, to tell 153.
contender, to fight 148.
contener, to contain 35.
contorcer, to distort 153.
contradecir, to contradict 173.
contraer, to contract, to incur 179.
contrahacer, to counterfeit 177.
contraponer, to compare (oppose) 178.
contravenir, to transgress (violate) 180.
contribuir, to contribute 168.
controvertir, to quarrel 167.
convalecer, to be convalescent
convenir, to agree 180. [159].
convertir, to convert 167.
corregir, to correct 163.
corroer, to corrode 193.
costar, to cost 153.
crecer, to grow 159.
cubrir, to cover 187.

D.

- Dar*, to give 173.
decaer, to decay 173.
decentar, to cut 148.
dectr, to tell 173.
decrecer, to diminish 159.
deducir, to deduct 160.
defender, to defend 148.
deferir, to defer 167.
degollar, to behead 153.
demoler, to demolish, to destroy 153.
demonstrar, to prove 153.
denegar, to deny 148.
denostar, to offend, to injure 153.
dentar, to indent, to cut teeth 148.
deponer, to depose 178, 187.
derrenegar, to detest 148.
derrengar, to lame 148.
derretir, to melt 163.
derrocar, to fling down, to render downcast 153.
derruir, to demolish 168.
desacertar, to cheat 148.
desacordar, to disagree, to put out of tune 153.
desaforar, to deprive of a right 153.
desalentar, to discourage 148.
desamoblar, to unfurnish 153.
desandar, to go back the same road 172.
desaparecer, to disappear 159.
desapretar, to loosen 148.
desaprobar, to disapprove 153.
desarrendar, to unbridle 148.
desasir, to let go 172.
desasosegar, to trouble 153.
desatender, to disregard 148.
desatentar, to disconcert 148.
desaventir(se), to disagree 180.
descabullirse, to sneak off 164.
descender, to descend 148.
desceñir, to ungird 163, 164.
descolgar, to take down 153.
descollar, to overtop 153.
descomedirse, to behave unman-nerly 163.
desconcertar, to disconcert 153.
desconocer, not to know 159.
desconsolar, to render disconso-late 153.
descontar, to discount 153.
desconvenir(se), to disagree 180.
descornar, to break off horns 153.
desdar, to untwist a rope 173.
desdectr, to countermand 173.
desembravecer, to tame 159.
desembrutecer, to lose one's roughness 159.
desempedrar, to unpave (a street, etc.) 148.
desencerrar, to free, to set at liberty 148.
desencordar, to unstring 153.
desengrosar, to diminish(thin)153.
desenmohecer, to free from rust 159.
desentenderse, to feign ignorance 148.
desenterrar, to unbury, to dig out 148.
desentolver, to unroll 153, 187.
deservir, to be disobliging 163.
desfallecer, to faint 159.
desflocar, to unravel 153.
deshacer, to undo 177.
deshelar, to thaw 125, 148.
desherrar, to unfetter, to take off a horse-shoe 148.
desleir, to dissolve 163.
deslucir, to tarnish 159.
desmembrar, to dismember 148.
desmentir, to give the lie, to deny 167.
desmerecer, to demerit 159.
desnevar, to thaw 125, 148.
desobedecer, to disobey 159.
desobstruir, to clear away 168.
desoir, not to listen to (disobey) 173.
desolar, to desolate (devastate) 153.
desoldar, to unsolder 153.
desollar, to flay, to strip off 153.
desosar, to take the bone out (of meat) 153.
desovar, to lay eggs, to spawn 153.
desparecer, to disappear 159.
despedir, to discharge (a servant) 163.
despedirse, to take leave, to say goodbye 163.

- despernar*, to cut off a leg, to lame a leg 148.
despertar, to awake 148, 189.
desplacer, to displease 159, 193.
desplegar, to unfold 148, 150¹.
despoblar, to depopulate 153.
desteñir, to lose colour 163, 164.
desterrar, to banish 148.
destituir, to deprive, to dismiss 168.
destrocar, to break off a bargain 153.
destruir, to destroy 168.
desvanecer, to vanish 159.
desvergonzarse, to behave in a shameless manner 153.
detener, to stop 35.
detraer, to detract 179.
devolver, to give back 153, 187.
dezmarrar, to pay tithe 148.
diferir, to defer 167.
digerir, to digest 167.
diluir, to dissolve 168.
discerner, to discern 148.
discernir, to distinguish 167.
disconvenir, to disagree 180.
discordar, to be discordant 153.
disentir, to dissent 167.
disminuir, to diminish 168.
disolver, to dissolve 153, 187.
disonar, to be dissonant 153.
dispertar, to awake 148, 189.
disponer, to dispose 178, 187.
distender, to distend 148.
distráer, to distract, to amuse 179.
distribuir, to distribute 168.
divertir, to divert, to amuse 167.
doler, to ache, to give pain 153.
dormir, to sleep 176.
- E.**
- Elegir*, to select 163.
embebecer, to astonish 159.
embellecer, to embellish 159.
embestir, to attack 163.
embravecere, to become furious 159.
embrutecer, to become brutal 159.
emendar (*enmendar*), to correct, to mend 148.
emparentar, to be related by marriage 148.
empedrar, to pave 148.
- empequeñecer*, to lessen 159.
empesar, to begin 148.
empobrecer, to become poor 159.
emporcar, to soil 153.
enaltecer, to elevate, to praise 159.
enardecer, to inflame 159.
encalvecer, to grow bald 159.
encandecer, to heat to a white heat 159.
encanecer, to become grey 159.
encarecer, to render dear 159.
encender, to light, to set on fire 148.
encensar, to perfume 148.
encerrar, to imprison, to shut in 148.
enclocar, to fish; to cluck 153.
encoclar see *enclocar*.
encomendar, to recommend 148.
encontrar, to encounter, to meet 153.
encorar, to cover with leather 153.
encordar, to string, to chord 153.
encovar, to put in the cellar 153.
encruelcerse, to become cruel 159.
encubertar, to cover 148.
endentar, to join with a mortise 148.
endentecer, to cut the teeth 159.
endurecer, to harden 159.
enflaquecer, to get thin 159.
enfurecerse, to get enraged 159.
engrandecer, to enlarge 159.
engreir, to intrude 163.
engrosar, to become stout 153.
engullir, to gobble 164.
enhambrentar, to starve 148.
enhestar, to raise, to put upright 148.
enloquecer, to madden 159.
enmendar, to mend, to reform 148.
ennegrecer, to blacken 159.
ennoblecer, to make noble 159.
enorgullecer, to make proud 159.
enriquecer, to enrich 159.
enrodar, to break upon or under the wheel 153.
enrojecer, to redden 159.
enronquecer, to become hoarse 159.
ensalmar, to mingle with salt 153.

ensangrentar, to stain with blood 148.
ensoberbecer, to make proud 159.
ensoñar, to dream 153.
ensordecet, to deafen, to become deaf 159.
entallecer, to sprout 159.
entender, to understand 148.
entenebrecese, to grow dark 125.
enternecer, to soften 159. [159.
enterrar, to inter, to bury 148.
entontecer, to grow foolish 159.
entorpecer, to numb, to stupefy, to hinder 159.
entortar, to render tortuous 153.
entrededir, to interdict 173.
entregerir, to intermix 167.
entrelucir, to glimmer 159.
entremorir, to die away gradually 177.
entreoír, to hear indistinctly 173.
entreparescerse, to be transparent 159.
entrepernar, to put one's legs between someone's as in sitting 148.
entreponer, to interpose 178.
entretener, to delay, amuse 35.
entrever, to have a glimpse 180.
entristecer, to sadden 159.
entumescerse, to inflame 159.
envanecer, to make vain 159.
envejecer, to get old 159.
enverdecer, to grow green 159.
invertir, (*obsol.*) to invest 163.
envilecer, to degrade 159.
envolver, to wrap up, to envelop, to involve 153, 187.
equivaler, to be equivalent 179.
erguir, to erect, to raise up haughtily (*pres. yergo*) 167.
errar, to be mistaken, to wander (*pres. yerro*) 148.
escabullirse, to disappear 164.
escarmentar, to sharpen one's wit, to take warning 148.
escarnecer, to scoff 159.
esclarecer, to lighten 125, 159.
escocer, to smart 153.
escribir, to write 187.
esforzar, to encourage 153.
establecer, to establish 159.

estar, to be 43.
estatuir, to establish (*enact*) 168.
estercar, to manure 148.
estregar, to rub 148.
estremecer, to shake 159.
estreñir, to obstruct, to constipate 163, 164.
excluir, to exclude 168.
expedir, to forward 163, 189.
exponer, to expose, to explain 178, 187.
extender, to stretch out 148, 189.
extraer, to extract 179.
extremecer, to tremble 159.

F.

Fallecer, to die 159.
favorecer, to favour 159.
florecer, to bloom, to flourish 159.
fluir, to flow 168.
follar, to blow with the bellows 153.
fortalecer, to fortify 159.
forzar, to force, to compel 153.
fregar, to rub, to wash up 148.
freír, to fry 167, 189.

G.

Gañir, to howl 164.
gemir, to lament 163.
gobernar, to govern 148.
gruir, to crank 168.
gruñir, to grunt, to grumble 164.
guañir, to grunt 164.
guarecerse, to shelter 159.
guarnecer, to garnish, trim 159.

H.

Haber, to have 32.
hacer, to do 177.
heder, to stink 148.
helar, to freeze 125, 148.
henchir, to fill 163, 164.
hender, to split 148.
heñir, to knead 163, 164.
herir, to wound 167.
herrar, to shoe a horse 148.
hervir, to boil, to seethe 167.
holgar, to repose 153.
hollar, to tread upon, to trample on 153.
huir, to flee 168.
humedecer, to moisten 159.

I.

Imbuir, to imbue 168.
impedir, to prevent 163.
imponer, to impose, to deposit 178, 187.
imprimir, to print 187.
improbar, to disapprove 153.
incensar, to incense, to perfume 148.
incluir, to include, to enclose 168.
incoar, to begin 192.
indisponer, to make ill disposed 178, 187.
inducir, to induce 160.
inferir, to follow infer 167.
infernar, to vex, to make angry 148.
influir, to influence 168.
ingerir, to intrude, to inject, to insert, to graft 167.
inquirir, to inquire 148.
inscribir, to inscribe 187.
inseguir, to follow 163.
instituir, to institute 168.
instruir, to instruct, to teach 168.
interdecir, to interdict 173.
interponer, to interpose 178, 187.
intervenir, to intervene, to mediate 180.
introducir, to introduce 160.
invernar, to spend the winter 148.
invertir, to turn round 167.
investir, to invest 163.
ir, to go 177.

J.

Jimenzar, to ripple flax 148.
jugar, to play 148.

L.

Languidecer, to languish 159.
liquefacer, to liquefy 177.
loar, to praise 193.
lobreguecer, to grow or make dark 125, 159.
lucir, to shine 159.
luir, to free from taxes 168.

Ll.

Llover, to rain 125, 153.

M.

Maldecir, to curse 173, 174.
malherir, to wound badly 167.

malquerer, to dislike, to hate 178.
malsonar, to offend (one's ears) 153.
maltraer, to treat ill 179.
mancornar, to tie by the horns 153.
manifestar, to manifest 148.
mantener, to maintain, to keep 35.
medir, to measure 163.
melar, to make honey 148.
mentar, to mention 148.
mentir, to lie 167.
merecer, to merit, to deserve 159.
merendar, to take one's afternoon collation 148.
moblar, to furnish 153.
mohecer, to mould 159.
moler, to grind 153.
morder, to bite 153.
morir, to die 177, 187.
mostrar, to show 153.
mover, to move 153.
muir, to milk 168.
mullir, to beat up, to soften 164.
muñir, to call to a meeting 164.

N.

Nacer, to be born 159.
negar, to deny 148.
negrecer, to blacken 159.
nevar, to snow 125, 148.

O.

Obedecer, to obey 159.
oscurecer, to darken, to grow dark 125, 159.
obstruir, to obstruct 168.
obtener, to obtain, get 35.
ofrecer, to offer 159.
oir, to hear 173.
oler, to smell (pres. *huelo* etc., *olemos* etc.) 153.
oscurecer, to darken, to grow dark 125, 153.

P.

Pacer, to pasture 159, 193.
padecer, to suffer 159.
palidecer, to become pale 159.
parecer, to seem 159.
pedir, to ask for, to order 163.

pensar, to think 148.
perder, to lose 148.
perecer, to perish 159.
permanecer, to remain 159.
perniquebrar, to break (the) legs 148.
perquirir, to search for 148.
perseguir, to persecute 163.
pertenecer, to belong 159.
pervertir, to pervert 167.
pesar, to repent, to weigh 193.
pimpollecer, to bud 159.
placer, to please 159, 193.
plañir, to lament 164.
plastecer, to size 159.
plegar, to fold 148.
poblar, to populate 153.
poder, to be able, can 177.
podrir, to rot 178.
poner, to put, to place 178, 187.
posponer, to postpone 178, 187.
predecir, to predict 173.
predisponer, to predispose 178, 187.
preferir, to prefer 167.
premortir, to die before another 177, 187.
presentir, to forebode 167.
presuponer, to presuppose 178, 187.
prevaler, to prevail 179.
prevalecer, to prevail 159.
prevenir, to warn, to order 180.
prever, to foresee 180.
probar, to prove, to try 153.
producir, to produce 160.
proferir, to proffer 167.
promover, to promote 153.
proponer, to propose 178, 187.
proscribir, to proscribe 187.
proseguir, to continue 163.
prostituir, to prostitute 168.
pudrir, to rot 178.

Q.

Quebrar, to break 148.
querer, to like, want, will, wish 178.

R.

Raer, to scrape, to grate 193.
rarefacer, to rarify 177.
readvertir, to warn again 167.
reaparecer, to reappear 159.

reblandecer, to soften 159.
rebullir, to stir 164.
recaer, to fall back, to relapse 173.
recalentar, to warm again 148.
recentar, to leaven 148.
receñir, to gird tight 163, 164.
recluir, to seclude 168.
recocer, to boil again 153, 156.
recolar, to strain a second time 153.
recomendar, to recommend 148.
recomponer, to mend again 178, 187.
reconducir, to renew a lease 160.
reconocer, to recognise 159.
reconstituir, to re-establish 168.
reconstruir, to rebuild 168.
recontar, to count again 153.
reconvalecer, to be convalescent 159.
reconvenir, to recriminate 180.
recordar, to remind, to awake; —*se*, to recollect 153.
recostarse, to lie down on one side 153.
recrudescer, to increase severely (an illness, etc.) 159.
redargüir, to retort 168.
reducir, to reduce 160.
reelegir, to re-elect 163.
referir, to refer 167.
reflorecer, to blossom again 159.
refluir, to flow back 168.
reforzar, to reinforce 153.
refregar, to rub hard 148.
refreír, to fry well 163.
regañar, to howl again 164.
regar, to water 148.
regimentar, to organise 148.
regir, to govern 163.
regoldar, to eruct 153.
regruñir, to grunt again 164.
rehacer, to do anew 177.
rehenchir, to fill up again 163, 164.
reherir, to wound a second time 167.
reherrar, to shoe a second time 148.
rehervir, to boil again 167.
rehollar, to tread upon 153.

- rehuir*, to withdraw 168.
rehumedecer, to moisten again 159.
reir, to laugh 163.
rejuvenecer, to grow young again 159.
relucir, to glitter 159.
remendar, to mend 148.
remesar, to pull out hair 148.
remolar, to load dice 153.
remoler, to grind 153.
remover, to remove 153.
remullir, to mollify 164.
renacer, to be born again, to regenerate 159.
rendir, to render 163.
renegar, to forswear 148.
renovar, to renew 153.
reñir, to fight, to scold 163, 164.
reoir, to hear again 173.
repacer, to graze up 159, 193.
repadecer, to suffer extremely 159.
repedir, to ask repeatedly 163.
repensar, to think over 148.
repetir, to repeat 163.
replegar, to fold often, to fall back 148.
repoblar, to repeople 153.
repodrir, to rot excessively 178.
reponer, to answer 178, 187.
reprobar, to reprobate, to scold 153.
reproducir, to reproduce 160.
repudrir, to rot excessively 178.
requibrar, to break into little pieces, to flirt 148.
requerer, to love intensely 178.
requerir, to request 167.
resaber, to know very well 179.
resalir, to jut out 179.
rescontrar, to balance an (account), to compare 153.
resegar, to reap again 148.
resembrar, to resow 148.
resentirse, to resent 167.
resollar, to breathe, to fan 153.
resolver, to resolve 153, 187.
resonar, to resound 153.
resplandecer, to shine 159.
resquebrar, to begin to break 148.
restablecer, to re-establish 159.
restituir, to restore 168.
restregar, to rub, to scrub 148.
restrañir, to bind 164.
retallecer, to sprout again 159.
retener, to retain 35.
retemblar, to tremble again 148.
retentar, to threaten with a new fit (of illness, etc.) 148.
reteñir, to dye again 163, 164.
retoñecer, to shoot again 159.
retorcer, to twist, etc. (pres. *retuerzo*) 153.
retostar, to toast again, to toast brown 153.
retraer, to retract 179.
retribuir, to reward 168.
retronar, to thunder again 153.
retrotraer, to bring back (past facts, etc.) 179.
revejecer, to get prematurely old 159.
revenir, to come back 180.
reventar, to burst 148.
rever, to see again 180.
reverdecer, to grow green again, to regain vigour 159.
reverter, to pour 148.
revestir, to clothe anew 163.
revolar, to fly, to flee again 153.
revolcarse, to welter, to roll, to wallow 153.
revolver, to stir, to disarrange 153, 187.
robustecer, to invigorate 159.
rodar, to roll 153.
roer, to nibble 193.
rogar, to beg 153.

S.

- Saber*, to know 179.
salir, to go out 179.
salpimentar, to season with salt and pepper 148.
salpullir, to break out in pimples 164.
sarpullir, see *salpullir*.
sarmentar, to gather cut-off vine-shoots 148.
satisfacer, to satisfy 177.
seducir, to seduce 160.
segar, to cut, to mow 148.
seguir, to follow 163.
sembrar, to sow 148.
sementar, to sow 148.
sentar, to put; —*se*, to sit down 148.

sentir, to feel 167.
ser, to be 40.
serrar, to saw 148.
servir, to serve 163.
sobrecrecer, to outgrow 159.
sobreentender, to understand something not actually expressed 148.
sobreponer, to exalt 178, 187.
sobresebrar, to sow over again 148.
sobresolar, to pave anew 153.
sobresalir, to surpass, to excel 179.
sobrevenir, to happen 180.
sobreventar, to gain the weather gauge of another ship 148.
sobrevertirse, to overflow 148.
sobrevestir, to put on 163.
sofreir, to fry slightly 163.
solar, to sole 153.
soldar, to solder 153.
soler, to use 153.
sollar, to blow (with bellows) 153.
soltar, to loosen 153, 187.
solver, to loosen 187.
somover, to remove (earth) 153.
sonar, to sound; —*se*, to blow one's nose 153.
sonreir, to smile 163.
soñar, to dream 153.
sonrodarse, to stick in the mud (a carriage) 153.
sorregar, to water in another direction 148.
sosegar, to tranquilize 148.
sostener, to hold, maintain, keep 35.
soterrar, to bury 148.
subarrender, to sub-let 148.
subentender, to understand what is tacitly meant 148.
subseguir, to immediately follow 163.
substituir (*sustituir*), to substitute 168.
substraer, to subtract, to steal 179.
subtender, to subtend 148.
subvenir, to provide 108.
subvertir, to subvert 167.
sugerir, to suggest 167.
superponer 178, 187.

supervenir 180.
suponer 178, 187.
sustituir see *substituir* 168.
sustraer see *substraer* 179.

T.

Tallecer, to shoot, sprout 159.
tañer, to play 164.
temblar, to tremble 148.
tender, to tend, to extend 148.
tener, to hold, to have 35.
tentar, to touch, to try 148.
teñir, to dye 163, 164.
torcer, to turn, to wring (pres. *tuerzo*) 153, 191.
tostar, to toast 153.
traducir, to translate 160.
traer, to bring 179.
transcender, to transcend, to transpire 148.
transferir, to transfer 167.
transfregar, to rub 148.
translucir, to be transparent, to conjecture 159.
transponer, to transpose, to set (of the sun) 178, 187.
trascender, to mount over, to pass 148.
trascolar, to strain 153.
trascordarse, to forget 153.
trasegar, to pour over, to transfuse 148.
trasferir, to transfer 167.
trasfregar see *transfregar* 159.
traslucirse, to shine through 159.
trusoir, to misunderstand 173.
trasonar, to form a visionary scheme, to dream 153.
trasponer see *transponer* 178, 187.
trastrocar, to invert the order of things 153.
trasverter, to overflow 148.
trasvolar, to fly across 153.
trocar, to exchange 153.
tronar, to thunder 153.
tropezar, to stumble 148.
tullir, to cripple 164.
tumefacerse, to swell 177, 192*.

V.

Valer, to be worth 179.
venir, to come 180.

ventar, to get wind of 148.
ver, to see 180, 187.
verdecer, to grow green 159.
verter, to shed 148.
vestir, to clothe 163.
volar, to fly 153.
volcar, to upset (a carriage);
—*se*, to wallow, to welter 153.
volver, to turn back, to do once
more 153, 187.

Y.

Yacer, to lie 193.
yuxtaponer, to put close by
178, 187.

Z.

Zabullir, to plunge 164.
zaherir, to scold 167.
zambullir see *zabullir* 164.

Vocabulary.

Spanish-English.

A.

- á*, at, in; to, for.
 — *orillas*, at the side (brink, border, edge, etc.).
aborrecer, to abhor, to detest; pag. 161.
abrigo, *m.*, coat.
abuelo, grandfather.
acabar, to finish, to terminate.
acaso, perhaps.
aceite, *m.*, oil.
aceituna, *f.* olive.
aceptar, to accept.
acertar, to succeed in, to guess; page 148.
acomodarse á, to conform oneself to
actor, *m.*, actor.
acusar, to accuse.
adivinar, to guess.
admirable, admirable, wonderful.
adornar, to adorn.
afable, kind, friendly.
afamado, *-a*, famous.
afigir, to afflict; page 92, 4.
agradar, to please.
agradecido, *-a*, thankful, grateful.
ahora, now.
al, contr. for *á el*, to the.
 — *rededor*, round, round about.
alabar, to praise.
alcanzar, to obtain, to get, page 92, 3.
aldea, *f.*, village.
alegre, merry.
- alentar*, to encourage; page 149.
alfonso (el), the alphonse (a gold coin) = 25 pesetas = 20 sh.
algo, something.
alma, (*el*), *f.*, the soul.
almacén, *m.*, shop (store).
almendra, *f.*, almond.
alto, *-a*, high.
ama. (he, she) loves.
amable, amiable.
amado, loved.
aman, (they) love.
América, *f.*, America.
amigo, *m.*, friend.
amistad, *f.*, friendship.
amo, master.
ancho, *-a*, broad, large.
andar, to walk, to have intercourse with, to associate with; page 172.
 — *con cuidado*, to take care.
ánimo, *m.*, courage.
anunciar, to announce, to impart.
año, *m.*, year.
apartarse, to stand away, to keep back.
apenas, scarcely.
apreciar, to appreciate, to esteem.
aprender, to learn.
apuesta, *f.*, wager.
apuro, *m.*, want, necessity.
aquí, here.
 — *está*, here is.
 — *están*, here are.
árbol, *m.*, tree.
arquitectura, *f.*, architecture.

arrabal, *m.*, suburb.
arriesgar, to be at stake, to risk,
 page 91, 2.
asegurar, to assure.
asesinar, to murder.
asunto, *m.*, object, matter.
atreverse, to dare.
ausencia, *f.*, absence.
Austria, Austria.
autor, author.
ave, (*el*), *f.*, bird.
avergonzar(se), to be ashamed,
 pp. 92, 3; 154.
ayer, yesterday.
azúcar, *m.*, sugar.

B.

baile, *m.*, ball.
bajo, *-a*, low.
balcón, *m.*, balcony.
barato, *-a*, cheap.
barco, *m.*, ship.
barquero, *m.*, boatman.
bebe, drinks.
bebedero, *m.*, the trough, bird's
 trough.
bien, well, all right.
 — (*el*), the good.
bienes (los), the fortune.
billete de banco, *m.*, bank note.
bolsa, *f.*, purse, the Exchange.
bolsillo, *m.*, pocket, purse.
bondad, *f.*, the goodness.
borrasca, *f.*, thunderstorm.
bota, *f.*, boot, cask.
buey, *m.*, (pl. *bueyes*) ox.
Burdeos, Bordeaux.
buscar, to seek, to look for, to
 search; page 91, 1.

C.

cabal juicio, *el*, the good sense.
caballero, gentleman, Mr., Sir.
caballo, *m.*, horse.
cadena, *f.*, chain.
café, *m.*, coffee, coffee-house.
caja, *f.*, box.
 — *de cerillas (de fósforos)*, *f.*,
 box of matches.
 — *de cigarros*, *f.*, cigar-box.
cajetilla de cigarrillos, *f.*, packet
 of cigarettes.
calor, *m.*, heat.

callar, to be silent.
calle, *f.*, street.
camino, *m.*, road, way.
 — *real*, *m.*, (or *carretera*, *f.*)
 main-road.
campestre, rural.
campo, *m.*, camp.
canción, *f.*, song.
cansado, *-a*, tired.
cansar, to tire; *cansarse*, to get
 tired.
capa, *f.*, the (Spanish) cloak.
capaz, capable.
capital, *f.*, the capital, metro-
 polis.
capital, *m.*, the capital (money),
 fund.
capitán, captain.
carga, *f.*, burden, weight.
carne, *f.*, meat.
carnicero, *m.*, butcher.
carpintero, joiner.
carretera, *f.*, main-road.
carta, *f.*, letter.
cartas, pl., playing-cards.
casa, *f.*, house.
Casa Ayuntamiento, the Town-
 hall.
casado, *-a*, married.
casi, almost.
castillo, *m.*, castle.
Cataluña, Catalonia.
caudal, *m.*, capital, fund.
causa, *f.*, cause.
célebre, famous, renowned.
céntimo, *m.*, centime.
cercanías(las), the neighbour-
 hood.
cerdo, *m.*, pig.
cerilla, *f.*, match.
cerveza, *f.*, beer.
cetro, *m.*, sceptre.
ciencia, *f.*, science.
cierto, *-a*, certain.
cigarro (colloq. *puro*), *m.*, cigar.
cigarrillo (colloq. *un pitillo*), *m.*,
 a cigarette.
cinco, five.
circunstancia, *f.*, the circum-
 stance.
ciudad, *f.*, town.
cobre, *m.*, copper.
colmado, *-a*, filled.

color, m., colour.
comenzar, to begin; pp. 92, 3; 148.
comer, to eat.
comerciante, m., merchant.
comida, f., dinner, food.
compañero, m., companion.
compañía, f., company.
comprado, bought.
comprar, to buy.
comprender, to understand.
como, as, as well as.
cómo, how.
¿cómo?, how?
con, with.
conceder, to allow, to concede.
concierto, m., concert.
conciudadano, m., citizen.
concluir, to conclude, to finish; page 168.
conoce V., you know; page 159.
conocer, to know; page 159.
conocido, m., acquaintance.
conozco, I know; page 159.
conquistar, to conquer.
consejo, m., advice.
conservar, to preserve.
constante, constant.
continuar, to continue.
contar, to count, to number, to tell (a story, etc.); page 153.
contorno, m., outskirts; circumference.
coronar, to crown.
corre, runs.
corregir, to correct, to mend, pp. 92, 4; 163.
correo, m., post, mail.
corrompen, they corrupt, they taint.
cosa, f., thing.
costa, f., coast.
costumbre, f., custom, habit, manner.
creer, to believe, to think.
criado, m., footman, servant.
Criador (el), Creator (the).
criatura, f., creature.
crió (3rd s. def.), (he) created.
cruz, f., cross.
cuadro, m., picture.
cuantioso, -a, considerable.
cuarto, m., room.

cuatro, four.
cuchillo, m., knife.
cuenta, f., account.
cuerto, -a, reasonable, prudent.
cuero, m., leather.
cuidar, to care.
cumplimiento, m., compliment(s).
chimenea, f., fireplace.

D.

dar, to give; page 173.
dado, given.
de, of, from; by.
 — *paso*, for the time being, actually.
debe, he (she) owes, must.
debemos, we must.
deber, to owe, must.
decir, to tell; pp. 173, 187.
dedicado, -a, dedicated.
defecto, m., fault.
degradar, to degrade.
delicioso, -a, delicious.
demás, other.
demasiado, too, too much.
déme V., give me; page 173.
derrotar, to put to flight, to rout (an army).
descansar, to repose.
desconfiar, to distrust. [187.
descubierto, -a, discovered; page
descuido, m., negligence.
desdichado, (el) unhappy man (the).
desear, to wish, to desire.
deseo, m., wish, desire.
desgracia, f., misfortune.
desordenado, -a, disorderly.
despacho, m., counting-house, office.
destinado, -a, destined.
deudor, m., debtor.
dí, tell (thou); pag. 173.
diario, m., newspaper.
dicha, f., fortune.
dicho, said p.p.; pp. 173, 187.
dichoso, happy.
diente, m., tooth; pl. *dientes*.
diferencia, f., difference.
difunto (el), the dead (man), the late . . .
digno, -a, worthy.
diligencia, f., diligence.

diligente, diligent.
dinero, *m.*, money. [173.
dió (3rd sing. def.), gave; page
Dios, God.
dirigir, to direct; page 92, 4.
discipulo, *m.*, pupil, scholar.
divertirse, to amuse oneself;
 page 167.
doce, twelve.
dócil, obedient.
Don, Mr.
Doña, Mrs., Miss.
dormir, to sleep; page 176.
dos, two.
dudar, to hesitate.
dudar de, to doubt about.
dueño, master.
dulce, sweet.
duque, duke; *f.*, *duquesa*.
duro, *m.*, dollar (= 5 pesetas
 = 4 shillings).

E.

edad, *f.*, age.
edificio, *m.*, building, edifice.
educación, *f.*, education.
el, *m.*, the.
él, he.
elección, *f.*, choice, election.
*eleva*r, to elevate.
ella, she.
ellas, they, *f.*
ellos, they, *m.*
ellos, } *son*, they are.
ellas, }
ellos tienen, they have, *m.*
ellas tienen, they have, *f.*
embajador, *m.*, ambassador.
embustero, *m.*, liar, hypocrite,
 cheat. [148.
empezar, to begin; pp. 92, 3;
en, in.
 — *casa de*, in, at the house of.
 — *medio*, in the middle, amidst.
encumbrar, to raise.
enfadado, *-a*, cross.
engañarse, to be mistaken.
enojarse, to become angry.
Enrique, Henry.
enseñar, to teach, to show.
entre, between, amongst.
entregar, to deliver, to give.
enviado, sent.

eres, thou art; page 40.
error, *m.*, fault, mistake.
es, he (she, it) is; page 40.
 — is; page 40.
 — *excusado*, it is superfluous.
 — *preciso*, it is necessary, one
 must; *me (te, le) es preciso*,
 I (he, we, etc.) must.
escoba, *f.*, broom.
escoger, to choose; page 92, 4.
escribir, to write }
escrito, written } page 187.
escritorio, *m.*, counting-house,
 office.
espacio, *m.*, space.
España, *f.*, Spain.
espejo, *m.*, looking-glass.
esperar, to expect, to wait for.
está, is; page 43.
 —, he (she, it) is; page 43.
estación, *f.*, season; (railway)
 station.
estado, *m.*, state, condition.
estáis, you are; page 43
estamos, we are; page 43.
estampa, *f.*, engraving.
están, are, they are; page 43.
estanco, *m.*, tabacconist-shop.
estar, to be, page 43.
 — *enterado*, to be acquainted.
estás, thou art; page 43.
estimado, *-a*, esteemed.
estoy, I am; page 43.
estrecho, *-a*, narrow.
estudia, studies.
estudiar, to study.
estudios (los); (the) studies.
Exposición (la), (the) Exhibition.
extranjero (el), }
extranjera (la), } the foreigner.
extranjero (el), the foreign coun-
 try; *al extranjero*, abroad.

F.

falta, *f.*, fault.
falleció, he (she) died.
familia, *f.*, family.
famoso, *-sa*, famous.
farol, *m.*, (street) lamp; lantern.
favor, *m.*, favour, kindness, ser-
 vice.
favorable, favourable.
fecha (la), the date.

felicidad, f., happiness.
feo, -a, ugly.
feroz, ferocious, wild.
firmar, to sign.
firmera, f., the firmness.
flor, f., flower.
florero, m., flower-pot.
florecente, flourishing; page 159.
flotar, to float.
fluctúan, they fluctuate.
fortuna, f., fortune.
fósforo, m., match.
fruta, f., fruit.
fuero, were (3rd pers. plur.);
 pp. 40, 177.
fuerza, f., force, strength.
fumar, to smoke.
fusil, m., gun.

G.

gana (la), a mind (to do something); the appetite.
ganar, to earn, to gain, to win.
gastar, to spoil, to spend, to waste.
género, m., the kind, species.
generoso, -a, generous.
gente, f., sing., (the) people.
girar, to turn round.
gloria, f., glory.
glorioso, illustrious.
gozo, m., pleasure.
grande, great.
guante, m., glove.
Guillermo, William.

H.

ha, he (she, it) has.
habéis, you have.
haber, to have (auxil.); page 32.
hábil, able, clever.
habla, he (she) speaks.
hablan, they speak.
hablo, I speak.
hace, makes, does; page 177.
hacer, to make, do; page 177.
 — *frio (calor)*, to be cold (warm).
hacienda, f., fortune, estate.
hallado, found.
hallar, to find.
hambre (el), f., (the) hunger.
han, they have; page 32.

hay, there is, there are; page 34, 5.
has, thou hast; page 32.
hazaña, f., heroic deed.
he, (I) have; page 32.
hecho, done, made; page 177.
hembra, female.
hemos, we have; page 32.
heredero, heir.
herido, -a, wounded; page 167.
hermano, brother.
hermoso, beautiful.
hierro, m., iron.
holgazán, m., idler.
honradez, f., honesty, decency.
honrado, -a, honoured; honest.
hora, f., hour.
hoy, to-day.
huerto, m., orchard.
huir, to flee, to fly; page 168.

I.

iglesia, f., church.
ignorancia, f., ignorance.
ignorar, not to be aware.
ilusión, f., illusion.
impaciencia, f., impatience.
imperio, m., empire.
incomodar, to molest, incommode.
incomodarse, to take pains, to trouble oneself.
incuria, f., carelessness.
influencia, f., influjo, m., influence.
Inglaterra, f., England.
injuria, f., offence.
inventor, m., inventor.
invierno, m., winter.
invitar, to invite.
ir, to go; page 177.
 — *á ver,* } to come to see, to
 } call, to visit.
isla, f., island, isle.

J.

jabón, m., soap.
jardín, m., garden.
jaula, f., cage.
jefe, m., chief.
jóven, m., young man, youth.
 — *adj.*, young.
juego, m., game (French *jeu*).

juez, *m.*, judge.
jugar (*á los naipes* or *á las cartas*), to play (cards); page 158.

junto, *-a*, together.
Júpiter, Jupiter.
justo, *-a*, just.

K.

kilógramo, *m.*, kilogramme.

L.

lacayo, footman.
ladrón, *m.*, thief, robber.
lamentar, to lament.
lámina, *f.*, engraving, picture.
lana, *f.*, wool.
lápiz, *m.*, pencil.
lastimoso, *-a*, sorry, sad.
legua, *f.*, league.
lejos, far.
leña, *f.*, (fire) wood.
levantarse, to get up.
libertad, *f.*, liberty, freedom.
libra, *f.*, pound.
libro, *m.*, book.
limón, *m.*, lemon, citron.
lindo, lovely, sweet.
lino, *m.*, flax, linen.
lisonjear, to flatter.
literato, literary man.
locamente, in a foolish way.
logrado, got, obtained.
lograr, to obtain, to earn, to gain, to win.
luego, adv., soon.
 — *que*, as soon as.
lugar, *m.*, village.
lujo, *m.*, luxury, magnificence.
luna, *f.*, moon.

Ll.

llama, calls.
llamado, called.
llegar, to arrive; page 91, 2.
llenar, to fill, to comply with (a wish).
lleva, wears (said of garments).
llevar, to carry, to wear.

M.

madera, *f.*, wood.
madre, mother.

maestro, master.
majestuoso, *-a*, majestic.
maltratar, to ill-treat.
manera, *f.*, manner.
mantenimiento, *m.*, the maintenance, livelihood.
mantiene, maintains; page 35.
mañana, to-morrow.
marcha, *f.*, march.
mas, but.
más, more.
matar, to kill, slaughter.
materia, *f.*, matter.
me, me, to me.
 — *falta* I want.
médico, *m.*, physician.
medio, *-a*, half.
mediodía, *m.*, noon.
memoria, *f.*, (a) report (the) memoir, memory.
menos, less.
mercancía, *f.*, merchandise.
Mercurio, Mercury.
mes, *m.*, month.
mesa, *f.*, table.
meter, to put.
mi, my.
miedo, *m.*, fear.
ministro, minister.
mirar, to look at.
mire V., look! (3rd sing. Imper.)
modestia, *f.*, modesty.
morir, to die; page 177.
motivo, *m.*, reason, motive.
muchacho, *m.*, boy.
mucho, *-a*, much.
 — *tiempo ha*, it is a good while.
mudar, to change.
muerte, *f.*, death.
muerto, died (*p. p.*), dead; page 177.
muestra, shows, proves; page 153.
mundo, *m.*, world.
muy, very.
 — *de mañana*, very early (early in the morning).

N.

nación, *f.*, nation.
naipes, *m.*, cards (playing).
Nápoles, Naples.
naranja, *f.*, orange.
natural, native, born in.

navegación, f., navigation.
necesidad, f., necessity.
necesito, I want.
negociante, m., merchant.
negocio, m., business.
niño, m., child, boy.
no, no, not.
 — *tener ningún inconveniente*,
 to have no objection.
nombre, m., name.
nosotros, m., nosotras, f., we.
nosotros (-as) somos, we are.
nosotros (-as) tenemos, we have.
noticia, f., news.
numeroso, -a, numerous.

O.

obispo, bishop.
obra, f., work.
obrar, to work.
obrero, m., workman.
ofender, to offend.
oficial, m., officer.
oler, to smell; page 156.
olor, m., the smell.
olvidar, to forget.
onza, f., ounce.
orador, m., orator.
orden, m., order (succession).
orden, f., order, command.
ordenar, to order.
orgullo, m., pride.
otro, -a, another (see Less. 18).

P.

paciencia, f., patience.
padecer, to suffer; page 159.
padecido, suffered.
padre, father.
padres, m. pl., collect., parents.
pagado, paid.
país, m., country, land.
pájaro, m., bird.
palacio, m., palace.
pan, m., bread; *un* —, a loaf.
pañó, m., cloth.
pañuelo, m., handkerchief.
papel, m., paper.
parecer, to seem; page 159.
pariente, m., relation.
partir, to leave (for), to set out.
pasa, spends (time).

paseo, m., the public walk, promenade.
paz, f., peace.
pedir, to ask, to demand; page 163.
pegar, to beat; page 91, 2.
pensar, to think; page 148.
pérdida, f., loss.
perdió, he (she) lost; page 148.
perdona, pardons.
perdonar, to pardon.
periódico (or diario), m., the newspaper.
pernicioso, dangerous.
pequeño, little, small, short.
pero, but.
perro, m., dog.
perseguir, to persecute; pp. 91, 2; 163.
pesado, -a, heavy.
peseta (una), = 4 reals or 9½ d.
piadoso, -a, pious, charitable.
pedra, f., stone.
piensa, thinks; page 148.
pintor, m., painter.
plata, f., silver.
plaza, f., square.
pluma, f., pen.
pobreza, f., poverty.
poco, -a, a little.
podemos, we can; page 177.
poder, to be able, can; page 177.
poder, m., power, might.
poético, -a, poetical.
por, by, through.
 — *desgracia*, unfortunately.
¿por qué . . . ? why?
porque, because.
portero, m., porter.
potencia, f., power.
precio, m., price.
precioso, -a, precious.
preguntar por, to ask for.
preliminaries (los), (the) preliminaries.
premiar, to reward.
presumir de . . ., to overrate.
prima, f., cousin.
primavera, f., the Spring.
primo, m., cousin.
primorosamente, first-rate, very well.
príncipe, m., prince.

produce, produces; page 160.
producir, to produce, cause; page 160.
promesa, *f.*, promise.
prometer, to promise.
pronto, quick, swift, prompt.
propio -*a*, proper.
prosperidad, *f.*, happiness, prosperity.
protector, protector.
provincia, *f.*, province.
próxima, -*a*, near, next.
prudencia, *f.*, prudence.
prudente, reasonable, prudent.
prudentemente, prudently.
pudor, *m.*, shame.
pueblo, *m.*, the people.
puente, *m.*, bridge.
puerta, *f.*, door.
puesto, *m.*, place, situation.
puro, *m.*, cigar.
que, than; that; to.
¿qué? what?
quejarse, to complain.
querer, to wish, like, love; page 178.
quería, loved, wished; page 178.
quien, *s.*, *quienes*, *pl.*, who.
¿quién? *s.*, *¿quiénes?* *pl.*, who?
quiere, he (she) likes; page 178.
quieren, (they) like; page 178.
quieres, thou wilt, page 178.
quiero, I want, I will; page 178.

R.

raro, -*a*, rare, seldom.
razón, *f.*, reason.
real, *m.*, a real (= 25 cent. = 2 $\frac{1}{4}$ pence).
recibido, received. [148.
recomendar, to recommend; page
recompensar, to reward.
región, *f.*, region, country.
reina, queen.
reino, *m.*, kingdom.
rejilla, *f.*, grating.
reloj, *m.*, watch, clock.
reluce, shines; page 159.
remedio, *m.*, remedy.
repasad, repeat (2nd plur. Imperat.).
retirar, to draw (or go) back, retire.

revolución, *f.*, revolution.
rey, king.
rico, rich.
rio, *m.*, river.
riqueza, *f.*, (the) riches, wealth.

S.

saber, to know; page 179; 321, 15.
sabido, learned.
sabiduría, *f.*, wisdom.
sabroso, -*a*, savoury, delicious.
sabio, -*bia*, wise.
sacar, to take out, pull out; pag. 91, 1.
Saturno, Saturne.
se, one, one'self, himself, herself, itself, yourself, themselves.
 — *juega*, one plays, they play, etc.
 — *llama*, is named.
 — *lleva*, is worn.
sed, *f.*, thirst.
seda, *f.*, silk.
seguridad, *f.*, safety, security.
semana, *f.*, week.
simplicez, *f.*, simplicity.
sentarse, to sit down; page 148.
señas (*las*), the address.
Señor, gentleman, Mr., Sir.
Señora, lady, Mrs., Madam.
señora, *f.*, (a) lady.
Señorita, Miss.
ser, to be; page 40.
 — *deudor*, to be indebted, to owe.
 — *muy solicitado*, to be in (great) demand.
serio, -*a*, serious.
severo, severe, strict.
si, if.
sí, yes; indeed.
siempre, always.
 siga, subj. pres. of *seguir*, to follow; pp. 91, 2; 163.
siglo, *m.*, century.
silla, *f.*, chair.
sincero, -*a*, sincere.
situación, *f.*, situation.
soberbio, -*a*, proud.
sois, you (ye) are; page 40.
sombrero, *m.*, hat.
son, are; pp. 40.

sonoro, -a, sonorous.
soportar, to bear.
sostener, to maintain, to sustain;
 page 35.
soy, I am; page 40.
su, his, her, its, their.
su . . . de usted, your . . .
suave, soft, lovely.
súbdito, m., subject.
sucedid, succeeded, followed.
sueño, m., the sleep, dream.
suerte, f., fate.
sufrido, suffered.
sujeto, adj., subject.
sus, his, her, its, their.

T.

tabaco, m., tobacco.
tarde, late.
 — (*la*), (the) afternoon, evening.
té, thee, to thee.
té, m., tea.
temer, to fear.
temor, m., fear.
tener, to have (hold), possess;
 page 35.
 — (or *no tener*) *hambre*, to be
 (or not to be) hungry.
 — (or *no tener*) *inconveniente*,
 to have any (or to have no)
 objection.
 — (or *no tener*) *razón*, to be
 (or not to be) right.
 — (or *no tener*) *sed*, to be (or
 not to be) thirsty.
ternero, m., calf.
tía, aunt.
tienda, f., shop.
tiene, he (she, it) has; page 35.
tienes, thou hast; page 35.
tierra, f., earth.
tinta, f., ink.
tintero, m., inkstand.
tío, uncle.
tocar, to touch; page 91, 1.
todavía, yet; *no . . . todavía*
 (or *todavía no*), not yet.
todo, -a, all, whole.
todo el, toda la, the whole.
todos, -as, all (plural).
tomo, m., volume. [gent.
trabajador, -a, laborious, dili-
trabajar, to work.

trabajo, m., labour, work.
tratar, to treat.
 — *con*, to deal with, to treat.
tres, three.
trigo, m., corn.

U.

único, -a, sole, only.
usted, you (polite form).
ustedes (pl.), you.

V.

valentía, f., valour, bravery.
valiente, brave, gallant.
valor, m., bravery, valour.
valle, m., valley.
vano, -a, vain.
vara, f., the (Spanish) yard.
varón, male.
vasallo, m., vassal.
ve, sees; page 180.
vecindad, f., neighbourhood.
vecino, m., neighbour; inhabi-
 tant.
vela, f., sail.
velar, to watch.
vencedor, m., conqueror.
vencer, to conquer; page 92, 3.
venir, to come; page 180.
 — *bien*, to fit.
 — *á las manos*, to come to
 blows.
 — *á ver*, to come to see, to call,
 to visit.
ventana, f., window.
ventanillo, m., grating.
Venus, Venus.
ver (irr.), to see; page 180. -
verano, m., summer.
vergonzoso, -a, shameful.
vestido, m., dress.
vestir, to clothe, to dress; page
 163.
viajar, to travel.
viaje, m., journey.
viajero, m., traveller.
vicio, m., vice.
vida, f., life. [man.
viejo, vieja, old; *un* —, an old
Viena, Vienna.
viene, comes; page 180.
vienen, they come; page 180.
vienes, thou comest.
vino (*el*), (the) wine.

vino, he (she, it) came (fr. *venir*).
virtud, *f.*, virtue.
visto, seen; pp. 180, 187.
viuda, widow.
viudo, widower.
vive, lives.
viveres, *m. pl.*, victuals.
vivir, to live, to dwell.
vivo, lively.
volúmen, *m.*, volume, circumference, extent.
voluntad, *f.*, will, wish.
volver, to return, come back; pp. 153, 187.
vosotros, *-as*, you (*pl.*, non polite form).

vosotros (-as) tenéis, you have.
voy, I go; page 177.
vuelve, returns, comes back; pp. 153, 187.
vuelto, *p. p.* volver; pp. 153, 187.

Y.

y, and.
yo, I.
 — *tengo*, I have.

Z.

zapatero, *m.*, shoemaker.
zapato, *m.*, shoe.

English-Spanish.

A.

abhor (to), *aborrecer*, page 161.
 abhorred, *aborrecido*.
 able, *hábil*.
 abroad, *al extranjero*.
 absence, *la ausencia*.
 accept (to), *aceptar*.
 account, *la cuenta*.
 accuse (to), *acusar*.
 acquaintance, *el conocido*.
 actor, *actor*.
 actually, *de paso*.
 address (the), *las señas*.
 admirable, *admirable*.
 adorn (to), *adornar*.
 advice, *el consejo*.
 afflict (to), *afligir*, page 92, 4.
 afternoon, *la tarde*.
 age, *la edad*.
 all, *todo, toda*; *pl. todos, todas*.
 allow (to), *conceder*.
 almond, *la almendra*.
 almost, *casi*.
 alphonse (the), *el alfonso* = 25 *pesetas* = 20 sh.
 always, *siempre*.
 ambassador, *el embajador*.
 America, *América*.
 amiable, *amable*.
 amidst, *en medio*.

amongst, *entre*.
 amuse oneself (to), *divertirse*, page 167.
 and, *y* (sometimes *é*, see **Conjunctions**).
 announce (to), *anunciar*.
 another, *otro, otra*.
 appetite, *el apetito, la gana*.
 appreciate (to), *apreciar*.
 architecture, *la arquitectura*.
 are; *son*; *están*; we—, *somos, estamos*; you —, *sois, estáis*; see pp. 40, 43.
 army, *el ejército*.
 arrive (to), *llegar*.
 arrival, { *(el arribo)*
 { *la llegada*.
 art (thou), *eres*, page 40.
 as, *como*.
 — well as, *como, asi como*.
 — soon as, *luego que*.
 ask (to), *pedir*, page 163.
 — for (to), *preguntar por*.
 ass, *el asno*.
 associate with (to), *andar con*, page 172.
 assure (to), *asegurar*.
 at, *á*.
 — the side (brink, border, edge), *á orillas*.
 attention, *la atención*.

aunt, *tía*.

author, *el autor*.

B.

balcony, *el balcón*.

ball, *el baile*.

banknote, *el billete de banco*.

be (to), *ser*, page 40.

— able (to), *poder*, page 177.

— acquainted (to), *estar enterado*.

— ashamed (to), *avergonsarse*, pp. 92, 3; 154.

— at stake (to), *arriesgar*, page 91, 2.

— aware (to), *saber*, pag. 179; not to — aware, *ignorar*.

— cold (warm), to; *hacer frío (calor)*.

— (not to —) hungry, or thirsty, to; *tener (or no tener) hambre ó sed*.

— in great demand, *ser muy solicitado*.

— indebted, *ser deudor*.

— mistaken, *equivocarse, engañarse*.

— necessary, *ser necesario*.

— right (to), *tener razón*.

— silent (to), *callar*.

— wrong (to), *no tener razón*.

— (to), *estar*, page 43.

bear (to), *soportar*.

beat (to), *pegar*, page 91, 2.

beautiful, *hermoso, -sa*.

because, *porque*.

become angry (to), *enojarse*.

beef, *la (carne de) vaca*.

beer, *la cerveza*.

beggar, *el mendigo*.

begin (to), *comenzar, empezar*; pp. 92, 3; 148.

behaviour, *la conducta*.

believe (to), *creer*.

bet, *la apuesta*.

between, *entre*.

bill of exchange, *la letra de cambio*.

bird, *el ave (f.), el pájaro*.

—'s trough, *el bebedero*.

bishop, *obispo*.

blow, *el golpe*.

blunt, *embotado, -da, or boto, -ta*.

boatman, *barquero*.

book, *el libro*.

boot, *la bota*.

Bordeaux, *Burdeos*.

born in, *natural de*.

bought, *comprado*.

box, *la caja, see cigar-box*.

— of matches, *la caja de cerillas (or de fósforos)*.

boy, *el niño, el muchacho*.

brave, *valiente*.

bravery, *la valentía, el valor*.

bread, *el pan*.

broad, *ancho, ancha*.

bridge, *el puente*.

broom, *la escoba*.

brother, *hermano*.

building, *el edificio*.

burden, *la carga*.

business, *el negocio*.

but, *pero, mas*.

butcher, *el carnicero*.

buy (to), *comprar*.

by, *de, por*.

C.

cake, *la jaula*.

calf, *el ternero, la ternera*.

call (to), *llamar*.

— on (to), *ir á ver, venir á ver*.

came, *vino (from venir, page 180)*.

camp, *el campo*.

can, *poder*, page 177.

capable, *capaz*.

capital, *la capital (metropolis); el capital (money)*.

capital (fund), *el caudal*.

captain, *capitán*.

cards (playing —), *los naipes, las cartas*.

care (to), *cuidar*.

carelessness, *la incuria*.

carry (to), *llevar*.

cask, *la bota*.

castle, *el castillo*.

Catalonia, *Cataluña*.

cause, *la causa*.

— (to), *causar; producir*, page 160.

centime, *el céntimo*.

century, *el siglo*.

certain, *cierto, cierta*.

chain, *la cadena*.

chair, *la silla*.

change (to), *mudar*.
 charitable, *piadoso, -sa*.
 chase, *la caza*.
 cheap, *barato, barata*.
 cheat, *el embustero*.
 chief, *el jefe*.
 child, *el niño*.
 choice, *la elección*.
 choose (to), *escoger*, page 92, 4.
 church, *la iglesia*.
 cigar, *el cigarro*, (coll.) *el puro*.
 — box, *la caja de cigarros*.
 cigarette, *el cigarrillo* (colloq. *el pitillo*).
 circumference, *el contorno, la circunferencia*.
 circumstance, *la circunstancia*.
 citizen, *el conciudadano*.
 citron, *el limón*.
 clever, *hábil, listo, lista*.
 cloak (the Spanish —), *la capa*.
 clock, *el reloj*.
 cloth, *el paño*.
 clothe (to), *vestir(se)*, page 163.
 coast, *la costa*.
 coat, the, *el abrigo*.
 coffee, *el café*.
 — house, *el café*.
 colour, *el color*.
 come (to), *venir*, page 180.
 — back (to), *volver*, pp. 153, 187.
 — to blows (to), *venir á las manos*.
 — to see (to), *ir (or venir) á ver*.
 command, *la orden*.
 — (to), *mandar, ordenar*.
 companion, *el compañero*.
 company, *la compañía*.
 complain (to), *quejarse*.
 compliments, *los cumplimientos*.
 comply with (a wish) (to), *llenar*.
 concede (to), *conceder*.
 concert, *el concierto*.
 conclude (to), *concluir*, page 168.
 condition, *la condición, el estado*.
 conform oneself to (to), *acomodarse á*.
 conquer (to), *conquistar; vencer*, page 92, 3.
 conqueror, *el vencedor*.
 considerable, *considerable, cuantioso*.

constant, *constante*.
 continue (to), *continuar*.
 cook (f.), *la cocinera*.
 copper, *el cobre*.
 corn, *el trigo*.
 correct (to), *corregir*, pp. 92, 4; 163.
 corrupt (to), *corromper*.
 count (to), *contar*, page 153.
 counting-house, *el despacho, escriptorio*.
 country, *el país*.
 courage, *el ánimo*.
 cousin, *primo (m.), prima (f.)*.
 cow, *la vaca*.
 create (to), *crear, criar*.
 Creator (the), *el Criador*.
 creature, *la criatura*.
 cross, *enfadado, -da*.
 cross, *la cruz*.
 crown (to), *coronar*.
 custom, *la costumbre*.

D.

dangerous, *pernicioso, -sa*.
 dare (to), *atreverse*.
 date, *la fecha*.
 dead, p.p., *muerto*, page 187.
 dead (man, woman), the, *el muerto, la muerta; el difunto, la difunta*.
 deal with (to), *tratar con*.
 death, *la muerte*.
 debtor, *el deudor*.
 decency, *la decencia, honradez*.
 dedicate (to), *dedicar*.
 dedicated, *dedicado*.
 deed (heroic —), *la hazaña*.
 degrade (to), *degradar*.
 delicious, *delicioso, -sa; sabroso, -sa*.
 deliver (to), *entregar*, page 91, 2.
 demand (to), *pedir*, page 163.
 descend (to), *bajar*.
 desire, *el deseo*.
 — (to), *desear*.
 despicable, *despreciable*.
 destined, *destinado, -da*.
 detest (to), *abhorrecer*, page 161.
 detested, *abhorrecido*.
 die (to), *morir*, pp. 177, 187; *fallecer*, pag. 159.
 difference, *la diferencia*.

diligence, *la diligencia*.
 diligent, *diligente, trabajador, trabajadora*.

dine (to), *comer*.

dinner, *la comida*.

direct (to), *dirigir*, page 92, 4.

discover (to), *descubrir*, page 187.

— ed, *descubierto, -ta*.

disorderly, *desordenado, -da*.

distribute (to), *distribuir*, page 168.

distrust (to), *desconfiar*.

do (to), *hacer*, page 177.

dog, *el perro*.

dollar, (*un*) *duro* [= 5 pesetas, or 4 shillings].

done, *hecho* (see *hacer*).

donkey, *el burro*.

door, *la puerta*.

doubt (to), *dudar*.

— about (to), *dudar de*.

draw back (to), *retirar(se)*.

dream, *el sueño*.

dress, *el vestido*.

— (to), *vestir(se)*, page 163.

drink (to), *beber*.

duke, *duque* (f., *duquesa*).

dwell (to), *vivir*.

E.

ear, *la oreja*.

earn (to), *ganar, lograr*.

earth, *la tierra*.

eat (to), *comer*.

edifice, *el edificio*.

education, *la educación*.

election, *la elección*.

elevate (to), *elegar*.

empire, *el imperio*.

encourage (to), *alentar*, page 148.

England, *Inglaterra*.

engraving, } *la estampa,*
 (copperplate) } *la lámina*.

escape (to), *escapar*.

estate, *la hacienda*.

esteem (to), *apreciar, estimar*.

esteemed, *estimado, -da*.

evening, *la tarde*.

ewer, *el cubo*.

Exchange, the, *la Bolsa*.

Exhibition, *la Exposición*.

expect (to), *esperar*.

expense, *el gasto, el desembolso*.

extent, *el volumen*.

eye, *el ojo*.

F.

family, *la familia*.

famous, *famoso, -sa, afamado, -da; célebre*.

far, *lejos*.

farrier, *el herrador*.

fate, *la suerte, el hado*.

father, *padre*.

fault, *el error, la falta*.

favour, *el favor*.

favourable, *favorable*.

fear, *el temor, el miedo*.

— (to), *temer*.

feeble, *débil*.

female, *hembra*.

ferocious, *feroz*.

fill (to), *llenar*.

filled, *colmado, -da; lleno, -na*.

find (to), *hallar*.

finish (to), *acabar*.

fire-place, *la chimenea*.

firmness, *la firmeza*.

first rate, *primorosamente*.

fit (to), *venir bien*.

five, *cinco*.

flatter (to), *lisonjear*.

flax, *el lino*.

flee (to), *huir*, pag. 168.

float (to), *flotar*.

flourishing, *floreciente*.

flower, *la flor*.

— pot, *el florero*.

fluctuate (to), *fluctuar*.

fly (to), *huir*, page 168. [163.]

follow (to), *sucedee; seguir*, page

food, *la comida, el alimento*.

foot, *el pié* (pl. *los piés*).

footman, *el criado, el lacayo*.

for, *por, para*.

— the time being, *de paso*.

force, *la fuerza*.

foreign country (the), *el extranjero*.

foreigner, *el extranjero, la extranjera*.

forget (to), *olvidar*.

fortune, *la dicha, la fortuna, la hacienda, los bienes*.

found, *hallado*.

four, *cuatro*.

freedom, *la libertad*.
 friend, *amigo, amiga*.
 friendly, *amable, afable*.
 friendship, *la amistad*.
 frivolity, *la ligereza*.
 from, *de*.
 fruit, *la fruta*.
 fulfil (to), *cumplir, con*.
 fund, *el caudal*.
 furious, *enfurecido*.

G.

gain (to), *ganar, lograr*.
 gallant, *valiente*.
 gallon, *el galón, el cubo*.
 game, *el juego*.
 garden, *el jardín*.
 gave, *dió*, page 173.
 generous, *generoso*.
 gentleman, *caballero, señor*.
 get (to), *alcanzar*, pag. 92, 3.
 — tired (to), *cansarse*.
 — up (to), *levantarse*.
 give (to), *dar*, pag. 173; *entregar*.
 given, *dado*.
 glass, *el vaso*.
 glory, *la gloria*.
 glove, *el guante*.
 go (to), *ir*, page 177.
 — back (to), *retirar(se)*.
 God, *Dios*.
 good, *bueno, na*.
 good sense, *el cabal juicio*.
 goodness, *la bondad*.
 got, *logrado*.
 grand-father, *abuelo*.
 — mother, *abuela*.
 grateful, *agradecido*.
 grating, *la rejilla, el ventanillo*.
 great, *grande*.
 guess (to), *acertar*, page 148;
adivinar.
 gun, *el fusil*.

H.

habit, *el hábito, la costumbre*.
 hair, *el cabello, el pelo*.
 half, *medio, -da*.
 hand, *la mano*.
 handkerchief, *el pañuelo*.
 happiness, *la felicidad, la dicha, la prosperidad*.
 happy, *dichoso, -sa*.

hat, *el sombrero*.
 have (to), *haber* (auxil. p. 32);
tener, p. 35; *poseer*.
 — intercourse with (to), *andar (con)*, page 172.
 — no objection (to), *no tener ningún inconveniente*.
 head, *la cabeza*.
 heavy, *pesado, -da*.
 he, *él*.
 — is, (*él*) *es*.
 heat, *el calor*.
 heir, *heredero*.
 Henry, *Enrique*.
 her, *su, sus*.
 here, *aquí*.
 — is, *aquí está*.
 — are, *aquí están*.
 herself, *se*.
 hesitate (to), *dudar*.
 high, *alto, alta*.
 himself, *se*.
 his, *su, sus*.
 honest, *honesto, -da*.
 honesty, *la honradez, decencia*.
 honoured, *honrado, -da*.
 horse, *el caballo*.
 hour, *la hora*.
 house, *la casa*.
 how, *como*.
 how?, *¿cómo?*
 hunger, *el hambre (f.)*.
 hungry [See to be —].
 hunting, *la caza*.
 hypocrite, *el embustero, el hipócrita*.

I.

I, *yo*.
 idler, *el holgazán*.
 if, *si*.
 ignorance, *la ignorancia*.
 ill, *adj., enfermo, -ma*.
 ill-treat (to), *maltratar*.
 illusion, *la ilusión*.
 illustrious, *glorioso, -sa*.
 impart (to), *anunciar*.
 impatience, *la impaciencia*.
 in, *en, á*.
 — a foolish way, *locamente*.
 — the middle, *en medio*.
 incommode (to), *incomodar, molestar*.
 indeed, *si; ciertamente*.

infamous, *infame*.
 influence, *la influencia, el influjo*.
 inhabitant, *el vecino*.
 ink, *la tinta*.
 — stand, *el tintero*.
 intention, *la intención*.
 inventor, *el inventor*.
 invite (to), *invitar, convidar*.
 iron, *el hierro*.
 is, *es*, page 40.
 — , *está*, page 43.
 — mistaken, *se engaña, se equivoca*.
 — named, *se llama*.
 — worn, *se lleva*.
 island, *(una) isla*.
 isle, *la isla (de)*.
 it, *lo, la*.
 — is, *es, lo es*.
 — — a good while, *mucho tiempo há*.
 — — cold, *hace frío*.
 — — necessary, *es preciso*.
 its, *su, sus*.
 itself, *se*.

J.

joiner, *le carpintero*.
 journey, *el viaje*.
 judge, *el juez*.
 just, *justo, -ta*.

K.

keep (to), *guardar; cumplir con*.
 — back (to), *apartarse*.
 kilogramme, *el kilogramo*.
 kill (to), *matar*.
 kind, *el género*.
 kind, *amable, afable*.
 kindness, *el favor, la bondad*.
 king, *rey*.
 kingdom, *el reino*.
 knife, *el cuchillo*.
 know (things) to, *saber*, page 179.
 — (persons) to, *conocer*, page 159.
 knowledge, *el conocimiento*.

L.

labour, *el trabajo*.
 laborious, *trabajador, -dora*.
 lament (to), *lamentar*.

lamp, } *el farol*.
 lantern, }
 land, *el país, el terreno, la tierra*.
 large, *ancho, ancha*.
 late, adv., *tarde*.
 — (the), *el difunto, la difunta*.
 league, *la legua*.
 learn (to), *aprender*.
 learned, *sabido*.
 leather, *el cuero*.
 leave for (to), *partir (or salir) para*.
 lemon, *el limón*.
 less, *menos*.
 letter, *la carta*.
 levity, *la ligereza*.
 liar, *el embustero, el mentiroso*.
 liberty, *la libertad*.
 lie, *la mentira*.
 life, *la vida*.
 like (to), *querer*, pp. 148, 178.
 likewise, *tambien, igualmente*.
 line, *el lino*.
 literary man, *el literato*.
 little, *pequeño, -ña*.
 — (a), *poco, poca*.
 live (to), *vivir*.
 lively, *vivo; lindo*.
 livelihood, *el mantenimiento*.
 look at (to), *mirar*.
 — for (to), *buscar*, page 91, 1.
 looking-glass, *el espejo*.
 loose (to), *perder*, page 148.
 loss, *la pérdida*.
 love (to), *amar; querer*, pp. 148, 178.
 loved, *amado*.
 low, *bajo, baja*.
 luxury, *el lujo*.

M.

Madam, *Señora*.
 made, *hecho (see hacer)*.
 magnificence, *el lujo*.
 mail, *el correo*.
 main-road, *el camino real, la carretera*.
 maintain (to), *sostener, mantener*, page 35.
 maintenance, *el mantenimiento*.
 majestic, *majestuoso, -sa*.
 male, *varón*.
 manner, *la costumbre, la manera*.

march, *la marcha*.
 — carefully (to), *andar con cuidado*.
 married, *casado, -da*.
 master, *el dueño, el amo*.
 — (teacher), *muestro*.
 match, *la cerilla, el fósforo*.
 matter, *el asunto, la materia*.
 me, to —; *me*.
 meat, *la carne*.
 memoir, } *la memoria*.
 memory, }
 mend (to), *corregir*, pp. 92, 4; 163.
 merchandise, *la mercancía*.
 merchant, *el comerciante, el negociante*.
 merry, *alegre*.
 might, *el poder*.
 mind (to do something), *a, la gana*.
 minister, *el ministro*.
 misfortune, *la desgracia*.
 Miss, *señorita, doña*.
 mistake, *la falta, el error*.
 modesty, *la modestia*.
 molest (to), *incomodar, molestar*.
 money, *el dinero*.
 month, *el mes*.
 moon, *la luna*.
 more, *más*.
 — than, *más que*, (with numerals and sentences) *más de*.
 mother, *madre*.
 motive, *el motivo, la razón*.
 mouth, *la boca*.
 movement, *el ejercicio*.
 Mr., *Señor, don*.
 Mrs., *Señora, doña*.
 much, *mucho; mucho, -cha*.
 murder (to), *asesinar*.
 must, *ser preciso, deber*.
 mutton, *el carnero*.
 my, *mi*.

N.

name, *el nombre*.
 narrow, *estrecho, -cha*.
 nation, *la nación*.
 native, *natural*.
 navigation, *la navegación*.
 near, *próximo, -ma*.
 —, adv., *cerca*.

necessity, *la necesidad, el apuro*.
 negligence, *el descuido*.
 neighbour, *el vecino*.
 —hood, *las cercanías, la vecindad*.
 news, *la noticia*.
 — paper, *el diario, el periódico*.
 next, *próximo, -ma*.
 no, *no*.
 noise, *el ruido*.
 noon, (*el*) *mediodía*.
 nose, *la nariz*.
 not, *no*.
 — yet, *no . . . todavía, or todavía no*.
 now, *ahora*.
 noxious, *dañoso, nocivo*.
 number (to), *contar*, page 153.
 numerous, *numeroso, -sa*.

O.

obedient, *obediente, dócil*.
 object, *el asunto*.
 obtain (to), *obtener*, page 35; *lograr; alcanzar*, page 92, 3.
 obtained, *logrado, obtenido*.
 of, *de*.
 offence, *la injuria, la ofensa*.
 offend (to), *ofender*.
 office, *el despacho, la oficina, el escritorio*.
 officer, *el oficial*.
 oil, *el aceite*.
 old, *viejo, vieja*.
 olive, *la aceituna*.
 one (impers.), *se*.
 — must, *es preciso*.
 oneself, *se*.
 only, *único, única*.
 — (adv.), *únicamente*.
 opportunity, *la ocasión*.
 or, *ó* (sometimes *ú*; see Conjunctions).
 orange, *la naranja*.
 orator, *el orador*.
 orchard, *el huerto*.
 order, *el orden* (succession).
 —, *la orden* (command).
 — (to), *mandar, ordenar*.
 other, *otro, otra*.
 other(s), the, *lo(s) demás*.
 ounce, *la onza*.
 outskirts, *el contorno*.
 overrate (to), *presumir de*.

owe (to), *deber, ser deudor, ser preciso.*
ox, *el buey (pl. los bueyes).*

P.

packet of cigarettes, *la cajetilla de cigarillos.*
paid, *pagado.*
pains, *el trabajo.*
painter, *el pintor.*
palace, *el palacio.*
paper, *el papel.*
pardon (to), *perdonar.*
parents, *los padres.*
patience, *la paciencia.*
pay (to), *pagar*, page 91, 2.
— a visit (to), *ir á ver, venir á ver.*
payment, *el pago, salario.*
peace, *la paz.*
pen, *la pluma.*
pencil, *el lápiz.*
people, *la gente (sing.), el pueblo.*
perhaps, *acaso, talvez, quizá.*
persecute (to), *perseguir*, pp. 91, 2; 163.
peseta, *la peseta = 100 cents, or 9½ d.*
physician, *el médico.*
picture, *el cuadro.*
pig, *el cerdo.*
pious, *piadoso, -sa.*
pipe, *la pipa.*
pitiful, *piadoso, -sa.*
place, *el lugar; el puesto.*
play (to), *jugar*, page 91, 2; 153.
— cards (to), *jugar á las cartas (or á los naipes).*
please (to), *agradar.*
pleasure, *el gozo, placer.*
pocket, *el bolsillo.*
poetical, *poético, poética.*
policeman, *el municipal.*
poor, *pobre.*
porter, *portero.*
position, *la posición.*
post, *el correo.*
pound, *la libra.*
poverty, *la pobreza.*
power, *el poder; la potencia.*
praise (to), *alabar.*
precious, *precioso, -sa.*
preliminaries, *los preliminares.*

preserve (to), *conservar.*
price, *el precio.*
pride, *el orgullo.*
prince, *el príncipe.*
produce (to), *producir*, page 160.
projectile, *el proyectil.*
promenade, *el paseo.*
promise, *la promesa.*
— (to), *prometer.*
prompt, *pronto.*
proper, *propio, -a.*
property, *la propiedad.*
prosperity, *la prosperidad.*
protector, *el protector.*
proud, *soberbio, -bia.*
proof, *la prueba.*
— (to), *mostrar, probar*, page 153.
province, *la provincia.*
prudence, *la prudencia.*
prudent, *prudente, cuerdo.*
prudently, *prudentemente.*
pull out (to), *sacar*, page 91, 1.
punishment, *el castigo.*
pupil, *el discípulo.*
purse, *la bolsa, el bolsillo.*
put (to), *meter; poner*, pp. 178, 187.
— to flight (to), *derrotar.*

Q.

quarrel (to), *reñir*, page 163, 164
note; *regañar.*
queen, *reina.*
quickly, *ligero, deprisa; pronto.*

R.

raise (to), *encumbrar.*
rampart, *la valla.*
rare, *raro, rara.*
read (to), *leer.*
reason, *la razón, el motivo.*
reasonable, *razonable, cuerdo, prudente.*
receive (to), *recibir.*
received, *recibido.*
recommend (to), *recomendar*, page 148.
region, *la región.*
relation (a), *el pariente.*
remedy, *el remedio.*
renowned, *famoso, -sa; célebre.*
repeat (to), *repasar; repetir*, page 153.

report, *la memoria*.
 repose (to), *reposar, descansar*.
 respectable, *respetable, honrado*.
 retire (to), *retirar(se)*.
 return (to), *volver*, pp. 153, 187.
 revolution, *la revolución*.
 reward (to), *premiar, recom-
 pensar*.
 rich, *rico, rica*.
 riches, *la(s) riqueza(s)*.
 risk (to), *arriesgar*, page 91, 2.
 river, *el río*.
 road, *el camino*.
 robber, *el ladrón*.
 room, *el cuarto*.
 round, }
 — about, } *al rededor*.
 rout (an army) (to), *derrotar*.
 run (to), *correr*.
 rural, *campestre, rural*.

S.

sad, *lastimoso, triste*.
 safety, *la seguridad*.
 sage, *sabio, sabia*.
 said, *dicho*, pp. 173, 187.
 sail, *la vela*.
 savoury, *sabroso, -sa*.
 say (to), *decir*, page 173, 187.
 scarcely, *apenas*.
 sceptre, *el cetro*.
 scholar, *el discípulo*.
 science, *la ciencia*.
 scold (to), *reñir*, page 163, 164
 note; *regañar*.
 sea, *el mar*.
 search (to), *buscar*, page 91, 1.
 season, *la estación*.
 security, *la seguridad*.
 see (to), *ver*, page 180.
 seem (to), *parecer*, page 159.
 seen, *visto* (fr. *ver*), pp. 180, 187.
 seldom, *raro, raramente*.
 send (to), *enviar*.
 sent, *enviado*.
 serious, *serio, seria*.
 servant, *la criada*; (man) —, *el
 criado*.
 service, *el favor, el servicio*.
 set out (to), *partir*.
 severe, *severo, -ra*.
 shame, *el pudor*; *la vergüenza*.
 shameful, *vergonzoso, -sa*.

she, *ella*.
 — is, *(ella) es*.
 shine (to), *relucir*, page 159.
 ship, *el barco, el buque*.
 shoe, *el zapato*.
 shop, *la tienda*, (store) *el al-
 macén*.
 short, *pequeño, -ña*; *corto, -ta*.
 show (to), *mostrar*, page 153.
 sick, *adj. enfermo, -ma*.
 sign (to), *firmar*.
 silk, *la seda*.
 silver, *la plata*.
 simplicity, *la sencillez*.
 sincere, *sincero, -ra*.
 Sir, *caballero*.
 sit down (to), *sentarse*, page 148.
 situation, *la situación, el puesto*.
 slaughter (to), *matar*.
 sleep, *el sueño*.
 — (to), *dormir*, page 177.
 slowly, *lentamente, despacio*.
 small, *pequeño, -ña*.
 smell, *el olor*.
 — (to), *oler*, pag. 156.
 smoke (to), *fumar*.
 soap, *el jabón*.
 soft, *suave*.
 sole, *único, única*.
 something, *algo*.
 song, *la canción*.
 sonorous, *sonoro, -ra*.
 soon, *luego*.
 sorry, *lastimoso, triste*.
 soul, *el alma* (f.).
 southern, *meridional*.
 space, *el espacio*.
 Spain, *España*.
 speak (to), *hablar*.
 species, *el género, la especie*.
 spend (to), *gastar*.
 — (time), (to), *pasar el tiempo*.
 spoil (to), *gastar, echar(se) á
 perder*.
 spring, *la primavera*.
 square, *la plaza*.
 stand away (to), *apartarse*.
 state, *el estado*.
 stomach, *el estómago*.
 stone, *la piedra*.
 store, *el almacén*.
 straw, *la paja*.
 street, *la calle*.

streetlamp, *el farol*.
 strength, *la fuerza*.
 strict, *severo, -ra; estricto, -ta*.
 study, *el estudio*.
 — (to), *estudiar*.
 subject, *el súbdito; el sujeto*.
 suburb, *el arrabal*.
 succeed (to), *suceder*.
 — in (to), *acertar*, page 148.
 suffer, *sufrir, padecer*, page 159.
 —ed, *padecido, sufrido*.
 sugar, *el azúcar*.
 summer, *el verano*.
 superfluous, *excusado, superfluo*.
 superior (the), *el jefe*.
 sustain (to), *sostener, mantener*,
 page 35.
 sweet, *dulce*, (pretty) *lindo*.
 swift, *pronto*.
 sword, *la espada*.

T.

table, *la mesa*.
 taint (to), *corromper*.
 take (to), *tomar*.
 — care (to), *tener cuidado, cuidar(se)*.
 — out (to), *sacar*, page 91, **I**.
 — pains (to), *incomodarse*.
 tea, *el té*.
 terminate (to), *terminar, acabar*.
 tell (to), *decir*, pp. 173, 187.
 — me, *dime, dígame V*.
 tell (a story, etc.), (to), *contar*,
 page 153.
 than, *que*, (with numerals and
 sentences) *de*.
 thankful, *agradecido*.
 thanks, *gracias*.
 that (conj.), *que*.
 — (pron.), *ese, esa, eso; aquel,*
aquella, aquello.
 the, *el, la, los, las*; — (m. sing.)
al.
 — whole . . . *todo el . . ., toda*
la . . .
 thee (to), *te*.
 their, *su, sus*.
 themselves, *se*.
 there, *allí*.
 — is, — are, *hay*.
 — was, — were, *había*.
 these, *estos, estas*.

they, *ellos (m.), ellas (f)*.
 thief, *el ladrón*.
 thing, (*una*) *cosa*.
 think (to), *pensar*, page 148;
creer.
 thirst, *la sed*.
 thirsty [see to *be*—].
 this, *este, esta, esto*.
 those, *esos, esas; aquellos,*
aquellas.
 three, *tres*.
 through, *por; á través*.
 thunderbolt, *el trueno*.
 thunderstorm, *la tronada, la*
borrasca, la tempestad.
 tire (to), *cansar*.
 tired, *cansado*.
 to, *á, para; que*.
 tobacco, *el tabaco*.
 tobacconist-shop, *el estanco*.
 to-day, *hoy*.
 together, *junto, juntos*.
 to-morrow, *mañana*.
 too, *demasiado, además, también*.
 — much, *demasiado*.
 tooth, *el diente (pl. los dientes)*.
 touch (to), *tocar*, page 91, **I**.
 town, *la ciudad*.
 Town hall (the), *la Casa Ayun-*
tamiento.
 traveller, *el viajero*.
 treat (to), *tratar*.
 tree, *el árbol*.
 trouble oneself (to), *incomodarse*.
 trough, *el bebedero*.
 turn round (to), *girar*.
 twelve, *doce*.
 two, *dos*.

U.

ugly, *feo, fea*.
 uncle, *tío*.
 understand (to), *comprender*.
 unfortunately, *por desgracia*.
 unhappy man (the), *el desdichado*.

V.

vain, *vano, vana*.
 valley, *el valle*.
 valour, *la valentía, el valor*.
 vassal, *el vasallo*.
 very, *muy*.
 — early in the morning, *muy*
de mañana.

very well, *primorosamente*.
 vice, *el vicio*.
 victuals, *los víveres*.
 village, *la aldea, el lugar*.
 virtue, *la virtud*.
 visit (to), *visitar, or ir (or venir)*
á ver.
 volume, *el volumen, el tomo*.

W.

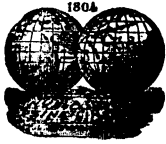
wager, *la apuesta*.
 wait for (to), *esperar (á)*.
 walk, public —, *el paseo*.
 — (to), *andar*, page 172.
 want, *el apuro, la necesidad*.
 — (to), *faltar, necesitar*; I want,
me falta, necesito.
 — (to), *querer*, pp. 148, 178.
 waste (to), *gastar*.
 watch, *el reloj*.
 — (to), *velar*.
 way, *el camino*.
 we, *nosotros (m.), nosotras (f.)*.
 wealth, *la riqueza*.
 wear (to), *llevar*.
 wedding, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{la boda.} \\ \textit{las nupcias.} \end{array} \right.$
 week, *la semana*.
 weight, *la carga, el peso*.
 what?, *¿qué?*
 why?, *¿por qué?*
 who, *quien (sing.), quienes (pl.)*.
 who?, *¿quién? (sing.), ¿quiénes?*
 (pl.)
 whole, *todo, toda (see the —)*.
 widow, —er, *viuda, viudo*.
 wild, *feroz*.
 will (the), *la voluntad*.
 —, *querer*, pp. 148, 178.
 William, *Guillermo*.
 willingly, *con mucho gusto*.

win (to), *ganar, lograr*.
 wind, *el viento*.
 window, *la ventana*.
 wine, *el vino*.
 winter, *el invierno*.
 wisdom, *la sabiduría*.
 wise, *sabio, -bia*.
 wish, *el deseo, la voluntad*.
 — (to), *desear, querer*, pp. 148,
 178.
 with, *con*.
 — pleasure, *con mucho gusto*.
 wonderful, *admirable*.
 wood, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{la leña.} \\ \textit{la madera.} \end{array} \right.$
 wool, *la lana*.
 word, *la palabra*.
 work, *el trabajo, la obra*.
 — (to), *trabajar, obrar*.
 workman, *el obrero, el trabajador*.
 world, *el mundo*.
 worthy, *digno, digna*.
 wounded, *herido*, page 167.
 write (to), *escribir*, page 187.
 written, *escrito*, page 187.

Y.

yard (Spanish —), *la vara*.
 year, *el año*.
 yes, *sí*.
 yesterday, *ayer*.
 you (polite form), *usted; (pl.)*
ustedes.
 — (non-polite form.), *tú; (pl.)*
vosotros, -as.
 young, *joven*.
 —man, *el joven*.
 your, *su . . . de V.*
 yourself, $\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \end{array} \right\} \textit{se}$.
 yourselves, $\left. \begin{array}{l} \\ \end{array} \right\}$
 youth (young man), *el jóven*.





Educational Works and Class-Books

METHOD GASPEY-OTTO-SAUER

FOR THE STUDY OF MODERN LANGUAGES.

PUBLISHED BY JULIUS GROOS, HEIDELBERG.

•With each newly-learnt language one wins a new soul.• Charles V.

•At the end of the 19th century the world is ruled by the interest for trade and traffic; it breaks through the barriers which separate the peoples and ties up new relations between the nations.•

William II.

„Julius Groos, Publisher, has for the last fifty years been devoting his special attention to educational works on modern languages, and has published a large number of class-books for the study of those modern languages most generally spoken. In this particular department he is in our opinion unsurpassed by any other German publisher. The series consists of 290 volumes of different sizes which are all arranged on the same system, as is easily seen by a glance at the grammars which so closely resemble one another, that an acquaintance with one greatly facilitates the study of the others. This is no small advantage in these exacting times when the knowledge of one language alone is hardly deemed sufficient.

The textbooks of the *Gaspey-Otto-Sauer* method have, within the last ten years, acquired an **universal reputation**, increasing in proportion as a knowledge of living languages has become a necessity of modern life. The chief advantages, by which they compare favorably with thousands of similar books, are lowness of price and good appearance, the happy union of theory and practice, the clear scientific basis of the grammar proper combined with **practical conversational exercises**, and the system, here conceived for the first time and consistently carried out, by which the pupil is really taught to **speak and write the foreign language**.

The grammars are all divided into **two** parts, commencing with a systematic explanation of the rules for pronunciation, and are again subdivided into a number of **Lessons**. Each Part treats of the Parts of Speech in succession, the first giving a rapid sketch of the fundamental rules, which are explained more fully in the second.

The rules appear to us to be clearly given, they are explained by examples, and the exercises are quite sufficient.

To this **method** is entirely due the enormous success with which the *Gaspey-Otto-Sauer* textbooks have met; most other grammars either content themselves with giving the theoretical exposition of the grammatical forms and trouble the pupil with a confused mass of the most far-fetched **irregularities and exceptions without ever applying them**, or go to the other extreme, and **simply teach him to repeat in a parrot-like manner a few colloquial phrases** without letting him grasp the real genius of the foreign language.

The system referred to is easily discoverable: 1. in the arrangement of the grammar; 2. in the endeavour to enable the pupil to understand a regular text as soon as possible, and above all to teach him to **speak** the foreign language; this latter point was considered by the authors so particularly characteristic of their works, that they have styled them — to distinguish them from other works of a similar kind — **Conversational Grammars**.

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

The first series comprises manuals for the use of *Englishmen* and consists of 54 volumes.

Our admiration for this rich collection of works, for the method displayed and the fertile genius of certain of the authors, is increased when we examine the other series, which are intended for the use of foreigners.

In these works the chief difficulty under which several of the authors have laboured, has been the necessity of teaching a language in a foreign idiom; not to mention the peculiar difficulties which the German idiom offers in writing school-books for the study of that language.

We must confess that for those persons who, from a practical point of view, wish to learn a foreign language sufficiently well to enable them to write and speak it with ease, the authors have set down the grammatical rules in such a way, that it is equally easy to understand and to learn them.

Moreover, we cannot but commend the elegance and neatness of the type and binding of the books. It is doubtless on this account too that these volumes have been received with so much favour and that several have reached such a large circulation.

We willingly testify that the whole collection gives proof of much care and industry, both with regard to the aims it has in view and the way in which these have been carried out, and, moreover, reflects great credit on the editor, this collection being in reality quite an exceptional thing of its kind."

(Extract from the Literary Review.)

All books bound.

English Editions.

	D.	c.
Elementary Modern Armenian Grammar by Gulian	1	05
Arabic Grammar by Thatcher	3	50
Key to the Arabic Grammar by Thatcher	1	—
Arabic Chrestomathy by Harder	3	50
Danish Conversation-Grammar by Thomas	2	10
Key to the Danish Conversation-Grammar by Thomas	—	70
Dutch Conversation-Grammar by Valette. 2. Ed.	1	75
Key to the Dutch Convers.-Grammar by Valette	—	60
Dutch Reader by Valette. 2. Ed.	1	—
French Conversation-Grammar by Otto-Onions. 13. Ed. net	1	—
Key to the French Convers.-Grammar by Otto-Onions. 8. Ed.	—	50
Elementary French Grammar by Wright. 4. Ed.	—	70
French Reader by Onions	1	05
Materials for French Prose Composition by Otto-Onions. 5. Ed.	—	85
French Dialogues by Otto-Corkran	—	65
German Conversation-Grammar by Otto. 29. Ed. net	1	—
Key to the German Convers.-Grammar by Otto. 21. Ed.	—	50
Elementary German Grammar by Otto. 9. Ed.	—	70
First German Book by Otto. 9. Ed.	—	45
German Reader. I. 8. Ed.; II. 5. Ed.; III. 2. Ed. by Otto each	—	85
Materials for translating English into German by Otto-Wright. 7. Ed.	—	85
Key to the Mater. f. tr. Engl. i. Germ. by Otto. 3. Ed.	—	60
German Dialogues by Otto. 5. Ed.	—	50
Accidence of the German language by Otto-Wright. 2. Ed.	—	45
Handbook of English and German Idioms by Lange	—	60
German Verbs with their appropriate prepositions etc. by Tebbitt	—	35

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

English Editions.

	D.	c.
The Haussa language (Die Haussasprache; la langue haoussa) by Seidel	1	40
Hindustani Conversation-Grammar by Clair-Tisdall	2	80
Key to the Hindustani Convers.-Grammar by Clair-Tisdall	—	70
Italian Conversation-Grammar by Sauer-de Arteaga. 9. Ed. net	1	—
Key to the Italian Convers.-Grammar by Sauer-de Arteaga. 8. Ed.	—	50
Elementary Italian Grammar by Motti. 3. Ed.	—	70
Italian Reader by Cattaneo. 2. Ed.	—	85
Italian Dialogues by Motti	—	65
Japanese Conversation-Grammar by Plaut	2	10
Key to the Japanese Conv.-Grammar by Plaut	—	70
Modern Persian Conversation-Grammar by St. Clair-Tisdall	3	50
Key to the Mod. Persian Convers.-Grammar by St. Clair-Tisdall	—	70
Portuguese Conversation-Grammar by Kordgien and Kunow	1	75
Key to the Portuguese Convers.-Grammar by Kordgien and Kunow	—	60
Russian Conversation-Grammar by Motti. 3. Ed.	2	10
Key to the Russian Convers.-Grammar by Motti. 3. Ed.	—	70
Elementary Russian Grammar by Motti. 2. Ed.	—	70
Key to the Elementary Russian Grammar by Motti. 2. Ed.	—	35
Russian Reader by Werkhaupt and Roller	—	70
Spanish Conversation-Grammar by Sauer-de Arteaga. 7. Ed. net	1	—
Key to the Spanish Convers.-Grammar by Sauer-de Arteaga. 5. Ed.	—	50
Elementary Spanish Grammar by Pavia. 2. Ed.	—	70
Spanish Reader by Arteaga	1	30
Spanish Dialogues by Sauer-Corkran	—	65
Elementary Swedish Grammar by Fort. 2. Ed.	—	70
Turkish Conversation-Grammar by Hagopian	3	50
Key to the Turkish Convers.-Grammar by Hagopian	1	40

Arabic Edition.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Araber von Hartmann	1	05
--	---	----

Armenian Edition.

Elementary English Grammar for Armenians by Gulian	1	05
---	---	----

Bulgarian Editions.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Bulgaren von Gawriysky. 2. Aufl.	—	85
Kleine englische Sprachlehre für Bulgaren von Gawriysky	—	85
Kleine französische Sprachlehre für Bulgaren von Gawriysky	—	85

German Editions.

Arabische Konversations-Grammatik v. Harder. 2. Aufl.	3	50
Schlüssel dazu v. Harder. 2. Aufl.	1	—
Arabische Chrestomathie v. Harder	3	50
Bulgarische Konversations-Grammatik v. Gawriysky	1	60
Schlüssel dazu v. Gawriysky	—	60
Chinesische Konversations-Grammatik v. Seidel	2	80
Schlüssel dazu v. Seidel	—	85
Kleine chinesische Sprachlehre v. Seidel	—	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Seidel	—	30
Dänische Konversations-Grammatik v. Wied. 2. Aufl.	1	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Wied. 2. Aufl.	—	60
Duala Sprachlehre und Wörterbuch v. Seidel	—	70

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

German Editions.

	D.	c.
Englische Konversations-Grammatik v. Gaspey-Runge. 25. Aufl.	1	30
Schlüssel dazu v. Runge.	—	60
Englisches Konversations-Lesebuch v. Gaspey-Runge. 6. Aufl.	1	05
Kleine englische Sprachlehre v. Otto-Runge. 7. Aufl.	—	65
Schlüssel dazu v. Runge	—	30
Englische Gespräche v. Runge. 2. Aufl.	—	65
Materialien z. Übersetzen ins Englische v. Otto-Runge. 4. Aufl.	—	65
Englische Chrestomathie v. Süpffe-Wright. 9. Aufl.	1	30
Handbuch englischer und deutscher Idiome v. Lange	—	60
Ewe Sprachlehre und Wörterbuch v. Seidel	—	70
Kleine finnische Sprachlehre v. Neuhaus	—	70
Französische Konversations-Grammatik v. Otto-Runge. 23. Aufl.	1	30
Schlüssel dazu v. Runge.	—	60
Franz. Konv.-Lesebuch I. 10. Aufl., II. 5. Aufl. v. Otto-Runge. à	—	85
Franz. Konv.-Leseb. f. Mädchsch. v. Otto-Runge I. 5. Aufl., II. 3. Aufl. à	—	85
Kleine französische Sprachlehre v. Otto-Runge. 9. Aufl.	—	65
Schlüssel dazu v. Runge	—	30
Materialien z. Übersetzen ins Französische v. Runge	—	65
Französische Gespräche v. Otto-Runge. 8. Aufl.	—	65
Französisches Lesebuch v. Süpffe. 11. Aufl.	1	05
Italienische Konversations-Grammatik v. Sauer. 12. Aufl.	1	30
Schlüssel dazu v. Cattaneo.	—	60
Italienisches Konversations-Lesebuch v. Sauer. 5. Aufl.	1	30
Italienische Chrestomathie v. Cattaneo. 3. Aufl.	—	85
Kleine italienische Sprachlehre v. Sauer. 10. Aufl.	—	65
Schlüssel dazu v. Cattaneo. 2. Aufl.	—	30
Italienische Gespräche v. Sauer-Motti. 5. Aufl.	—	65
Übungsstücke zum Übers. a. d. Deutschen i. Ital. v. Lardelli. 5. Aufl.	—	60
Japanische Konversations-Grammatik v. Plaut	2	10
Schlüssel dazu v. Plaut	—	70
Marokkanische Sprachlehre v. Seidel	1	05
Neugriechische Konversations-Grammatik v. Petraris	2	10
Schlüssel dazu v. Petraris	—	70
Lehrbuch der neugriechischen Volkssprache v. Petraris	1	05
Niederländische Konversations-Grammatik v. Valette. 2. Aufl.	1	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Valette	—	60
Niederländisches Konv.-Lesebuch v. Valette. 2. Aufl.	1	—
Kleine niederländische Sprachlehre v. Valette. 3. Aufl.	—	70
Polnische Konversations-Grammatik v. Wicherkiewicz. 3. Aufl.	1	60
Schlüssel dazu v. Wicherkiewicz. 3. Aufl.	—	70
Portugiesische Konversations-Grammatik v. Ey	1	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Ey	—	60
Kleine portugiesische Sprachlehre v. Kordgien-Ey. 4. Aufl.	—	85
Russische Konversations-Grammatik v. Fuchs. 5. Aufl.	1	75
Schlüssel dazu v. Fuchs. 5. Aufl.	—	70
Russisches Konversations-Lesebuch v. Werkhaupt	—	70
Kleine russische Sprachlehre v. Motti. 2. Aufl.	—	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Motti. 2. Aufl.	—	60
Schwedische Konversations-Grammatik v. Walter. 2. Aufl.	1	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Walter. 2. Aufl.	—	60
Kleine schwedische Sprachlehre v. Fort. 2. Aufl.	—	70
Spanische Konversations-Grammatik v. Sauer-Ruppert. 9. Aufl.	1	40
Schlüssel dazu v. Ruppert. 3. Aufl.	—	60

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

German Editions.

	D.	c.
Spanisches Lesebuch v. Arteaga	1	30
Kleine spanische Sprachlehre v. Sauer. 7. Aufl.	—	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Bunge. 2. Aufl.	—	30
Spanische Gespräche v. Sauer. 3. Aufl.	—	65
Spanische Rektionsliste v. Sauer-Kordgien	—	60
Suahili Konversations-Grammatik v. Seidel	1	75
Schlüssel dazu v. Seidel	—	60
Suahili Wörterbuch v. Seidel	—	85
Tschechische Konversations-Grammatik v. Maschner	1	75
Schlüssel dazu v. Maschner	—	60
Türkische Konversations-Grammatik v. Jehlitschka	2	80
Schlüssel dazu v. Jehlitschka	1	05
Kleine ungarische Sprachlehre v. Nagy. 2. Aufl.	—	70
Schlüssel dazu v. Nagy	—	30
Ungarische Chrestomathie v. Kont	1	30

French Editions.

Grammaire allemande par Otto-Nicolas. 18. Éd.	1	30
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire allemande par Otto-Nicolas. 7. Éd.	—	60
Petite grammaire allemande par Otto-Verrier. 10. Éd.	—	70
Lectures allemandes par Otto. I. 7. Éd., II. 5. Éd., III. 2. Éd. each	—	70
Erstes deutsches Lesebuch von Verrier	—	85
Konversations allemandes par Otto-Verrier. 5. Éd.	—	60
Grammaire anglaise par Mauron-Verrier. 10. Éd.	1	30
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire anglaise par Mauron-Verrier. 5. Éd.	—	60
Petite grammaire anglaise par Mauron. 7. Éd.	—	70
Lectures anglaises par Mauron. 3. Éd.	1	—
Konversations anglaises par Corkran. 2. Éd.	—	60
Grammaire arabe par Armez	3	50
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire arabe par Armez	1	—
Chrestomathie arabe par Harder	3	50
La langue congolaise par Seidel-Struyf	1	40
Grammaire grecque par Capos	2	10
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire grecque par Capos	—	70
Petite grammaire hongroise par Kont	—	70
Corrigé des thèmes de la petite grammaire hongroise par Kont	—	35
Chrestomathie hongroise par Kont	1	30
Grammaire italienne par Sauer. 11. Éd.	1	30
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire italienne par Sauer. 7. Éd.	—	60
Petite grammaire italienne par Motti. 4. Éd.	—	70
Chrestomathie italienne par Cattaneo. 2. Éd.	—	70
Konversations italiennes par Motti. 2. Éd.	—	65
Grammaire japonaise par Plaut	2	10
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire japonaise par Plaut	—	70
Grammaire néerlandaise par Valette. 2. Éd.	1	70
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire néerlandaise par Valette	—	60
Lectures néerlandaises par Valette. 2. Éd.	1	—
Grammaire portugaise par Armez	1	60
Corrigé de la Grammaire portugaise par Armez	—	60
Grammaire russe par Fuchs-Nicolas. 4. Éd.	1	75
Corrigé des thèmes de la Grammaire russe par Fuchs-Nicolas. 4. Éd.	—	70
Petite grammaire russe par Motti. 2. Éd.	—	70
Corrigé des thèmes de la petite grammaire russe par Motti. 2. Éd.	—	30
Lectures russes par Werkhaupt et Roller	—	70

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

French Editions.

	D.	c.
Grammaire espagnole par Sauer-Serrano. 6. Éd.	1	40
Corrigé des thèmes de la gramm. espagn. par Sauer-Serrano. 5. Éd.	—	60
Petite grammaire espagnole par Tanty. 2. Éd.	—	70
Lectures espagnoles par Arteaga	1	30
Petite grammaire suédoise par Fort	—	70

Greek Editions.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Griechen von Maltos	—	85
Deutsche Gespräche für Griechen von Maltos	—	70
Kleine englische Sprachlehre für Griechen von Deffner	1	05

Italian Editions.

Grammatica francese di Motti. 3. Ed.	1	30
Chiave della grammatica francese di Motti. 2. Ed.	—	60
Grammatica elementare francese di Sauer-Motti. 4. Ed.	—	70
Lecture francesi di Le Boucher	1	05
Grammatica del Greco volgare di Palumbo	1	20
Grammatica inglese di Pavia. 6. Ed.	1	30
Chiave della grammatica inglese di Pavia. 3. Ed.	—	60
Grammatica elementare inglese di Pavia. 3. Ed.	—	70
Lecture inglesi di Le Boucher	1	05
Grammatica elementare portoghese di Palumbo	—	85
Grammatica russea di Motti	1	75
Chiave della grammatica russa di Motti	—	70
Grammatica spagnuola di Pavia. 3. Ed.	1	60
Chiave della Grammatica spagnuola di Pavia. 2. Ed.	—	60
Grammatica elementare spagnuola di Pavia. 3. Ed.	—	70
Grammatica elementare svedese di Pereira	—	70
Grammatica tedesca di Sauer-Ferrari. 8. Ed.	1	30
Chiave della Grammatica tedesca di Sauer-Ferrari. 4. Ed.	—	60
Grammatica elementare tedesca di Otto. 6. Ed.	—	70
Lecture tedesche di Otto. 5. Ed.	—	70
Antologia tedesca di Verdaro	1	05
Conversazioni tedesche di Motti. 2. Ed.	—	65
Avviamento al trad. dal ted. in ital. di Lardelli. 5. Ed.	—	60

Dutch Editions.

Kleine Engelsche Spraakkunst door Coster	—	70
Kleine Fransche Spraakkunst door Welbergen	—	70
Kleine Hoogduitsche Grammatica door Schwippert. 2. Dr.	—	70
Kleine Spaansche Spraakkunst door van Haaff	—	70
Sleutel bij de kleine Spaansche Spraakkunst door van Haaff	—	30

Polish Edition.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Polen von Paulus	—	70
---	---	----

Portuguese Editions.

Grammatica allema por Otto-Prévôt. 3. Ed.	1	40
Chave da Grammatica allema por Otto-Prévôt. 2. Ed.	—	60
Grammatica elementar allema por Prévôt-Pereira. 3. Ed.	—	70

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

Portuguese Editions.

	D.	c.
Livro de leitura inglesa por Le Boucher	1	05
Grammatica francesa por Tanty-Vasconcellos. 2. Ed.	1	40
Chave da Grammatica francesa por Tanty-Vasconcellos. 2. Ed.	—	60
Livro de leitura francesa por Le Boucher	1	05
Grammatica elementar sueca por Pereira	—	70

Rouman Editions.

Gramatică germană de Leist	1	40
Cheea gramaticii germane de Leist	—	60
Elemente de gramatică germană de Leist. 2. Ed.	—	70
Conversațiunî germane de Leist. 2. Ed.	—	65
Gramatică francesă de Leist	1	40
Cheea gramaticii franceze de Leist	—	60
Elemente de gramatică francesă de Leist. 2. Ed.	—	70
Conversațiunî franceze de Leist. 3. Ed.	—	65

Russian Editions.

English Grammar for Russians by Hauff	1	30
Key to the English Grammar for Russians by Hauff	—	70
French Grammar for Russians by Malkiel	1	30
Key to the French Grammar for Russians by Malkiel	—	70
German Grammar for Russians by Hauff	1	30
Key to the German Grammar for Russians by Hauff	—	70
Italian Grammar for Russians by Mozejko	1	40
Key to the Italian Grammar for Russians by Mozejko	—	70
Japanese Grammar for Russians by Plaut-Issacovitch	2	40
Key to the Japanese Grammar for Russians by Plaut-Issacovitch	—	70

Servian Editions.

Elementary English Grammar for Servians by Petrovitch	—	85
Petite grammaire française pour Serbes par Petrovitch	—	85

Swedish Edition.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Schweden von Walter	—	70
--	---	----

Spanish Editions.

Gramática alemana por Ruppert. 3. Ed.	1	40
Clave de la Gramática alemana por Ruppert. 3. Ed.	—	60
Gramática elemental alemana por Otto-Ruppert. 7. Ed.	—	70
Gramática inglesa por Pavia. 2. Ed.	1	40
Clave de la Gramática inglesa por Pavia. 2. Ed.	—	60
Gramática sucinta de la lengua inglesa por Pavia. 5. Ed.	—	70
Libro de lectura inglesa por Le Boucher	1	05
Gramática francesa por Tanty-Arteaga. 2. Ed.	1	40
Clave de la Gramática francesa por Tanty-Arteaga. 2. Ed.	—	60
Gramática sucinta de la lengua francesa por Otto. 5. Ed.	—	70
Libro de lectura francesa por Le Boucher	1	05
Gramática sucinta de la lengua italiana por Pavia. 4. Ed.	—	70
Gramática sucinta de la lengua rusa por d'Arcais	—	70
Clave de la Gramática sucinta rusa por d'Arcais	—	30

Tchech Edition.

Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Tschechen von Maschner	—	70
---	---	----

Method Gaspey-Otto-Sauer

for the study of modern languages.

Turkish Editions.

	D.	c.
Kleine deutsche Sprachlehre für Türken von Wely Bey-Bolland	1	05
Deutsches Lesebuch für Türken von Wely Bey-Bolland	1	05

Conversation-Books by Connor

in two languages:

English-German. 2. Ed.	—	60	Deutsch-Rumänisch	—	70
English-French. 2. Ed.	—	60	Deutsch-Russisch	1	05
English-Italian. 2. Ed.	—	60	Deutsch-Schwedisch	—	70
English-Russian	1	05	Deutsch-Spanisch	—	70
English-Spanish	—	60	Deutsch-Türkisch	1	40
English-Swedish	—	70	Français-Italien	—	70
Deutsch-Dänisch	—	70	Français-Espagnol	—	70
Deutsch-Französisch. 2. Ed.	—	70	Français-Portugais	—	70
Deutsch-Italienisch	—	70	Français-Russe	1	05
Deutsch-Niederländisch	—	70	Italiano-Spagnuolo	—	70
Deutsch-Portugiesisch	—	70			

in three languages:

English-German-French. 14. Ed.	—	85
--	---	----

in four languages:

English-German-French-Italian. 2. Ed.	1	30
---	---	----

German Language by Becker	—	70
Spanish Commercial Correspondence by Arteaga y Pereira	1	05
Dänischer Sprachführer von Forchhammer	—	70
Richtige Aussprache d. Muster deutschen v. Dr. E. Dannheisser, br.	—	20
Englische Handelskorrespondenz v. Arendt. 2. Aufl.	—	70
Kurze französische Grammatik von H. Runge	—	70
Franz. Sprachl. f. Handelssch. v. Dannheisser, Küffner u. Offenmüller	—	85
Italienische kaufm. Korresp.-Gramm. v. Dannheisser u. Sauer. 2. Aufl.	1	40
Schlüssel dazu v. Dannheisser	—	70
Il correttore italiano von Mayo-Gelati	—	70
Anleitung z. deutschen, franz., engl. u. ital. Geschäfts- briefen von Oberholzer u. Osmond, br.	—	30
Spanische Handelskorrespondenz von Arteaga y Pereira	1	05
Kleines spanisches Lesebuch f. Handelsschulen v. Ferrades-Langeheldt	—	70
Langue allemande par Becker	—	70
Le danois parlé par Forchhammer	—	70
Correspondance commerciale espagnole par Arteaga y Pereira	1	05
Lengua alemana de Becker	—	70

The Publisher is untiringly engaged in extending the range of educational works issuing from his Press. A number of new books are now in course of preparation.

The new editions are constantly improved and kept up to date.

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT
RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR
BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED
BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE
NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE
BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

CHARGED
OVERDUE



Trópico de Capricornio

ATLÁNTICO

PACÍFICO

SUR AMÉRICA DEL SUR Y AMÉRICA CENTRAL

Escala de 1:56.000.000



Abreviaturas:

- A. = Alagoas
- Pa. = Pará
- Pe. = Pernambuco
- R. G. = Rio Grande do Norte
- S. = Sergipe

Georgia merid.

7233.52.2

Spanish conversation-grammar.

Widener Library

003584338



3 2044 086 615 820